

★
No. KK31.210

31.40
a



PURCHASED FROM THE INCOME OF THE
JOSIAH H. BENTON FUND

FN915; 10,28,38: 20M

1668.(l) He was a deputy to the General Court at Plymouth for seven years, commencing in 1668.(m) He was appointed captain of the military company June 3, 1674(n), and is usually called Capt. Thomas Howes. In 1742 Ebenezer Goodspeed, then 86 years old, swore that he was a soldier in the Narragansett wars so-called under Capt. Thomas Howes.(o) Capt. Howes served in the 3d expedition in King Philip's war with eight one month's men and in the fifth expedition with 21 men. His wages on the third expedition were £6.(p) June 1, 1663, he was on the grand jury.(q) April 2, 1667, he was appointed one of the council of war for Yarmouth.(r) June 5, 1667, he was sworn as constable of Yarmouth.(s) June 30, 1667, he signed a paper to the General Court in favor of the Rev. Thomas Thornton against an attack by Nicholas Nickerson.(t) Oct. 30, 1667, at the request of the town, the Court added Andrew Hallett, Thomas Howes, and John Thacher to the committee of Yarmouth for the disposing of lands in that town.(u) June 3, 1668, he is mentioned as one of the deputies to

the General Court.(v) The same date he was one of the selectmen of Yarmouth.(w) At the same date also he complained against William Nickerson, Sr., Nathaniel Covell, Samuel Nickerson, Joseph Nickerson, and William Nickerson, Jr., for affronting him in the execution of his office while he was constable of Yarmouth and offering divers abuses to him. They were convicted and punished.(x) June 1, 1669, he is mentioned as a deputy to the General Court.(y) In 1670 he was collector of minister's rates.(z) May 29, 1670, he was one of the freemen of Yarmouth.(a) June 7, 1670, he was a deputy;(b) also, June 5, 1672, when he is styled Ensign Howes.(c) The same date he was one of the selectmen of Yarmouth.(d) and also, June 3, 1673, when he was also a deputy.(e) April 28, 1672, he was on a jury of inquest to inquire into the death of a child in Yarmouth, and signed the verdict.(e1) Oct. 30, 1672, he owned one-third of a parcel of nets and of a boat in partnership with Thomas Doten and Lt. Morton, together with a third of the rodes, anchors and sails appertaining to the boat.(f) June 7, 1673, and June 9, 1676, he was on the committee that took the Colonial Treasurer's account, and signed

(l) Plym. Col. Recs.

(m) Ib.

(n) Bodge's King Philip's War, 455; 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 146.

(o) Bodge, 441.

(p) Swift, 99, 100, 102, 103.

(q) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 37.

(r) Ib. 145, 146.

(s) Ib. 148.

(t) Swift, 90, where a reduced facsimile of his signature may be seen; "Edmond Hawes" (139), by the compiler.

(u) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 167.

(v) Ib. 180.

(w) Ib. 182.

(x) Ib. 183, 184.

(y) 5 ib. 17.

(z) Ib. 37.

(a) Ib. 274, 276.

(b) Ib. 34.

(c) Ib. 90.

(d) Ib. 92.

(e) Ib. 113, 114.

(e1) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 95.

(f) 7 ib. 173.

the report.(g) July 4, 1673, he was appointed guardian of Mercy Hedge, daughter of Capt. William Hedge, late of Yarmouth. He is here styled Lieutenant.(h) Sept. 15, 1673, he was a deputy.(i) June 3, 1674, he is named as one of the selectmen of Yarmouth.(j) June 1, 1675, he was one of the selectmen of Yarmouth and a deputy. He is here and subsequently styled Captain.(k) The same date the court appointed Mr. Hinckley, Mr. Gorham and Jonathan Sparrow to fix the bounds of the lands in Monomoy between William Nickerson and the purchasers, and if Mr. Hinckley could not attend, then Capt. Howes was to take his place.(l) June 7, 1676, he was one of the selectmen and a deputy for Yarmouth.(m) The same date he was one of a committee of three to take the Colonial Treasurer's account.(n) In the rate of 1676 "towards the charges of the late war" Capt. Howes's tax was £6 7s. 3d.(o) His will,(p) dated Jan. 15, 1675-6, and proved Aug. 14, 1677, is printed in 6 Mayflower Descendant, page 160. He made his wife Sarah executrix and requested his friends and brethren Jonathan Sparrow, Jonathan Bangs, Jeremiah Howes and John Thacher to be helpful to her. The witnesses were Benjamin Howes and John Thacher. He mentions his sons Thomas and Jonathan, his daugh-

ters Rebecca and Sarah, an unborn child, Elizabeth (daughter of "my brother Sparrow") and his mother Prence. The will recites as follows:

"Being Called and Desired to Goe forth to warr in the prsent expedition; against the Indians Called Narragansetts; and forasmuch as such a servis exposeth prsons to Danger of life I doe therfore make and Declare my last will."

He willed "That Sarah my Loveing wife shall have the sole Disposing of my whole estate; both of Lands housing and Goods During the time of her widdowes estate to her owne use and benefitt; shee Giveing out and paying such portions and legacies to my Children in time and manor heer specified."

He gave to his sons Thomas and Jonathan equally all his "estate of lands and housing" and in case either of them should die before coming of age unmarried, his share should go to his brother. If either of his sons should die without issue, then he was to dispose of his share to his brother or the latter's sons. He gave to his two sons and two daughters £20 apiece. If either of his daughters were to die before marriage her legacy was to go to her sister, and if either of his sons should die before attaining the age of 21 years, his legacy should go to his brother. He also provided as follows:

"I give to Elizabeth the Daughter of my brother Sparrow which Liveth in my family the sume of fifteen pounds; and incase shee Die before shee be married or attaine to twenty years of age then her Legacye to returne to my Daughters;

"Be it Knowne that my will is that my Loveing wife shall have and Enjoy

(g) 8 ib. 139, 140, 145.

(h) 5 ib. 124.

(i) Ib. 135.

(j) Ib. 143.

(k) Ib. 164, 165.

(l) Ib. 171.

(m) Ib. 195, 196.

(n) Ib. 200.

(o) Swift, 105.

(p) 3 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 2, p. 85.

the one halfe of my Now Dwelling house; with the benifitt of one halfe of my lands orchyards and meddowes; That is to say the house Lotts and the Meddowes and Lands on Simpkins Necke; During the time of her widowhood; But be it alsoe Knowne; that if my wife Change her widdowhood and Marry againe, then I Doe Give to her the sole Dispose of one third prte of my movable estate and the benifit of halfe my lands orchyards and meddowes; That is my Dwelling house lott; and the Land and Meddow; In Simpkins neck as is above expressed; but not then to hold; the possession of the halfe of the house; unlesse my children & frinds be-trusted, see it most Convenient; and what shall remaine of the other two third prtes of my estate after Debts and legacies are payed shalbe De-vided equally amongst my Children; "Be it alsoe Knowne that my will is that my Mother Prence Injoy with-out molestation During her Naturall life the house shee Now lives in with the orchyard belonging therunto; and to pay a bill my mother hath under my hand bearing Date the 15th of the 11th 1675." (q) He also pro-vided that the legacies should be paid to the legatees either at marriage or at the age of 21 years.

The inventory(r) of his personal estate, taken Dec. 26, 1676, by Joseph Howes and Gershom Hall, and sworn to by his widow June 19, 1677, amounted to about £518. Feb. 26, 1679-80, his nephew Samuel Howes, with the consent of his father Joseph

Howes, released his estate from his grandfather's requirement that he (Thomas) should teach him the trade of a cooper, and acknowledged that he had received a mare out of the estate of his Uncle Thomas as speci-fied in his grandfather's will.(s) The will(t) of the widow of Thomas² Howes, dated Feb. 26, 1682-3, and proved April 3, 1683, is printed in 6 Mayflower Descendant, page 163. The witnesses were John Thacher and Jonathan Russell. Her brethren Jer-emiah Howes and Jonathan Bangs were made executors. She mentions only the four children named in her husband's will. Elizabeth Sparrow who lived with her was to have 20s. Her young son Jonathan was to have 40s. to be improved for his teaching to read, write and cypher and in con-venient time at the discretion of the overseers of her late husband's will he was to be put to learn some suit-able trade. Her young daughter Sarah was to reside with her sister Rebecca and to have 20s. to be im-proved "for her more perfecting in reading." Her four children were to have the rest of her estate equally. The inventory(u) of Mrs. Sarah Howes's personal estate, taken March 17, 1682-3, by Joseph Howes and Ger-shom Hall and sworn to by Jeremiah Howes, amounted to £189 3s. 11d., less debts due from the estate. It included books, appraised at 7s., and "several things she brought from Boston when she was last there for her selfe unmade up", appraised at £3 11s. 7d.

(q) Jan. 15, 1675-6.

(r) 3 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 2, p. 86; Mf. 162.

(s) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 30, 31.

(t) 4 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 2, p. 37.

(u) Ib.; 6 Mf. 164.

Children.(v)

11. Rebecca,(v1) b. Dec. 1657.
 12. Thomas, b. May 2, 1663;
 m.(v2) Sarah Hedge June 23, 1698;
 d. Nov. 22, 1737, in his 74th year.(v3)
 His will(w) mentions his wife
 Sarah, his daughter Mary, his son-in-
 law Joseph Howes, grandson of Joseph
 (my No. II), his grandsons Thomas,
 Isaac and George Howes, and his
 granddaughters Sarah, Thankful and
 Abigail. He was called Thomas
 Howes, Sr. His daughter Mary was
 born in December, 1702.(w1) J.
 C. Howes (14) is erroneous. The
 Thomas there numbered 11 was son
 of Jeremiah² and not Thomas² Howes,
 and should be his number 15. His
 number 15 (on p. 15) should be this
 number 12 of mine, except that
 there probably should be no
 son Thomas. J. C. Howes in
 his No. 19 (p. 17) gives the daughter
 and son-in-law (and their children) of
 Thomas³ Howes, Sr. He says correctly
 on p. 15 that Thomas's wife Sarah ap-
 pears from her gravestone to have
 died March 24, 1776, in the 100th year
 of her age. In 1698 the tax of Thomas
 Howes, Sr., in the rate of that year
 was £2 4s. 3d.(w3) Thomas Howes,
 Sr., was town clerk and treasurer in

(v) Yar. Recs.; 2 Mf. 207.

(v1) She perhaps married her
 cousin Samuel, son of her Uncle Jo-
 seph. His wife was Rebecca and she
 survived him. (Infra, p. 25.)

(v2) J. C. Howes, 15; Yar. Recs.

(v3) Gravestone in old Howes bury-
 ing ground; 2 Freeman, 215.

(w) 5 Barn. Prob. Recs. 379, 380.
 The will was dated June 15, 1737, and
 proved Jan. 19, 1737-8.

(w1) 10 Mf. 245.

(w3) Superior Ct. as above, p. 9.

1698.(w4) In the division of the
 Common lands in 1712 Thomas Howes
 had 34½ shares.(w5)

13. Jonathan, b. Feb. 25, 1669-70;
 m. Sarah about 1694; d.(x)
 Jan. 5, 1750-1. His children appear
 on the Yarmouth records, the eldest
 being b. the last day of June, 1695.(y)
 His will, (z) dated May 12, 1742, and
 proved Jan. 17, 1750-1, mentions his
 wife Sarah, his children David,
 Thomas, Sarah (wife of Peter Pad-
 dock), Joshua, the latter's daughters
 Sarah and Mary, and his deceased
 brother Thomas. May 8, 1684, he
 chose his uncle Mr Jeremiah Howes
 to be his guardian, who accepted.(a)
 He was a selectman for three years,
 commencing in 1707.(b) In 1712 he
 (styled lieutenant) received 32 shares
 of the Common lands of Yarmouth.(c)

14. Sarah, b. Oct. 29, 1673; m.(d)
 1st Stephen¹ (Stephen², Giles²,
 Stephen¹) Hopkins, of Eastham and
 Harwich, May 19, 1692, and 2d as his
 3d wife, Joseph³ (John², Edmond¹)
 Hawes of Yarmouth, July 3, 1746.
 She survived him and left issue by
 her 1st husband.

IV. JEREMIAH² (Thomas¹) Howes,
 b. about 1637 ; m.(d1) Sarah²

(w4) Swift, 238.

(w5) Swift, 127.

(x) J. C. Howes, 14.

(y) 11 Mf. 112.

(z) 8 Barn. Prob. Recs. 440, 442.

(a) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 134.

(b) Swift, 237.

(c) Ib. 126.

(d) Boston Eve. Transcript Oct. 26,
 1914; "Edmond Hawes," by the com-
 piler, p. 164; Har. Recs.; East. Recs.;
 8 Mf. 16. J. C. Howes, 11, errone-
 ously says she m. Daniel Sears Feb.
 12, 1708.

d1) 6 Mf. 233.

(Thomas¹) Prence; d. Sept. 9, 1708, aged about 71 years.(e) She d. March 3, 1706-7, in the 60th year of her age, having been born about 1648.(e) They were buried and have stones in the old Howes burying ground in Dennis.(e1) Sarah's father was long governor of Plymouth Colony. Her mother was Mary² (William¹) Collier of Duxbury, her father's second wife.(f) Swift, in "Old Yarmouth," (g) says: "He was a son of the first Thomas, and a prominent and influential citizen." He was a deputy to the General Court at Plymouth for seven years, commencing in 1677; and for eleven years one of the selectmen, commencing in 1677.(h) June 1, 1663, he was ad-

(e) J. C. Howes, 11, erroneously says he d. Jan. 5, 1705-6, which was the date of death of his son Jeremiah. See 59 N. E. Reg. 217.

(e1) The Yarmouth town records say that Jeremiah² Howes died Dec. 9, 1708, but the tombstone is evidently correct as his will was proved Oct. 6, 1708 (infra, p. 21). The town records also say that Sarah, his wife, died March 3, 1703-4. The tombstone is no doubt the better evidence.

(f) 6 Mf. 127; History of New Plymouth, by Francis Baylies, pt. 2, p. 70n.

(g) Page 122. He gives erroneous dates for the deaths of him and his wife.

(h) Plym. Col. Recs.; Swift, 116, 122, 236, 237, gives the periods differently, and says that he was for two years a representative in the legislature at Boston, commencing in 1692, the first year of the union of the two colonies, but 7 Province Laws of Massachusetts (p. 8) gives the name of the representative in 1692-3 as "Mr. Jeremiah Howes, jun."

mitted a freeman and sworn.(i) June 30, 1667, he and his brothers Joseph and Thomas signed a paper to the Governor and Assistants in favor of the Rev. Thomas Thornton against an attack by Nicholas Nickerson.(j) June 3, 1668, he was on the grand jury.(k) March 2, 1668-9, John Mocoy had an action against Jeremiah Howes for taking up and detaining from him without his leave or order complainant's horse, which was nonsuited because the letter of attorney by the plaintiff to Elisha Hedge "was found to be illegal."(l) April 28, 1672, he was on a jury of inquest to inquire into the death of a child in Yarmouth and signed the verdict.(m) March 13, 1672-3, Gov. Thomas Prence by his will gave to his daughter Sarah Howes (wife of Jeremiah) his biggest beer bowl and a share of the residue of his estate.(n) Feb. 29, 1675-6, Jeremiah Howes was appointed on the council of war for Yarmouth.(o) June 7, 1676, he is mentioned as constable of Yarmouth.(p) June 10, 1676, the following heirs, individually or through their attorneys, sold land of Gov. Thomas Prence's estate, viz.: Susannah Prence, single, of London; Capt. John Freeman in behalf of his wife

(i) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 38.

(j) Swift, 90, where a reduced facsimile of the signatures may be seen. See also "Edmond Hawes," by the compiler, pp. 128, 138, 139.

(k) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 180.

(l) 7 ib. 153.

(m) 5 ib. 95.

(n) 3 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, pp. 58-70; 3 Mf. 204, 205.

(o) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 185, 186; Swift, 104.

(p) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 195.

Mercy; Jonathan Sparrow and his wife Hannah; Nicholas Snow and his wife Jane; Jeremiah Howes and his wife Sarah; John Tracy and his wife Mary; and the widow Mary Prence.(q) In the rate of 1676 "towards the charges of the late war" the tax of Jeremiah Howes was £7 14s.(r) June 5, 1677, Mr. Jeremiah Howes is mentioned as one of the selectmen of Yarmouth and as one of the deputies to the General Court from that town.(s) June 3, 1679, and June 1, 1680, Jeremiah Howes was one of the selectmen of Yarmouth.(s1) Sept. 28, 1680, he was added to the committee to dispose of the Yarmouth lands, succeeding his brother Joseph.(s2) In February, 1680-81, the town agreed that Jeremiah Howes, with Joseph and Samuel Howes, should secure for it all such whales as should be cast up between Sawsuit Harbor mouth and Yarmouth Harbor for £4 a whale.(t) June 7, 1681, June 6, 1682, June 6, 1683, June 3, 1684, June 2, 1685, June, 1686, June, 1689, and June 3, 1690, Jeremiah Howes is mentioned as one of the selectmen of Yarmouth.(t1) June 7, 1681, June 6, 1683, June 3, 1684, June 2, 1685, June, 1686, and June, 1689, he was mentioned as one of the deputies from Yarmouth to the General Court.(t2) Feb. 6, 1682-3, Mr. John Miller and Jeremiah Howes of Yarmouth were appointed

to sell the house and lands of Richard Berry, deceased, to pay his debts, there being no other estate to pay them.(t3) May 8, 1684, Mr. Jeremiah Howes was chosen by his nephew Jonathan (youngest son of Capt. Thomas Howes, deceased), as his guardian, and accepted.(t4) Gov. Prence had with others purchased land on the N. side of Titticut river near Bridgewater. This land was bounded Dec. 24, 1686, and then divided into ten lots of 100 acres each. Jeremiah Howes had the 10th lot.(t5) In 1692 Jeremiah Howes bought land in South Harwich of John Skinnaquit, an Indian.(u) March 22, 1693-4, Jeremiah Howes, with John Thacher and John Miller, fixed the bounds of certain land belonging to John Hawes (u1) In the rate of 1698 in Yarmouth the tax of Mr. Jeremiah Howes was £4 8s. 6d.(v) In 1698 Mr. Jeremiah Howes was chosen one of the representatives in the legislature, but declined.(w) In 1701 Mr. Jeremiah Howes was chosen one of a committee to make out a list of such persons as were rightful proprietors of the commons.(x) In 1703 he was one of a committee appointed to "seat persons in the meeting-house."(x) Af-

(q) Supplement to Pope's Pioneers of Mass., p. ix.

(r) Swift, 105.

(s) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 230, 231.

(s1) 6 ib. 10, 35.

(s2) Ib. 50; Swift, 124.

(t) Swift, 109.

(t1) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 59, 84, 108, 129, 168, 186, 207, 241.

(t2) Ib. 61, 106, 127, 164, 186, 205.

(t3) Ib. 101.

(t4) Ib. 134.

(t5) Nos. 2439, 162 and 243, Records of Superior Ct. of Judicature, Supreme Ct. Clerk's of., Boston.

(u) Deyo's Barnstable Co. 827.

(u1) Book of Grants of Yarmouth, 164, 165.

(v) Records of Superior Ct. of Judicature, No. 4600; Rec. Book 1686-1700, p. 297; Supreme Ct. Clerk's of., Boston.

(w) Swift, 118.

(x) Ib. 119.

ter the death of his brother Thomas, he became one of the committee to make grants of the common lands, his father having been an original member.(y)

His will, dated August 14, 1708, and proved Oct. 6, 1708, was witnessed by Thomas Howes, John Howes and Nathaniel Howes.(z) He mentions his eldest son Jeremiah, deceased, the latter's son Jeremiah, his daughters Hannah, Sarah, Mary and Martha, and his widow Mary. The will then names the testator's sons Prince, Ebenezer, Thomas (deceased), the latter's son Thomas, and testator's eight daughters: Elizabeth Bacon (and her son Joseph Bacon), Sarah Mayo, Mary Hawes, Bethiah Hawes, Mercy Sturgis, Susannah Bassett, Thankful Miller and Rebecca Howes. He made his sons Prince and Ebenezer and his son-in-law Samuel Sturgis executors of his will. "A true Inventory of all and singular the Goods chattels and Credits of Mr. Jeremiah Howes Deceased September the 9th 1708: prized by Joseph Hall and John Howes at Yarmouth September 23d 1708," and sworn to by his executors Oct. 6, 1708, amounted to £1463 13s. 5d., of which £100 consisted of land at Middleborough and Bridgewater and £950 of "housing and land" at Yarmouth and Harwich.(a)

Children.

15. Jeremiah, b. — ; m.(b) after Oct. 18, 1693, Mary, daughter of Thomas Daggett of Edgartown; d.(b)

(y) Ib. 124.

(z) 3 Barn. Prob. Recs. 174.

(a) Ib. 177.

(b) 2 Barn. Prob. Recs. 213, 222; 55 N. E. Reg. 112, where the date of his death is given as Jan. 5, instead of Jan. 6. See 59 N. E. Reg. 217, 218.

Jan. 6, 1705-6. He had Jeremiah, Hannah, Sarah, Mary and Martha. He was a representative of Yarmouth in the legislature at Boston in 1692-3.(c) His tax in 1698 was £2 2s. 6d.(c1) J. C. Howes (pages 11 and 15) is erroneous.

16. Prencce, b. about 1671; m. Dorcas Joyce about 1695; d. Oct. 2, 1753, in his 84th year.(d) His children appear on the Yarmouth records, the eldest born May 22, 1696.(e) His will,(f) dated Feb. 18, 1739-40, and proved Oct. 16, 1753, mentions his wife Dorcas and his children Desire Hallett, Dorcas Matthews, Prince, Jeremiah, Thomas and Lot. His inventory,(f) dated Jan. 15, 1754, amounted to £696 5s. 4d. in real estate. In 1698 his tax amounted to £2 2s. 4d.(f1) In 1712 he received 36 shares of the common lands of Yarmouth.(g) In 1739 he was one of the proprietors of the common lands of Crockett Neck.(h)

17. Ebenezer, b. about 1674; m.(i) 1st Sarah Gorham, April 20, 1699 (who d.(j) Sept. 9, 1705), and 2d(j) Lydia Joyce Nov. 20, 1706; d.(k) Jan. 8,

(c) 7 Prov. Laws of Mass. 8.

(c1) Super. Ct. as above, p. 9.

(d) Gravestone; 59 N. E. Reg. 217, 218. J. C. Howes (14), erroneously gives the marriage as Aug. 8, 1698. He says the wife d. Nov. 14, 1757.

(e) 10 Mf. 242.

(f) 9 Barn. Prob. Recs. 65, 66, 67.

(f1) Superior Ct. as above, p. 9.

(g) Swift, 127.

(h) Ib. 141, 142.

(i) 52 N. E. Reg. 359; J. C. Howes, 16.

(j) J. C. Howes, 16.

(k) Gravestone; 59 N. E. Reg. 217, 218.

1726-7, aged about 53. His will, (l) dated Dec. 3, 1726, and proved Feb. 13, 1726-7, mentions his wife Lydia and his children Lydia, Thankful, Mercy, Anna, Susannah, Mary, Samuel and Prince (youngest sons), Thomas (eldest son), Ebenezer, Sarah Sears, and Elizabeth Howes. His inventory, (l) taken Feb. 22, 1726-7, amounted to £532 15s. 10d. in personal property and £1920 in real estate. In 1712 he received 47½ shares of the common lands of Yarmouth. (m) Dec. 28, 1714, he was a witness to the will of John Joyce of Yarmouth. (ml)

18. Thomas, (m2) b. ; m. (n) Abigail Hussey in Nantucket April 5, 1700; d. (o) Aug. 8, 1700. His father Jeremiah Howes was appointed administrator Oct. 3, 1700, and after his death the widow Abigail was appointed Oct. 7, 1708. (n) He appears to have no child born at the time of his death, but a son Thomas was born March 6, 1700-1. (p) In 1698 his tax was £2 1s. (p1)

19. Elizabeth, b. ; m. (q) Dec. 10, 1786, Jeremiah Bacon of Barnstable and had issue.

20. Sarah, b. m. (r) Daniel Mayo of Eastham.

21. Mary, b. about 1672; m. (s) as his 1st wife about 1695 Joseph³ (John² Edmond¹) Hawes of Yarmouth and d. (sl) Jan. 10, 1728-9, in her 58th year, leaving issue.

22. Bethiah, b. ; m. (t) 1st Jan. 8, 1700-1, Isaac³ (John², Edmond¹) Hawes and had issue in Yarmouth and Chatham. He d. about 1731. She m. 2d as his 2d wife John Smith of Eastham in 1741 and 3d Nov. 16, 1743, as his 2d wife Rev. Joseph Lord of Chatham, where she d. before July 7, 1748.

23. Merey, b. about 1682; m. Oct. 17, 1700, Samuel Sturges, she being in her 19th year and he in his 35th. They had issue. (u)

24. Susannah, b. ; m. (v) Joseph Bassett Feb. 27, 1706-7.

25. Thankful, b. ; m. (w)

(l) 4 Barn. Prob. Recs. 379, 382; 11 Mf. 113, 114.

(m) Swift, 127.

(ml) 3 Barn. Prob. Recs. 344; 9 Mf. 123.

(m2) J. C. Howes (14) is erroneous.

(n) 2 Barn. Prob. Recs. 111, 114, 118; 3 ib. 55; 7 N. E. Reg. 262.

(o) 2 Barn. Prob. Recs. as above; 7 N. E. Reg. 324, which says Thomas Howes of Yarmouth was drowned between Nantucket and the Main Aug. 1, 1700.

(p) Yar. Recs.; 7 Mf. 248; 7 N. E. Reg. 262, where the date of birth is erroneously given as March 6, 1701-2.

(p1) Super. Ct. as above, p. 9. He appears to have been the one then called Thomas Howes, Jr.

(q) Barn. Recs.; 2 Mf. 215; 1 Otis's Barnstable Families, 28, 29; 59 N. E. Reg. 217.

(r) 59 N. E. Reg. 217, 218. J. C. Howes (12) erroneously says she m. Cornelius Higgins.

(s) 61 N. E. Reg. 200, 322; "Edmond Hawes" by the compiler, p. 163.

(sl) Yar. Gravestone Recs. 21; 62 N. E. Reg. 202; 29 Plym. Col. Deeds, 121; 5 Mf. 162; "Edmond Hawes" by the compiler, p. 164.

(t) Yar. Recs.; 61 N. E. Reg. 200, 322; "Edmond Hawes" by the compiler, pp. 167-170; 2 Otis, 36, 37.

(u) Yar. Recs.; 10 Mf. 243; 59 N. E. Reg. 217, 218.

(v) 59 N. E. Reg. 217, 218.

(w) 51 ib. 33, 224; 59 ib. 218; 3 Savage, 210.

John Miller Jan. 23, 1706-7.

26. Rebecca, b. ; m.(x)
Aug. 14, 1712, Ebenezer Hallett.

Copy of Will* of Jeremiah² Howes.
(From Probate Records of

Barnstable Co., Vol. 3, p. 174.)

To all people To whom these presents shall concern The fourteenth Day of Agust In the Year of our Lord Annoque Domi one Thousand seven hundred and eight, Know ye That I Jeremiah Howes of Yarmouth in the County of Barnstable in the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England Yeoman; Being but weak in body but of perfect mind and memory. Thanks be Given to God therefor: Calling unto mind the mortality of my Body, and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to Dye—Do make and ordaine this my Last will & Testament (That is to say) Principally and first of all I Give & Recommend my sole Into the hands of God that Gave it, and my Body I Recomend unto the Earth to be buried in Decent Christian burial att ye Discretion of my Executor, Nothing Douting but att the General Resurrection I shall Receive it again by the mighty power of God: and as Touching such worly Estate wherewithall it Hath pleased God to bless me with in this Life—I Give Demise and Dispose of the same In ye following manner and form

first I Give unto my Grandson Jeremiah Howes the son of my Eldest son Jeremiah Howes Deceased: All

(x) 59 ib. 217, 218.

*There are two other copies, in No. 7536 of the records of the Superior Court of Judicature, now on file in the clerk's office of the Supreme Court, Boston, Mass. The original will is not known to be in existence.

that my Land and meadow & beach & creek stuff that I bought of Mr John Sunderlin: Excepting what I sold to Jeremiah Crow and all the housing now upon it: And also I Give to this my Grandson Jeremiah Howes a piece of meadow Lying to the Westward of Simkins neck bounded by Thomas Howes meadow on the South-eastward side and by ye upland northard as the fence now Rangeth to a pare of barrs: and from them barrs unto the meadow southerly or thereabouts to a stake standing between Two ponds and from thence near the same Range to a stake standing by a creek; and from thence to ye meadow I sold to John Howes, and if this my Grandson Should Dye without Issue then this Land and meadow to be eaquely Divided to his Sisters surviving; and my Will is is that my Daughter Mary Howes Relict to my son Jeremiah Howes shall have the use of this Land and meadows and housing untill my Grandson Jeremiah Howes comes to the age of Twenty and one years or at marriage Day if before (only it is Reserved to his mother the use of one third part of this housing and Land to his mother after his possession During her widowhood.

2ly It. I Give unto my son Prince Howes all my homested of Housing and Land excepting a piece of upland taken off of that corner called the nine acres beginning upon the south side where Jonathan Howses fence and mine Joyns in ye Range betwixt us and then straight over to the marsh near the north end of a Ditch that Rangeth northerly from the meadow barrs where an old fence Joyned within ye end of the Ditch about a Rod and from thence northerly as the fence Rangeth betwixt

the upland and meadow bounded by Jonathan Howes land on ye East-ard side all this piece about twelve acres I Give eaquely to be Divided betwixt my too sons Prince Howes and Ebenezer Howes; and all my meadow on ye westerly side of my Land called my homested; Excepting that peice before Given to my Grandson Jeremiah Howes I Do Give to my Two sons Prince Howes and Ebenezer Howes to be eaquely Divided betwixt them, and the fence that now Divides the upland from the meadow shall be the bounds betwixt the upland and medow, and after that peice of meadow Lying in my calves pasture I Give to my son Prince Howes.

3ly It. I Give unto my son Ebenezer Howes his hom Lott he now Lives upon with all the housing upon it home to the Ditch that parts betwixt him and the house Lott Prince Howes Lives upon with the meadow at the foot of it: And also all that my piece of Land and meadow that Lyes below Jonathan Howeses house Lott betwixt that and the house lott of Samuel Eldreds Deceased and all that my piece of Land Lying in the Indian field so called Lyeing betwixt the Land of Zachariah Paddock and the Land of Jeremiah Crowels: to be Ebenezer Howeses forever.

4ly It I Give unto my Two Sons Ebenezer Howes and Prince Howes to be Eaqually Divided betwixt them all that my Housing that Prince Howse Livis in Together with the out housing and the Houslott of Land and meadow att the foot of it so far as the fence and Ditch parts betwixt Prince Howses Lott and Ebenezer Howeses Lott; and also a peice of Land Lying above the widow Eldreds House Lott betwixt the Land of Joseph Hows and Jonathan Howes

and also a peice of Land Lying & near the Coy pond so called onely I Do order my Two sons Ebenezer Howes and Prince Howes to pay a Leagsy of forty(y) pounds appiece of money or money worth unto my four Granddaughters my son Jeremiah Howeses children to wt Hannah Howes Sarah Howes Mary Howes and Martha Howse the which will be twenty(z) pounds appiece to be paid unto him at the age of eighteen years or upon marrage Day if before; and if either of these four geirls should Dye before they Receive their portions yt ye survivors to have their part betwixt them.

5ly It. I Give unto my Grandson Thomas Howes the son of my son Thomas Howes all that my Land and meadow I bought of Josephas Quason Contained in one Deed: the Land Lying near Joseph Sevrances Joyning to a Great pond, and the meadow Lying below on the South side so called but in case this my Grandsons Thomas Howes should Dye without Issue then then this Land & meadow to be Eaquely amongst all my Children now Living or their heirs: and also I Do give unto this my Grandson Thomas Howes my Silver Tanker.

6ly my will is that my Children Shall Have a Convenient way to come at their meadow with a Cart where it is below my Land

7ly I Do Give out of my movable Estate to my Daughter Rebeka Howes thirty pounds

It I do give unto my Two sons Prince Howes and Ebenezer Howes all my Right in the Comon Land betwixt Garshom Halls and monomoy to be eaquely Divided between them;

(y) Sic.

(z) Sic.

and all my wearing Clothes to be Divided Eaquely betwixt my Two sons Prince Howes and Ebenezer Howes

It I Give unto my Grandson Joseph Bacon out of my moveable Estate Ten pounds

It I Do Give unto my Eight Daughters Elizabeth Bacon Sarah Mayo Mary Howes(z1) Bethiah Howes(z1) Marcey Sturges Susanah Bassett Thankfull Miller and Rebekah Howes out of my movable Estate the sum of six score pounds that will be fifteen pounds appiece to each of them.

It I Give unto my five Grandchildren the children of my son Jeremiah Howes, the eleventh part of all my movable Estate that is not herebefore Disposed of to be Eaquely Divided betwixt them; And as for the Rest of my movable Estate Togather with all my Land and meadow Lyeing in Bridgewater and Midelborough or thereabouts Lyeing or falling in the neighbouring Towns thereabouts I Do Give and bequeath Eaquely to be Divided betwixt all my Children now In being: to wit: Prince Howes Ebenezer Howes Elizabeth Baken Sarah Mayo, Mary Hawse Bethiah Hawse Mercy Sturgis Susanah Bassett Thankfull Miller and Rebeka Howse to be Eaquely Divided betwixt them all; I Likewise I Do order Constitute and appoint my Two sons Prince Howse and Ebenezer Howes Togather with my son Samuel Sturgis these three to be sole Executors of this my Last will and Testament and I Do hereby utterly Disalow Revoke Disanul all and every other former will & Testament any ways before named Ratifying and confirming this to be my Last will and Testament and no other In

(z1) So in the record, no doubt an error of the recorder or draftsman.

Witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seal the Day and year above written

Jeremy Howes (seal)

Signed Sealed Published pronounced and Declared by ye sd Jeremiah Howes as his Last will and Testament In the free sence of us ye subscribers:

Thomas Howes

John Howes

Nathl Howes.

THIRD GENERATION.

V. (1) 'Samuel² (Joseph², Thomas¹) Howes, b. in Yarmouth ; m. about 1678(a) Rebecca(a1) ; d. in Yarmouth Jan. 10, 1722-3.(a2) He resided on the N. side of Cape Cod in the present town of Dennis. He was in King Philip's war, starting on the expedition June 24, 1675. His pay amounted to £1 16s.(b) In the rate of 1676 "towards the charges of the late war" his tax was £2 6s. 9d.(c) In May, 1678, he was a freeman present at the town-meeting.(d) In 1679 he is styled "sergeant".(d1) In February, 1680, with his father, Joseph, and his uncle, Jeremiah, he

(a) March 8, 1677-8, the town gave him a house lot containing six acres more or less adjoining his father's land. (Land Grant Book of Yarmouth, p. 7.)

(a1) Perhaps his cousin, daughter of his uncle Capt. Thomas² Howes.

(a2) Howes Genealogy, by Joshua C. Howes, p. 12; 2 Freeman, 213, which says erroneously that he d. Jan. 10, 1723-4.

(b) Swift, 100.

(c) Ib. 105.

(d) Ib. 108; 2 Freeman, 196.

(d1) Yar. Recs.

(e) Swift, 109.

was appointed by the town to secure for it all whales that might be cast up between Sawsuit Harbor mouth and Yarmouth Harbor, for £4 a whale.(e) June 9, 1683, Samuel Howes is mentioned as a surveyor of highways for Yarmouth.(f) Feb. 11, 1685-6, Samuel Howes was a witness to the will of Capt. James Forster and swore to it July 13, 1686.(g) June 24, 1690, he took the oath of a freeman at a county court at Barnstable.(h) April 18, 1690, Samuel Howes was a witness to the deed of partition of the estate of Thomas Crowell, Sr., of Yarmouth, deceased.(i) In the rate of 1698 in Yarmouth the tax of Samuel Howes was £4 4s. 3d.(j) In 1695 the town's meadow at Simpkins Neck, Nobscusset, was leased to Samuel Howes.(k) In 1704-5 he was a representative in the legislature at Boston.(l) In the division of the common lands in 1712 he received 32 shares, and is styled Captain.(m)

His will was dated June 7 and a codicil Dec. 14, 1722. They were proved Jan. 29, 1722-3, and are recorded in 4 Barn. Prob. Recs. 90. They mention his wife Rebecca, his grandson Samuel Sears (son of Josiah), his son Joseph, his daughters Experience Howes, Hope Sears, Sarah Sears, Mercy Sears, deceased, and his grand-

daughters (daughters of Mercy) Mercy Sears and Hannah Sears. The inventory(m1) of Capt. Samuel Howes, taken Jan. 22, 1722-3, amounted to £1446 19s. 9d., of which £1190 represented real estate.

Children,(n)

born in Yarmouth, order of birth uncertain:

27. Joseph, b. ; m.(o) Elizabeth Paddock Nov. 2, 1710; d. between July 13, 1750 (date of his will(p)), and Jan. 1, 1750-1 (date of probate). His will mentions his wife Elizabeth, his children Samuel,(q) Edward, Joseph, Zachariah, Barnabas, Elizabeth and Rebecca, and his grandson Samuel.

28. Hope, b. ; m.(r) 1st at Yarmouth May 15, 1706, Richard Sears , who moved to Chatham, and 2d John Rich of Eastham, and had issue by both.

29. Sarah,(r1) b. about 1686; m.(r) Feb. 12, 1708-9, at Yarmouth, Daniel Sears , (who moved to Chatham) and had among other children Sarah, b. April 11, 1714, who m. Joshua^s (Thomas^s, Henry¹) Atkins August 1, 1734, and d. April 30, 1751, leaving among other children Susannah (b.

(m1) 4 Barn. Prob. Recs. 92.

(n) J. C. Howes, 12, says Samuel^s Howes had also Samuel, who d. March 18, 1705-6. He was probably the Samuel Howes who m. Mehitable Goodspeed Dec. 18, 1705 (Yar. Recs.; 14 Mf. 88).

(o) J. C. Howes, 12. He says (p. 16) that he d. Dec. 6, 1750; Yar. Recs.

(p) 4 Barn. Prob. Recs. 436-8.

(q) Joseph and Elizabeth Howes had Samuel, b. Oct. 12, 1712, and other children recorded in the Yarmouth records (13 Mf. 227). See J. C. Howes, No. 18, pp. 16 and 17.

(f) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. -111.

(g) 1 Barn. Prob. Recs. 1; 2 Mf. 177.

(h) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 257.

(i) 11 Mf. 26.

(j) Recs. of Superior Ct. of Judicature, No. 4600; Rec. Book 1686-1700, p. 297; Supreme Ct. Clerk's Of., Boston.

(k) 2 Freeman, 202.

(l) Swift, 236; 8 Prov. Laws of Mass. 62, 63.

(m) Swift, 126.

March 6, 1738-9) who m. 1st Aug .17, 1756, William⁴ (William³, Joseph², Robert¹) Eldredge, and had by him among other children Sarah (Sally), b. Sept. 18, 1761, who m. Reuben C. Taylor and was the grandmother of the compiler of this article.(s) Sarah (Howes) Sears, wife of Capt. Daniel Sears, d. in Chatham Nov. 9, 1748, in her 63d year.(t)

30. Mercy, b. ; m.(r) Josiah Sears at Yarmouth April 3, 1702. She had issue.

31. Experience, b.

Will of Capt. Samuel Howes.

In the name of God Amen the seventh day of June in the eighth year of his majtes Reign 1722, I, Samuel Howes of Yarmouth In the County of Barnstable and province of the Massachusetts Bay In New England being at present Time In helth of body and of Disposing mind and memory blessed be God for it, but not knowing how soon my Change may come by death and being minded to settle my Temporal affairs in order thereunto; Do make ordaine & appoint this to be my Last will and Testament. And first I Recomend my Soul Into the hands of God that gave it me hoping thro' the merriits Death &c. of Christ to have the free and full pardon of all my sins, and to Inherit Life Eternal thro' him and my body to th^e Dust

(r) Sears Genealogy by May, 11. 59, 60, 63, 68.

(r1) J. C. Howes (p. 11) is in error in making her the daughter of Thomas² Howes.

(s) Sears Gèneal. by May, 60; "Atkins" by the compiler, 9, 10, 16, 17; "Eldred, Eldredge" by the compiler, 17, 18, 28, 29; "Richard Taylor, Tailor," by the compiler, 31, 35.

(t) Gr. St.; 8 Mf. 239.

from whence it came to be buried in such Decent manner after my decease as my Executors hereafter named shall think fit; And as for such worly goods or Estate as it hath pleased God to bless me with; I give and Dispose of the same as followeth. And first I will that all my Just debts and funeral charges shall be paid In convenient Time after my decease out of my moveable estate by my sd Executors

Imp. I give and bequeath unto my loving wife Rebeckah the one third part of all my moveable Estate without Doors and within Doors, which shall be left after my debts and the legacies herein given are paid; to be at her own Dispose forever and the other two thirds thereof to be for her use and improvement untill her death or marriage; and then to be disposing of as followeth and also one third part of the proffits use or improvement of all my Lands and meadows & the use and improvement of the wester end of my dwelling house from the ground upward and the use of half my shop & seller under it and also half my barn and half the fruit of my orchard all so as she shall continue my widow

Item I give and bequeath unto my grandson Samuel Sears son of Josiah Sears (In case he continue to dwell with and serve me or my said wife until he arive to the age of Twenty and one years) all my parcell of Lands at the Black Earth so called and half a Lot of Land lying above Skargo hill in Yarmouth and all my brocken meadow at grays beach only if he shall see cause to sell said Lands or meadow or any part thereof my will is that he Tender the same unto my son Joseph Howes he giving as much as another for the same.

Item I give and bequeath unto my son Joseph Howes and to his heirs and assigns forever all my houseing Lands and meadows whatsoever & wheresoever the same is or may be found at my decease as an estate of Inhabitation forever excepting what is Allredy given and granted unto my wife and my grandson.

Item I give and bequeath unto my Daughter Experience fourty pounds to be paid to her out of my moveable Estate as it shall be prized and ye privilege to Live in the western end of my house untill she shall marry. And I do give unto my Daughter hope Sears besides what she hath allredy Received, the sum of fourty shillings out of my moveable estate, and to my Daughter Sarah Sears besides what she hath allredy Received of me Twenty shillings out of my moveable estate as it shall be prized.

Item I give unto my three grandchildren Samuel Sears Mercy Sears and Hannah Sears children of my Daughter Mercy Sears deceased the one quarter of all my moveable estate which shall be remaining after my wifes Decease or marriage to be equally divided between them or to those of them yt shall be then liven, but if none of them shall Live so long then the same to be equally Divided between my said three Daughters now Living or to yr heirs.

Item I give the remainder of the two thirds of my moveable estate not already herein Disposed, which shall be Left at my wifes Decease or marriage to be equally Divided between my three Daughters hope sears Sarah sears and Experience or to their heirs.

And I do hereby make nominate and appoint my sd wife Rebekah my son Joseph Howes and my Loveing brother John Howes to be Executors to this

my Last will and Testament, And I do hereby Renounce and make void all other wills hear tofore made by me Declaring this to be my Last will & Testament In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the Day and year above written. Signed sealed pronounced and Decleared by the above named Samuel Howes to be his Last will and Testament In Presence of us Witnesses

Samuel Howes (seal)

Peter Thacher
Ebenezer Baker
Thankfull Thacher
John Howes
Ebenezer Howes

For explanation of the above written my will is that my wife's Interest in my Real Estate granted to her as abovesd shall returne to my son Joseph Howes and to his heirs and assigns forever at her decease or marriage and that if my sd grandson Samuel Sears shall Dy before he come to the age of twentyone years or shall Live serving my sd wife that then the Lands and meadow above granted to him shall allso return unto my said son Joseph Howes and to his heirs and assigns forever as witness my hand & seal Decbr ye 4th 1722 In presence of us

Samuel Howes (seal)

MAYO.

JOHN MAYO, a clergyman, came from England in 1638. He was in Barnstable in 1639 before the Rev. John Lothrop came, who arrived Oct. 11, 1639. Mr. Mayo then had a frame house there and acted as teaching elder of the church, of which the Rev. Joseph Hull acted as pastor. (a) Dec.

(a) 1 Otis, 333; 2 ib. 190, 201, 202, 204, 220-222.

11, 1639, Thanksgiving was held at Mr. Hull's. The praises of God being ended, they "divided into three companies to feast together, some at Mr. Hull's, some at Mr. Mayo's, some at Brother Lombard's, Senior." (b) April 15, 1640, Mr. Mayo was ordained as teaching elder. (c) He went to Eastham in 1646 and took charge of the church, remaining till 1655, when he went to Boston and was settled over the Second or North church, remaining till 1673, when he was dismissed on account of age. He was ordained in Boston Nov. 9, 1655. The church records (in the handwriting of the Rev. Increase Mather) in the beginning of 1672, say: "Mr. Mayo, the Pastor, likewise grew very infirm, insomuch as the congregation was not able to hear and be edified." The congregation therefore desired a new minister and he consented. "On the 15th of the 2d month [April] 1673, removed his person and goods also, from Boston to reside with his daughter in Barnstable where (and at Yarmouth) since he hath lived a private life, as not being able through infirmities of old age to attend to the word of the ministry. The day of the 3d [May] month 1676 he departed this life at Yarmouth, and was there buried." His widow Tamison (Tamsen) died also at Yarmouth, Feb. 26, 1682-3. After he left Boston, the congregation continued to contribute to his support until his death. (d) The Rev. Increase Mather was associated with him in Boston as teaching elder from

1664 and succeeded him as pastor. (e) He preached the election sermon in June, 1658. (f) March 3, 1639-40, he was admitted a freeman at Barnstable and sworn. (g) June 17, 1641, he and Mr. Thomas Dimmack were by consent of the parties made arbitrators of the differences between Nicholas Simpkins and William Chase. (h) In August, 1643, he was one of those in Barnstable between 16 and 60 years of age able to bear arms, his name being 2d on the list, following that of Rev. John Lothrop. (i) In 1675 Christopher Gibson of Dorchester by his will made a bequest to Mr. Mather and Mr. Mayo. (j) Before May 12, 1655, John Morton of Plymouth had bought land in Eastham of the Rev. John Mayo, formerly of that town. (k) Oct. 2, 1660, Rev. John Mayo was one of the witnesses to the will of William Paine and swore to it in Boston Nov. 14, 1660. (l) Dec. 22 and 29, 1670, Mr. John Mayo (described as elder), with other elders and named first among them, and with the selectmen, magistrates and governor, was present in Boston when Ezekiel Cheever was made head master of the free school. (m) In the Yarmouth rate in 1676 "toward the charges of the late war" Mr. Mayo's tax was £2 4s. 3d. (n) He died in 1676. (o)

- (e) Winsor's Boston, 188.
- (f) 2 Freeman, 358.
- (g) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 140.
- (h) 2 ib. 20.
- (i) 8 ib. 193.
- (j) 65 N. E. Reg. 63; 6 Suffolk Prob. Recs. 64.
- (k) 9 Mf. 233.
- (l) 10 N. E. Reg. 85, 86.
- (m) 33 N. E. Reg. 171, 172.
- (n) Swift, 105.
- (o) Swift, 107.

- (b) 2 ib. 21, 204.
- (c) 2 ib. 21, 207; 2 Freeman, 247.
- (d) Pratt's Eastham, 23; The Preble Family, by G. H. Preble, 259, 260; 3 Savage, 187.

Under date of June 7, 1676; the following entry appears: (p) "Mr. Hinckley, Mr. Freeman, and Mr. Huckens are appointed by the Court to take course about the estate of Mr. John Mayo, deceased, to make devison and settlement of the said estate, both with reference unto his wifes pte and amongst his children, and therein to acte. if it may be, to their satisfaction; and incase they can not, then to make report therof to the next Court, that soe further maybe taken for settlement therof."

The inventory of Rev. Mr. Mayo's personal estate, taken June 1, 1676, by Edmond Hawes and Thomas Huckins, amounted to £111 4s., including £10 for books. (q) June 15, 1676, his heirs settled his estate by agreement, which was signed by Tamsen Mayo, widow, John Mayo, son, Joseph Howes, son-in-law, and by Thomas Huckins in behalf of Hannah Bacon, daughter. John Mayo and Joseph Howes were made administrators. There were three grandchildren mentioned, Samuel Mayo, Hannah Mayo, and Bathsheba Mayo, children of his son Nathaniel Mayo, deceased. (r)

Children, (s) born in England.

1. Samuel²; m. Thomasin (or Tamsen), daughter of William Lumpkin of Yarmouth (t); d. early in 1664, being a mariner. In August, 1643, he was one of those between 16 and 60

in Barnstable able to bear arms. (u) His wife joined the Barnstable church Jan. 20, 1649-50. (v) He removed later to Boston, where his estate was settled, his inventory being taken April 25 and his father being appointed administrator April 26, 1664, his widow declining to act. (w) She m. 2d, Mr. John Sunderland of Boston, who later was a citizen of Eastham. (w1) June 7, 1648, he had a suit of trespass on the case against John Williams, Sr., for £40 damage. Not appearing, he was nonsuited and ordered to pay the charges of the court. (x) June 4, 1650, he was propounded to take up his freedom. (y) June 5, 1650, he and Mr. Thomas Howes were appointed administrators of Samuel Hallett, deceased. (z) Oct. 2, 1652, Samuel Mayo was one of the witnesses to a deed at Barnstable, (a) and Jan. 29, 1657-8, he also witnessed a writing. (b) In 1653 Peter Wright, Samuel Mayo and William Leveridge bought of Assiapum alias Moheness, an Indian sachem, the land now the village of Oyster Bay on Long Island. The three grantees by endorsement on the deed gave to seven other persons equal rights with themselves in the land purchased. (c) William Leveridge had been the first pastor of the church in Sandwich, Mass., and employed Samuel Mayo, who owned the

(u) 4 N. E. Reg. 258.

(v) 9 N. E. Reg. 281.

(w) 13 N. E. Reg. 332, 333.

(w1) Josiah Paine.

(x) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 125.

(y) Ib. 154.

(z) Ib. 156.

(a) 1 Mf. 139.

(b) 12 ib. 81.

(c) History of Queen's Co., N. Y. (1882), 469, 470.

(p) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 200.

(q) 3 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, p. 165; 9 Mf. 120.

(r) 3 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, p. 175; 9 Mf. 119, 121, 122. See also 6 N. E. Reg. 168, 174; 1 Otis, 25, 220, 222.

(s) 6 N. E. Reg. 168.

(t) 3 Savage, 130, 188.

vessel named Desire, to transport his goods to Oyster Bay. This vessel was captured by one Thomas Baxter in Hempstead Harbor under pretense of authority from Rhode Island, but Mayo recovered a judgment against Baxter because of the capture. Mayo was at Oyster Bay for some time, but did not settle there, and the statement that he died at that place in 1670 is erroneous. (d) If a Samuel Mayo died there at that time, it may have been the son of the grantee. Samuel² Mayo and his wife had six children: (e) Mary, who was baptized (f) in Barnstable Feb. 3, 1649-50, and married (g) Capt. Jonathan Bangs July 16, 1664, who lived in Eastham and Harwich (now Brewster); Samuel, baptized in Barnstable Feb. 3, 1649-50; (f) Hannah, b. Barnstable Oct. 20, 1650; (h) Elizabeth, b. Barnstable May 22, 1653, who m. March 1674-5, the Rev. Samuel Treat, who became minister of Eastham in 1652; (i) Nathaniel, b. in Boston April 1658; (j) Sarah, b. in Boston Dec. 1660; (k) the 2d wife of Lt. Edward Paine of Eastham. Mr. Paine's Samuel² and his wife a daughter

- (d) Ib. 471.
- (e) 6 N. E. Reg. 168, 169.
- (f) 9 N. E. Reg. 284.
- (g) 8 N. E. Reg. 368 (sheet); 3 page, 188; Bangs Geneal. by Dud-22.
- (h) 3 Savage, 188.
- (i) East. Recs.; 8 Mf. 243, 244. See Pratt's Eastham, 36, 37, and h's Truro, 97. The last-mentioned incorrectly make this Elizabeth the daughter instead of the granddaughter of the Rev. John Mayo.
- (j) Births, Marriages and Deaths of N. 1630-1699, p. 64.
- (k) Ib. 74; Mr. Paine.

ter Mercy who m. Capt. Samuel Sears of Harwich, and a son John, who m. Hannah Freeman (daughter of Major John) and settled in Harwich.

2. Hannah², b. ; m. in Barnstable Dec. 4, 1642, Nathaniel Bacon. (l)

3. Nathaniel²; m. Feb. 13, 1649-50, Hannah Prence, daughter of Gov. Thomas Prence and granddaughter of Elder Brewster; (m) d. in Eastham about the end of 1661. His will was dated Dec. 19, 1661, and his inventory was filed March 4, 1661-2. (n) His widow married as his 2d wife Capt. Jonathan Sparrow. (m) Nathaniel and Hannah had the following six children:

Thomas, b. Dec. 7, 1650; m. June 13, 1677, Barbara Knowles of Eastham; d. April 22, 1729.

Nathaniel, b. Nov. 16, 1652; m. 1st January 28, 1678-9, Elizabeth Wixam, (o) and 2d June 10 1708, Mercy, widow of Nathaniel Young; d. Nov. 30, 1709.

Samuel, b. Oct. 12, 1655; m. twice; d. Oct. 29, 1738.

Hannah, b. Oct. 17, 1657.

Theophilus, b. Dec. 17, 1659. Mentioned in the will of Gov. Prence, his grandfather. He died without issue. (p)

Bathsheba.

June 5, 1651, Nathaniel² was pronounced to take up his freedom. (q) He was announced as surveyor of highways for Eastham June 1, 1658. (r) Mar.

(l) 1 Otis, 25, 220, 222; 9 Mf. 119; 6 N. E. Reg. 168, 174.

(m) 6 N. E. Reg. 234; 1 Brewster Genealogy, 21, 22; 14 Mf. 2, 193, 194.

(n) 6 N. E. Reg. 93.

(o) 4 Mf. 32.

(p) 3 Mf. 204, 205; 14 Mf. 198.

(q) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 167.

(r) 3 ib. 136.

4, 1661-2, he having died, his widow Hannah was appointed administratrix.(s) In August, 1643, he was one of those in Barnstable between 16 and 60 able to bear arms.(t) He was admitted a freeman and sworn June 3, 1652.(u)

4. John²; m.(v) at Eastham Jan. 1, 1651-2, Hannah Lecraft; d. before Oct. 28, 1706, at Eastham.(w) He was surveyor of highways for Eastham June 3, 1656.(x) June 1, 1658, he was a constable at Eastham.(y) Nov. 14, 1676, he was one of the overseers of the will of Nicholas Snow.(z) John² Mayo and his wife had nine children(a):

John, b. Dec. 15, 1652.

William, b. Oct. 7, 1654.

James, b. Oct. 3, 1656.

Samuel, b. April 2, 1658 ✓

✓ Elisha, b. Nov. 4, 1661.

Daniel, b. June 25, 1664.

Nathaniel, b. April 2, 1667.

• Thomas, b. June 24 and d. Aug. 11, 1670.

Thomas, b. July 15, 1672. ✓

5. Elizabeth²; m. Joseph² Howes of Yarmouth; d. March 12, 1700-1, leaving issue. See supra, p. 9.

(s) 4 ib. 8.

(t) 8 ib. 194.

(u) 3 ib. 7.

(v) East. Recs.; 6 Mf. 205. 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 26 gives the name of his wife as Hannah Reyecraft and the date of marriage as Jan. 1, 1650-1.

(w) His will, dated June , 1702, was proved July 8, 1707. His inventory, dated Oct. 28, 1706, was sworn to Nov. 4, 1706. (3 Barn. Prob. Recs. 324, 326.)

(x) 3 Plym. Col. Recs. 101.

(y) Ib. 136.

(z) 3 Mf. 169.

(a) 6 Mf. 205; 14 ib. 117.

Note as to Howes.

The "Genealogy of the Howes Family" (1892), by Joshua C. Howes, gives the name of the wife of Thomas¹ Howes as Mary Burr,(b) but no proof of her surname can be found. Mr. Howes says that the emigrant came from the County of Norfolk, England, but here again there is no proof that the emigrant had any connection with the Norfolk family or was entitled to the coat of arms given in the book. Burke's General Armory, 513, gives the arms of Howes or Howse (Morningthorpe, Co. Norfolk), without indication of date, from which those in this book of J. C. Howes are taken, but Burke gives two different sets of arms without indication of place or date, and also gives the arms of Joan Howes, heiress of the family in the time of Henry VIII, Co. Essex. He also gives different sets of arms for various families named Hughes, Hugh, Hewes and for others having similar names. At the time of the emigration of Thomas¹ Howes the name was not uncommon in various parts of England.

The author also says (p. 7) that "they [Thomas¹ and his wife] were in Salem, Mass., two years before, or in 1637, where they first landed. They brought with them three sons, Joseph, Thomas and Jeremiah, the last born on the passage over, or soon after arrival." There is no evidence that they had lived in Salem. There is evidence that they had lived in Lynn. The date and place of their arrival in America nowhere appear. They may have landed in Boston or Salem and in view of the litigation he was en-

(b) Austin's Allied Families, 136, gives the same name, probably taken from J. C. Howes.

vessel named Desire, to transport his goods to Oyster Bay. This vessel was captured by one Thomas Baxter in Hempstead Harbor under pretense of authority from Rhode Island, but Mayo recovered a judgment against Baxter because of the capture. Mayo was at Oyster Bay for some time, but did not settle there, and the statement that he died at that place in 1670 is erroneous.(d) If a Samuel Mayo died there at that time, it may have been the son of the grantee. ✓ Samuel² Mayo and his wife had six children: (e) Mary, who was baptized (f) in Barnstable Feb. 3, 1649-50, and married (g) Capt. Jonathan Bangs July 16, 1664, who lived in Eastham and Harwich (now Brewster); Samuel, baptized in Barnstable Feb. 3, 1649-50; (f) Hannah, b. Barnstable Oct. 20, 1650; (h) Elizabeth, b. Barnstable May 22, 1653, who m. March 16, 1674-5, the Rev. Samuel Treat, who had become minister of Eastham in 1672; (i) Nathaniel, b. in Boston April 1, 1658; (j) Sarah, b. in Boston Dec. 19, 1660; (k) the 2d wife of Lt. Edward Freeman of Eastham. Mr. Paine gives Samuel² and his wife a daughter

(d) Ib. 471.

(e) 6 N. E. Reg. 168, 169.

(f) 9 N. E. Reg. 284.

(g) 8 N. E. Reg. 368 (sheet); 3 Savage, 188; Bangs Geneal. by Dudley, 22.

(h) 3 Savage, 188.

(i) East. Recs.; 8 Mf. 243, 244. See also Pratt's Eastham, 36, 37, and Rich's Truro, 97. The last-mentioned works erroneously make this Elizabeth the daughter instead of the granddaughter of the Rev. John Mayo.

(j) Births, Marriages and Deaths of Boston, 1630-1699, p. 64.

(k) Ib. 74; Mr. Paine.

ter Mercy who m. Capt. Samuel Sears of Harwich, and a son John, who m. Hannah Freeman (daughter of Major John) and settled in Harwich.

✓ 2. Hannah², b. ; m. in Barnstable Dec. 4, 1642, Nathaniel Bacon.(l)

✓ 3. Nathaniel²; m. Feb. 13, 1649-50, Hannah Prence, daughter of Gov. Thomas Prence and granddaughter of Elder Brewster; (m) d. in Eastham about the end of 1661. His will was dated Dec. 19, 1661, and his inventory was filed March 4, 1661-2.(n) His widow married as his 2d wife Capt. Jonathan Sparrow.(m) Nathaniel and Hannah had the following six children:

Thomas, b. Dec. 7, 1650; m. June 13, 1677, Barbara Knowles of Eastham; d. April 22, 1729.

Nathaniel, b. Nov. 16, 1652; m. 1st January 28, 1678-9, Elizabeth Wixam,(o) and 2d June 10 1708, Mercy, widow of Nathaniel Young; d. Nov. 30, 1709.

Samuel, b. Oct. 12, 1655; m. twice; d. Oct. 29, 1738.

Hannah, b. Oct. 17, 1657.

Theophilus, b. Dec. 17, 1659. Mentioned in the will of Gov. Prence, his grandfather. He died without issue.(p)

Bathsheba.

June 5, 1651, Nathaniel² was pronounced to take up his freedom.(q) He was announced as surveyor of highways for Eastham June 1, 1658.(r) Mar.

(l) 1 Otis, 25, 220, 222; 9 Mf. 119; 6 N. E. Reg. 168, 174.

(m) 6 N. E. Reg. 234; 1 Brewster Genealogy, 21, 22; 14 Mf. 2, 193, 194.

(n) 6 N. E. Reg. 93.

(o) 4 Mf. 32.

(p) 3 Mf. 204, 205; 14 Mf. 198.

(q) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 167.

(r) 3 Ib. 136.

4, 1661-2, he having died, his widow Hannah was appointed administratrix.(s) In August, 1643, he was one of those in Barnstable between 16 and 60 able to bear arms.(t) He was admitted a freeman and sworn June 3, 1652.(u)

4. John²; m.(v) at Eastham Jan. 1, 1651-2, Hannah Lecraft; d. before Oct. 28, 1706, at Eastham.(w) He was surveyor of highways for Eastham June 3, 1656.(x) June 1, 1658, he was a constable at Eastham.(y) Nov. 14, 1676, he was one of the overseers of the will of Nicholas Snow.(z) John² Mayo and his wife had nine children(a):

John, b. Dec. 15, 1652.

William, b. Oct. 7, 1654.

James, b. Oct. 3, 1656.

Samuel, b. April 2, 1658

Elisha, b. Nov. 4, 1661.

Daniel, b. June 25, 1664.

Nathaniel, b. April 2, 1667.

Thomas, b. June 24 and d. Aug. 11, 1670.

Thomas, b. July 15, 1672.

5. Elizabeth²; m. Joseph² Howes of Yarmouth; d. March 12, 1700-1, leaving issue. See supra, p. 9.

(s) 4 ib. 8.

(t) 8 ib. 194.

(u) 3 ib. 7.

(v) East. Recs.; 6 Mf. 205. 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 26 gives the name of his wife as Hannah Reyecraft and the date of marriage as Jan. 1, 1650-1.

(w) His will, dated June , 1702, was proved July 8, 1707. His inventory, dated Oct. 28, 1706, was sworn to Nov. 4, 1706. (3 Barn. Prob. Recs. 324, 326.)

(x) 3 Plym. Col. Recs. 101.

(y) Ib. 136.

(z) 3 Mf. 169.

(a) 6 Mf. 205; 14 ib. 117.

Note as to Howes.

The "Genealogy of the Howes Family" (1892), by Joshua C. Howes, gives the name of the wife of Thomas¹ Howes as Mary Burr,(b) but no proof of her surname can be found. Mr. Howes says that the emigrant came from the County of Norfolk, England, but here again there is no proof that the emigrant had any connection with the Norfolk family or was entitled to the coat of arms given in the book. Burke's General Armory, 513, gives the arms of Howes or Howse (Morningthorpe, Co. Norfolk), without indication of date, from which those in this book of J. C. Howes are taken, but Burke gives two different sets of arms without indication of place or date, and also gives the arms of Joan Howes, heiress of the family in the time of Henry VIII, Co. Essex. He also gives different sets of arms for various families named Hughes, Hugh, Hewes and for others having similar names. At the time of the emigration of Thomas¹ Howes the name was not uncommon in various parts of England.

The author also says (p. 7) that "they [Thomas¹ and his wife] were in Salem, Mass., two years before, or in 1637, where they first landed. They brought with them three sons, Joseph, Thomas and Jeremiah, the last born on the passage over, or soon after arrival." There is no evidence that they had lived in Salem. There is evidence that they had lived in Lynn. The date and place of their arrival in America nowhere appear. They may have landed in Boston or Salem and in view of the litigation he was en-

(b) Austin's Allied Families, 136, gives the same name, probably taken from J. C. Howes.

gaged in in 1638, no doubt as early as 1637. Jeremiah was born about 1637, but whether in England, on the passage over or in America is not known. There is no proof of the age of Thomas' Howes at his death. This genealogy by J. C. Howes contains many errors and is imperfect. He appears not to have consulted the Barnstable Probate Records, only a few miles away from him. I have not relied on him except in a few instances where other authority was lacking. Otis seems to think that the principal settlers of Yarmouth came from Norfolk County. In the 2d volume of his Barnstable Families, p. 190, he says:

"The leading men among the first settlers [of Yarmouth] were from Norfolk county, of which Yarmouth was the principal seaport, hence the name."(c) Swift, however, takes the opposite view. In his Old Yarmouth (published in 1884), 23, he says: "The first mention of the name Yarmouth, as applied to this township, is found in the court record of January, 1639, in connection with the grant to Thacher, Howes and Crow. From the fact that this name was selected, it has been inferred that the settlers of this town came from Yarmouth, in England. This may have been true of some individual, but does not apply to the settlers as a body. They did not come from any single locality. Some were Eastern County men, some were from the Midland counties, some from Wales, and others from the South of England. Yarmouth, the principal seaport on the eastern coast of England, was the place of embarkation and debarkation between that country and Holland, and was naturally associated in

the minds of the early settlers. Hence, perhaps, the Howes family derived his information from several generations from Pelletreau, in his Co., N. Y. (501-505). His early information is a good source, while Thomas' Howes (pub. by Chas. Esq., of Yarmouthport, also followed J. C. Howes' early generations has several inflections and errors.

Swift, in his Old Yarmouth says: "Nothing is known of Howes before his coming to this country, neither have we any edge in what part of England he originated. He was in Salisbury in 1635,(d) and in Yarmouth in 1639, one of the original grantees of the town, where in connection with Thacher and Mr. Crow, he commenced the settlement, establishing himself in that part of the present town of Dennis, called 'New Boston'."

Mr. Howes's authority for the coat of arms and the English genealogy is the Rev. Dr. Reuben^s Wing Howes of New York city, whose line is Reuben^s Wing, Daniel^s, Moody^s, Thomas^s, Ebenezer^s, Jeremiah^s, Thomas^s Howes. Moody^s Howes removed to what is now Putnam County, N. Y., about 1750. Reuben^s Wing Howes was the founder and first president of the National Park Bank in New York city and afterwards head of the banking firm of Howes & Macy there. The compiler has had interviews with Dr. Howes and has been received with

Written before 1875.

(d) No proof of this.

es visited
 ev. Thomas
 rningthorpe
 of Belton
 near Yarmouth,
 that occasion
 papers and doc-
 a Thomas Howes
 the time of Thomas'
 could not be ac-
 whom the rector
 e emigrant. The com-
 ncende to this sugges-
 of proof, especially
 the English origin of
 Edmond Hawes he at
 Hawes family in Sussex,
 emed must include his an-
 subsequently proof was
 t he came not from Sussex,
 Warwickshire. With refer-
 the claim of a Norfolk origin
 mas' Howes, the best we can
 erefore is that he may have
 from that county.

1834 a monument was erected in
 Howes burying ground in Dennis
 ying the following inscription: (e)

"Here Lies
 Mr. Thomas Howes,
 and on his right, his wife, Mary Burr.
 She adorned her character by a
 discreet and virtuous life.

They were natives of England,
 and emigrated in the year 1637.
 Their births, deaths and marriages
 unknown.

We, their descendants, from a sense
 of filial duty, consecrate
 This stone to the first Howes that
 came to America.

'Twas from the central part of
 Briton's Isle they came,
 And on Columbia's soil did propagate
 a name;

We their descendants the Patriarch
 own

And to the first Howes, do dedicate
 this stone."

Swift's Old Yarmouth (p. 48) gives
 the inscription somewhat differently.
 He says the stone is on the E.
 declivity of a hill to the N. E. of his
 family seat, where he and many of
 his descendants are buried.

(e) J. C. Howes, 200.

* 4431.2..

No. 32.

No. 32.

LIBRARY of
Cape Cod
HISTORY & GENEALOGY

FOUNDERS' DAY EDITION
AUGUST 26, 1916.

of the
EARLY SETTLERS OF EASTHAM
Containing Sketches of all Early Settlers of Eastham
By Josiah Paine, Esq., of Harwich

IN TWO NUMBERS: BOOK 2

Book 1: Thomas Prence, Nicholas Snow, John Doane, Edward Bangs, Richard Higgins, John Smalley, Samuel Hicks, John Jenkins, Robert Wixon, Josiah Cooke, Joseph Rogers, John Freeman, John Mayo, Thomas Williams, Thomas Roberts; 32p.
Book 2: Richard Knowles, Richard Sparrow, Job Cole, Daniel Cole, Giles Hopkins, Ralph Smith, William Walker, William Merrick, Richard Bishop, William Sutton, William Twinning, George Crisp, Richard Rich, John Young, Thomas Paine, Joseph Collins, Thomas Bills, Henry Atkins; 31 pages.



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
1916.

74431.210

No. 32

Joseph H. Benton Vol.
Aug. 7, 1939
C
cont.

EARLY SETTLERS OF EASTHAM.

By Josiah Paine of Harwich.

RICHARD KNOWLES.

Richard Knowles was early settled in Plymouth. At that place he had land granted him in January, 1638-9, and there he was married to Ruth Bower, August 15 following. He appears to have been a sea-faring man. He was at Eastham in 1653. At that date he is mentioned as being in command of a barque which the government had secured to transport military stores, in case such were needed, the colony then expecting trouble with the Dutch. He was a surveyor of highways in 1669-70. He held no other offices in town it appears, though a man of standing. The time of his death does not appear. There appears no perfect record of his children. It is certain he had James, who died about 1682; John, who was slain in the Indian war in 1675; Mercy, who married Ephraim Doane; Samuel, born at Plymouth in 1651; Mehitable, born in Eastham, 1653, and Barbara, born in 1656.

John Knowles, son of Richard, married Apphia Bangs, Dec. 28, 1670. He was slain near Taunton by the Indians, in 1675, as above stated. By wife Apphia he had two sons, viz: Edward and John, who were prominent men in their day. Edward was a deacon, and for some years a selectman of the town. He died — 16, 1740. Col. John Knowles, his brother, was father of Col. Willard Knowles, a prominent citizen of Eastham. who somewhat exasperated the Revolutionary patriots of Eastham at the beginning of the conflict, by dealing in tea, and whose daughter Temperance was the first wife of Rev. Jonathan Bascom, minister of the South society. It is understood that Col. Willard resided in the north precinct. He was a man of considerable influence before the Revolution. His tombstone standing in the burying ground at Eastham, says: "After a life of virtue and various usefulness, attended with prosperity and reputation, died Mar. 11, 1786, in the 75 year of his age." He had before the

Revolutionary war been a colonel of the second regiment, a selectman and a representative.

Samuel Knowles, son of Richard, married Mercy Freeman, daughter of Major John Freeman, in December, 1679. He was a very prominent citizen. He was many years a representative and selectman. He died June 19, 1737, aged 85 years, and lies buried in the old cemetery in Orleans. He had a large family. His son Samuel, born in 1683, was a man of some notoriety. He was at one time a colonel in the militia. He served his townsmen as selectman and representative. He was taken sick in Boston and died there Jan. 30, 1750, at the age of 67 years. He lies buried in the Granary burying-ground in that city, where a stone with inscription marks the spot. His son Samuel, the third one of the name, was also a man of distinction. He was much in military service. He led a company of militia against Crown Point, and Fort William Henry, in the year 1756, under Col. Josiah Thacher of Yarmouth, and was in command of a company under Col. Doty against the French in 1758. He was in service a considerable length of time.

RICHARD SPARROW.

Richard Sparrow was in Plymouth as early as 1633. In 1638, he had forty acres of land granted him on the north end of Fresh lake. The same year he was one of those who investigated the cause of the death of John England, whose body had been found upon the flats about Plymouth. In 1639 he was one of the grand jurors for Plymouth; and is mentioned as having taken a fatherless girl as an "apprentice" for nine years, her former friend and stepfather consenting. The same year, he is reported as having had four steers sold him, by John Barnes, which were being wintered at Yarmouth, where they were to be delivered. In 1640, he was a constable and surveyor at Plymouth, and had meadow granted him at that place. In 1643, he was a grand juror, and in 1647 a surveyor at Plymouth. In 1650 he was a resident in that town, and had a cow stolen by one called in the record Thomas Sherne. He was in Eastham in 1655, and a surveyor. In 1656 he represented Eastham in the Colony court, showing that after

so short a residence the good people of Nausett had full confidence in his abilities, and that they were willing to entrust him with official honors. In 1657, with John Doane, Josiah Cooke, Richard Higgins, and John Smalley, he had land granted him between Bridgewater and Weymouth. The same year, with Thomas Clark, he was appointed by Plymouth court to make arrangements for the accommodation of Mr. Prence, who had been chosen governor, while on business at the seat of government, and also in going to and from court, while he had his home in Nausett. He was a surveyor in 1658, and a grand juror in 1659. He died at Eastham, "the 8th of Jan. in the year one thousand six hundred and sixty" say the Eastham records. His will was made Nov. 9, 1660, and presented at Plymouth March 5, 1660-1. It was witnessed by Samuel Freeman and Josiah Cooke. He mentions wife Pandora, son Jonathan, granddaughters Priscilla and Rebecca, and a grandson, John Sparrow. He gave to the church at Eastham "one ewe sheep," which his executors were to dispose of to the best advantage. He gave his place, etc., to his wife during her life, and at her decease, to his son Jonathan. This place was situated in the present town of Eastham, near the old burying-ground of the first settlers. A short time after his death, the mother and son sold out to Mr. Thomas Crosby, the religious teacher, and removed to the highlands of Porchet, within what is now called East Orleans, where the son Jonathan had made several purchases. Here the widow, it is supposed, lived until her death. He had a son but no daughters to survive him. The son, Captain Jonathan Sparrow, was a prominent man in Eastham. In 1876, the descendants of Richard Sparrow erected in the old yard at Eastham, a stone, with inscription, to his memory.

JOB COLE.

The Coles were among the early settlers of the Old Colony. John, Job and Daniel were brothers, and came over from England quite early. John settled at Plymouth, and died testate about the year 1637. Job and Daniel finally settled in Eastham, where they died.

Job Cole married Rebecca, daughter of Mr. William Collier,

a resident of that part of the Old Colony now Duxbury, May 14, 1634. He lived for awhile near Mr. Collier. In 1638, Mr. Cole had 40 acres of land granted him at Green Harbor, now Marshfield. He was propounded at Plymouth court March 4, 1638-9, and admitted a freeman March 3, 1639-40. It is recorded in 1639 that he paid the passage to this country of Thomas Gray, and found him apparel afterwards and before he became the indentured apprentice of Mr. John Atwood of Plymouth. Mr. Cole's name appears in the list of those who were able to bear arms in Yarmouth in 1643, which indicates that at that date he was a resident of Yarmouth; but if he were a resident it seems quite certain that he was not long at that place.

In 1648, he was residing in Eastham, and was that year chosen constable, and was ordered by the Old Colony court to take the oath at home. In 1650, he conveyed land at Marshfield to Thomas Chillingsworth, a shoemaker. In 1654, he was again constable of Eastham. In 1657, August 13, he sold his house and land at Duxbury to Christopher Wadsworth, for £17 sterling. After this date but little appears concerning him, and it is supposed that he died not far from this period.

His widow Rebecca died at Eastham Dec. 29, 1698, aged "about 88," and there was doubtless interred. Of the children of Job and Rebecca Cole, there appears no full list. It is quite certain he had three children, viz: Daniel, Samuel and Rebecca. Daniel Cole, the son, it is supposed is the one mentioned in the settlement of Mr. Collier's estate as receiving a portion of the estate, and the one who died in Eastham in 1713, leaving a wife Mercy and daughters Elizabeth, Mercy and Abigail.

Samuel Cole, son of Job, conveyed in 1682, meadow at Billingsgate which had been granted to his father, to Samuel Smith of Eastham. He settled in Harwich before 1694, and died in December, 1717, leaving children.

Rebecca, daughter of Job Cole, born in 1654, probably married Robert Nickerson of Chatham. It seemed that with this daughter lived the mother (the widow of Job) in her last years. Rebecca Nickerson was living as late as 1710, and received a small parcel of land at Billingsgate, towards what she had done in sup-

porting her deceased mother during the closing years of her life.

Job Cole appears to have been a man of good standing in Eastham, though not much honored in public positions. His brother Daniel was the more noted man and of greater influence in the town and colony.

DANIEL COLE.

Daniel Cole, a brother of Job Cole, of whom a sketch has already been given, was born in England in 1615, and found his way to Plymouth when a young man. He was a tailor by trade, and as early as 1640 had a large lot of land granted him in Duxbury, near William Bassett's and Edmund Hawes's land. He was at Marshfield as early as June, 1642, and his name appears upon the list of those able to bear arms in Yarmouth in 1643, but he seems not to have been a resident. He was admitted a freeman June 4, 1645, and one of the Grand Inquest that year. In 1649 he was a resident of Eastham and an accepted townsman, and sold his land in Duxbury to Mr. Edmund Weston. In 1650, he sold to the same gentleman his land at Marshfield. He soon became prominent in municipal affairs at Eastham, and in 1653 was one of the Grand Inquest. In 1654 he was sent a deputy or representative to the Colonial court at Plymouth, and represented Eastham in 1666, '67, '68, '69, '70 and '72. He was a selectman in 1668, '71, '72 and '74. In 1667 he was allowed to look out land for his accommodation, and in 1668, with Thomas Hineckley, Nathaniel Bacon, Constant Southworth, John Alden, John Chipman and Lieut. Morton, was appointed by the Old Colony court to purchase for Gov. Prence the place at Plain Dealing in Plymouth, which had been selected for the residence of the governor.

Mr. Cole, with Mr. Thomas Prence and Mr. John Freeman, was appointed by the town to use his "best endeavors to put forward or encourage the Indians" or the "English to kill the wolves," which at this time, and for more than thirty years afterwards, were numerous and troublesome within the precinct. As late as 1690 the Indians were encouraged to hunt and capture them. Manassan, an Indian, carried in to the clerk of the town, in the spring of that year, four young wolves, which he affirmed he

caught in the vicinity of "Cliff pond." In 1661, he had liberty granted him "to draw and sell strong water and wine at Eastham, provided that he always be furnished with good wine for the supply of those that are in need amongst them." Whether he followed the instructions and allowed the wine to be sold without being adulterated, we have no knowledge. It is presumed that the art of adulteration at that period was known, and that liquor selling was a lucrative business, as all kinds of liquors were in common use. The early settlers were very careful in allowing the sale, and none were appointed to draw strong water but men of character. Illegal traffic in liquors was not allowed, and all violaters, of whatever standing in society, were dealt with according to law when caught. But with all their strictness and watchfulness, there were violaters that escaped punishment, as now, and intemperance not much prevented.

Mr. Cole died at Eastham Nov. 20, 1694, aged 79 years. His wife Ruth died Dec. 16, following. Mr. Cole had twelve children, viz: John, Timothy, Hepsibah, Israel, James, Mary, Ruth, Hester, William, Thomas and Daniel. From him have descended, it is supposed, all the Coles of the Cape.

John Cole, son of Daniel, born in 1646, married Ruth Snow in 1666, and died in Eastham Jan. 6, 1725-6. He was a large land owner in Truro, Eastham and Harwich. He left John, Joseph, Ruth, Hepsibah, Hannah, Mary and Sarah, children.

Israel Cole, son of Daniel, married Mary Rogers in 1679. He was a trader in Barnstable, where he died about 1724. He had two children, Hannah and Israel.

Mary, daughter of Daniel, married Joshua Hopkins, son of Giles, a large land owner of Eastham; died in 1734.

Daniel Cole, Jr., son of Daniel, died at Eastham, June 15, 1736, aged 69 years. He left no children. His wife, Mercy, died Sept. 25, 1735, aged 64 years. He was a man of means. He gave his property to his relatives.

GILES HOPKINS.

Giles Hopkins was the eldest son of Mr. Stephen Hopkins of Plymouth. He was born in England, and came over with his

father's family in the Mayflower in 1620, and with the other members of his father's family survived the first winter's sickness, which swept off so many of that company. Of his boyhood days, but little appears. He appears to have been of a retiring disposition, only forward when duty impelled. When, in 1637, the Pequots, a tribe of brave Indians inhabiting the eastern part of Connecticut, commenced war with the English in that region, and Plymouth Colony concluded to send a company to assist in the overthrow of the Indians, he, with his father and younger brother Caleb, volunteered to go out in the company in the defence of his Connecticut neighbors, but happily for the company, before ready to go forth, the troops under Captain Mason had "vanquished" the enemy, and the company was not needed. The next year, Mr. Stephen Hopkins having been allowed by the Old Colony court "to erect a house at Mattacheese" now Yarmouth, "to cut hay there" and "to winter his cattle," it is supposed his son Giles went down there and had charge of his cattle. At any rate, he was at Yarmouth in 1639, and with Hugh Tilley and Nicholas Sympkins, "deposed" to the last will and testament of Peter Warden, the elder, deceased, and also courted and married Catherine Whelden, daughter of Gabriel Whelden, who was licensed to build at Mattacheese the year preceding. The house he occupied while a resident of Yarmouth stood a little to the northwest on the declivity or knoll, and the site was pointed out to the writer by the late Amos Otis a few years before his death. It is believed by Mr. Otis to have been the first house built below Sandwich, and certainly it must have been, if it were the one built by Stephen Hopkins by order of Plymouth court. Mr. Otis, in his account of Andrew Hallett, Jr., says it was sold by Giles Hopkins in 1642 to Mr. Hallett. It would seem that Mr. Hopkins was not a resident of Yarmouth in 1643, as his name does not appear in the list of those able to bear arms that year in the township, but evidence is quite conclusive that he was a resident June 6, 1644. At that date his father made his will, and several times speaks of Giles being at Yarmouth in charge of the cattle. It is probable he was not enrolled on account of being physically unable to do military duty. In what year he removed to Nausett or East-

ham, is not known. He was there in 1650, occupying the position of surveyor of highways, which he subsequently occupied several years. For some reason, now inexplicable, his father, by will, made Caleb, his younger son by second wife, the "heir apparent," and consequently the whole of the real estate, which was large, passed into the hands of Caleb at his death. Caleb Hopkins, soon after his father's death in July, 1644, gave up a very large tract of land to Giles, his only surviving brother, lying in what is now Brewster. Upon the death of Caleb, who was a seaman, and who died single at Barbadoes before 1657, Giles came into possession of large tracts. In 1659, Mr. Hopkins had land granted him in Eastham. In 1662, with Lieut. Joseph Rogers and Josiah Cooke, he had liberty allowed him by the Colony court to look out for land for his accommodation between Bridgewater and Bay Line. In 1672, with Jonathan Sparrow and Thomas Mayo of Eastham, he purchased Sampson's Neck in what is now Orleans, then called by the Indians Weesu Neck in what is now Orleans, then called by the Indians "Weesquamseutt." The tract was a valuable one; it embraced the territory between Higgins's river on the north, and Potonumecot river on the south. He seems to have been a very quiet man, caring but little for public positions. He was in 1654 drawn into a lawsuit by the noted William Leveridge, who had defamed him. Mr. Hopkins claimed damages to the amount of £50. Mr. Leveridge was ordered to pay £2 and some shillings for the offence.

The will of Giles Hopkins bears date Jan. 19, 1682; the codicil March 5, 1688-9. The former was witnessed by Jonathan Sparrow and Samuel Knowles, and the latter by Mark Snow and Jonathan Sparrow, and was presented for probate April 22, 1690, Stephen Hopkins, son, executor. There are no daughters mentioned. Sons mentioned are: Stephen, Caleb, Joshua and William. The widow was alive at the date of the codicil, and Mr. Hopkins had become unfit for labor and held out inducements to his son Stephen to supply his wants. It seems quite certain that his farm was in that part of Eastham now Orleans, and some part of it joined Town cove. According to the records, Mr. Hopkins had ten children, five of whom were daughters. They

were Mary, born November, 1640, who married Samuel Smith; Stephen, born September, 1642; John, born in 1643; Abigail, born in 1644; Deborah, born in 1648, who married Josiah Cooke, Jr.; Caleb, born January, 1650; Ruth, born in 1653; Joshua, born June, 1657; William, born in 1660, and Elizabeth, born in 1664.

Stephen Hopkins, the eldest son, removed to Harwich, now Brewster, and settled, having all his father's possessions there, where he died Oct. 10, 1718, aged 76 years. He was twice married and had eight children. Caleb Hopkins, the third son, removed to Truro, where his father had tracts of land, and died there about 1725, intestate, leaving four sons and one daughter, viz: Caleb, Nathaniel, Thomas, Thankful and Constant. Some of his grandsons lived to great ages. Isaac Hopkins, born in Truro March, 1725, died Jan. 6, 1814, was the oldest person native of the town that had died during the pastorate of Mr. Jude Damon up to that date. Mr. Samuel Hopkins, who died aged ninety-two years, eleven months, in July, 1820, was the eldest person who died in Truro between December, 1786, and September, 1828.

Joshua Hopkins, the third son of Giles, married Mary, daughter of Daniel Cole, May 26, 1681, and settled on the east side of Town cove, near his father's house. His house stood near or on the spot where the house of the late Isaac Seabury now stands. He was a very wealthy man. Much of his landed estate he inherited. He had eight children, viz: John, Abigail, Elisha, Lydia, Mary, Joshua, Hannah and Phebe. Hannah of this family died in Harwich, Oct. 24, 1793, in her 94th year. Mr. Hopkins was a farmer and shoemaker, it is understood. He owned land in Eastham, Harwich and Chatham. His wife Mary died March 1, 1734; he died in 1738. Many of his descendants have lived to great ages. Priscilla, a granddaughter, died in 1818, aged 90. Deacon Asa Hopkins, a great-great-grandson, died a few years since in Orleans, aged above 90 years.

William, the youngest son of Giles Hopkins, was never married. He was living in 1690. He seems not to have been capable of looking out for himself, and his father made ample provision for his support during life, leaving the matter of his support with Stephen, the executor, who, it is presumed, strictly carried out his father's plans in relation to his maintenance.

RALPH SMITH.

Ralph Smith appears to have been the first of the surname who settled in Eastham. He was there as early as 1657. He came from Hingham, where he had been a resident many years. He was originally from Hingham in England, it is understood, not far from the year 1633. While a resident of Eastham, he occupied no important official position. It is inferred from the Colonial records he was not a quiet citizen. He probably was twice married. His death occurred at Eastham in the year 1685. That year, October 27, letters of administration were granted to his widow, Grace, and son, Samuel. There appears no full record of his children, but as far as can be learned they were: Samuel, baptized at Hingham July 11, 1641; John, baptized July 23, 1644; Daniel, baptized March 2, 1647; Deborah, born in 1654, and Thomas. The date of the death of his wife Grace is not known.

Samuel Smith, son of Ralph, married Mary, daughter of Giles Hopkins of Eastham, and settled in that town. He early engaged in the whale and mackerel fishery, and was very successful. The latter years of his life he engaged in agriculture. He was owner of very large tracts of land, his largest tract containing over four hundred acres, situated in that part of Eastham now Orleans, and extending over to Baker's pond, from a line running northerly from Potonumecot river over Island pond to the mouth of the rivulet at the cove, near the house formerly occupied by Vickery Sparrow, which he sold November 1, 1684, to a large number of his townsmen. The tract for many years after this period was known as "Smith's Purchase." His death occurred March 20, 1696-70. His estate, both real and personal, was valued over twelve hundred pounds. He had beside his farm at Eastham, parts of two at Monomoy, now Chatham. The inventory of his estate shows that he was in possession of over fifty head of neat cattle, sixty sheep, and a number of horses at the time of his decease. Mr. Smith had six children; but only Mary, who married Daniel Hamilton, and John, survived him. They went to Chatham and settled. Samuel Smith, the oldest son, married Bashsheba Lothrop, of Barnstable, and died Sept. 22, 1692, leaving Samuel and Joseph, who had their father's share of the estate. Mr. Samuel Smith

held no office of importance in the town. He appears to have been a determined and resolute man. He doubtless resided in that part of the town of Eastham now Orleans. The date of his widow's death does not appear.

John Smith, son of Ralph Smith, settled in Eastham. He married probably twice. His first wife, Hannah, was daughter of Thomas Williams, whom we noticed sometime since. They were married May 24, 1667. They had a son John, it is certain, as he was mentioned in the will of Thomas Williams, which bears date 1692. He probably had other children, but the writer has not investigated the records regarding them. There were several John Smiths contemporary with John, the grandson of Thomas Williams, and it would require considerable time to give their lives and descent.

Daniel Smith and Thomas Smith, sons of Ralph, married and settled in Eastham, where some of their descendants reside.

The Smiths are numerous on the Cape; but it is not known that they are all descendants of Ralph of Eastham. A branch of the family of this name, residing in Harwich, claims to descend from an Englishman of the surname who came to this country about the first of the last century, and settled at the west part of the town.

WILLIAM WALKER.

William Walker, the first of the name who settled on the Cape, came from England in 1635, in the Elizabeth, Captain Starr. He found his way to Eastham after the settlement had commenced, courted and married Sarah Snow, daughter of Nicholas, and settled near his wife's father, in Gov. Prence's neighborhood, on the west side of Town cove. He seems to have been a man of character and of education, but not inclined to give great attention to seeking official honors. He was undoubtedly a mariner in early life. In 1653 he was impressed to do duty as a seaman on board of the barque commanded by Richard Knowles, in anticipation of trouble with the Dutch, to carry the military stores. In 1664, with Mr. John Doane, he was appointed to report the amount of liquor brought within the precincts of Eastham. In 1667, he was

appointed to receive excise. He was a surveyor of highways in Eastham in 1668, '69, '78, '79 and '93. In 1685, the Colony court, in consideration of his "having two natural sons in the training band, and one killed in the wars," and having "some weakness and infirmity of body," relieved him from "training." In 1686, he was appointed to assist in collecting the ministerial tax due Mr. Treat, and in October following, attended the court in Barnstable as a petit juror. He was a grand juror in 1690 and 1694; a petit juror in 1693; and a tithing man in 1695. He was not so large a land owner in Eastham as some of his contemporaries in the settlement. At different periods he received grants of land from the town to meet his wants. He was living in 1699. His wife was Sarah Snow, a daughter of Nicholas. He was married to her, according to the Eastham records, Jan. 25, 1654. His children were: John, born Nov. 24, 1655, who fell in the battle with the Indians at Rehoboth, under Captain Pierce, on March 26, 1676; William, born Oct. 12, 1637, who died in infancy; William, born August 2, 1659; Sarah, born July 30, 1662; Elizabeth, born Sept. 28, 1664; Jabez, born July 8, 1668. From Jabez, the youngest son, descended most of the Walkers upon the Cape. Jeremiah Walker, son of Jabez, married Esther Tomlin or Tumbler in 1724, removed to Harwich and settled, where he died in 1734. From him descended Jonathan Walker, the well-known Abolitionist, a native of Harwich, who died a few years since in Michigan.

WILLIAM MERRICK.

William Merrick was an early resident of Eastham. He came over to this country before 1636; settled first within the limits of Old Duxbury, and had land granted him by the Colonial court near the path to "Green Harbor" in 1637; also land granted him adjoining Mr. William Collier's, in 1630. In 1643, he was a juror for Duxbury, and in 1646 was a surveyor of highways. In 1648, he was on the jury that tried Mrs. Alice Bishop for the murder of her little daughter at Plymouth, whom, with her husband, we shall have occasion to notice in a future article. In 1652, he was admitted a freeman, and not long after moved to Eastham. He was among the settlers there May 2, 1655, as

appears by the ancient records of that township. He settled within the limits of the present town of Orleans, in that part called Skaket. Among his neighbors were Richard Knowles, John Freeman and Robert Wixon. The date of the earliest entry respecting granting of land to him at Eastham is not clear. In 1659, the records show that he had a lot granted him of about four acres adjoining "Robard Wixon," denominated a "house lott" by the highway, with the small piece of meadow within his fence, showing he had improved the lot previous to the grant; also this year a tract of upland at Pocke, near "Robard Wixon's" tract, containing about fifteen acres, was granted him; also meadow at "Little Namskaket," "Rock Harbor," and at "Boat Meadow;" together with another tract of eight acres, as "his great lot," on the south side of the "Cove." In 1662, he was, with "other ancient freemen and old servants," chosen to look out for land for his accommodation, provided Saconet Neck was not purchased, in another locality. In 1666, he was allowed to purchase land. Mr. Merrick was appointed in 1663 lieutenant of the trained band at Eastham, an office which had long been held by Lieut. Joseph Rogers. He was succeeded by Lieut. Rogers in 1664. Mr. Merrick at this date was beyond the age of 60, and was thereby disqualified by law to do military duty. He had been ensign of the trained band for some time. He is mentioned in the records as "Ensign Merrick." He held no other important office while a resident of Eastham. He was a surveyor in 1665, and receiver of excise in 1668.

The date of his marriage does not occur in the Plymouth Colony records or the ancient records of Eastham. He undoubtedly was married in this country some few years after his arrival. His wife at the time of his death was Rebecca, but whether she was the mother of all of his children, the writer is not informed. He died at Eastham the last of the year 1688, or the beginning of 1689, as his will was presented for probate at Barnstable in March, 1689. He was about 86 years old when he made his will, the year previous. Mr Merrick, as far as is known, had ten children: six sons and four daughters.

Of his children, William was the oldest. He was born in

Duxbury in 1643, went to Eastham with his father, and married Abigail Hopkins, daughter of Giles, May 23, 1667. He moved to the north precinct of Harwich, now Brewster, before 1694, and there resided until his death, at the great age of 90 years, in 1732. He was very prominent in the settlement of Harwich. He was one of the seven who established the church at Harwich, now Brewster, in 1700, and one of the petitioners for the incorporation of the town in 1694. He was selectman of the town consecutively from 1702 to 1709. He was a representative to the General court at Boston in 1719. He had, certainly, eight children. Nathaniel, his son, born in 1673, was a very prominent man in Harwich. He survived his father about eleven years, dying "at noon," Nov. 13, 1743. William, the son of Nathaniel, married Elizabeth Osborn in 1734, and was lost at sea, leaving three children, viz: William, Gideon and Elizabeth. The mother, Elizabeth, was daughter of Rev. Samuel Osborn of Eastham, and married William Paine, Esq., for her second husband, and for her third husband married Edmund Doane. She died at Barrington, Nova Scotia, in 1797, where she had been living since 1761.

William Merrick, or Myrick, son of William and Elizabeth (Osborn) Myrick, born Oct. 26, 1734, (and a half-brother of William Paine, the distinguished teacher, and father of John Howard Paine) settled in Orleans. Among his descendants are W. P. Myrick, late clerk of Orleans, and Rev. O. Myrick.

Joseph Merrick, son of William of Eastham, born in 1662, settled in that town. He married Elizabeth Howes of Yarmouth, May 1, 1684. He died June 15, 1737. He was probably twice married. He had several children.

Stephen Merrick, son of William of Eastham, married Mary Bangs in 1670. He, it is thought, was the one of the name who settled in Norwich, Conn. He had a son Stephen, born in Eastham in 1673.

The Merricks of the Cape are descendants of the Eastham settler. They are not numerous, however. They write their name Myrick.

RICHARD BISHOP.

Richard Bishop was an early resident of Eastham. He came to Plymouth some time prior to 1654, but how long he resided in the latter place, records do not clearly show. He was there, however, in 1638, in the employ of Love Brewster, son of Elder William Brewster of the Mayflower band of Pilgrims. Some time previous to the year 1648, he was married to a widow whose name was Alice, a very singular woman, it is evident. On the 22nd of July, 1648, she took her 14-year-old daughter, Martha Clarke, into the chamber of her house, cut her throat, and left her dead upon the floor, in an almost nude state, admitting she did the cruel deed to some of the Grand Inquest, when an inquiry was being made to learn the particulars concerning her death. Her trial for murder was commenced Oct. 8, 1648, at Plymouth, and she was adjudged guilty and sentenced to be hanged. She was accordingly hanged. Two of the jurors, Richard and William Merrick, were from Eastham. After this affair, which gave him some notoriety, he continued his residence in Plymouth, and the year following, in March, he was up before the court for taking a spade from Andrew King, one of his townsmen, and was fined. He had tracts of land allowed him in 1654 at Nausett or Eastham, by the proprietors, and while there gave his attention to agriculture as a principal means of support. His propensity to purloin seems not to have left him after his removal to Eastham and associating with the good settlers there. He was allured by the nice fleece Goodman George Crisp had taken from the sheep, in 1670, and entered his premises and helped himself. He was arraigned and ordered to settle, which he did, paying the sum of thirty shillings. He, soon after this affair, left the township with his family. His place was sold in 1673, by his order, to Thomas Cole. The records point to his place of residence in Eastham, in what is now East Orleans, in the vicinity of Tonset. The Coles, Twinings and Higginses were his neighbors. Upon his farm at "Pocha," was a hole in the earth, called for many years after his removal, "Bishop's Butter Hole." The records give Bishop no children. It is believed, however, he had several. The Damaris Bishop who married William Sutton in 1666, is thought was his daughter.

WILLIAM SUTTON.

Of William Sutton, but little appears. He was in Barnstable in 1666, and was up before the court for entering the meeting-house, taking away the Bible, and denying having taken it, and was fined for both offences. What led him to take away the Bible from Mr. Walley's pulpit is not stated by the records. Sutton was not long a resident of Eastham. He had, born in Eastham: William, May 13, 1668; Thomas, Nov. 11, 1669; Marah, Oct. 4, 1671. He appears not to have been either a land owner or townsman of Eastham.

WILLIAM TWINNING.

William Twinning, the ancestor of the Cape family of the name, was in Yarmouth in 1643, and went forth a soldier in 1645 against the Indians. The precise date of his removal to Eastham with his family, the Eastham records do not show, but he was there located before 1651, as that year he was constable of the place. His place of residence, it is understood, was on "Poche Neck," now called East Orleans, but the particular spot is not known to the writer. He was a considerable land owner, though not of the class called "Town-purchasers." His days in Eastham were few. He passed away April 15, 1659. His wife, Anne, survived him, and died Feb. 27, 1680. His children are not all known. Some of them, doubtless, crossed the ocean with him. Isabel married Francis Baker of Yarmouth, the ancestor of the Baker family, in 1641; Elizabeth married John Rogers of Eastham in 1669; and William married Elizabeth, daughter of Stephen Deane, whose widow married Josiah Cooke of Eastham.

William Twinning, the son, who married Elizabeth Deane, came with his father's family to Eastham, and settled near his father, their land adjoining. He was a considerable land owner. He had a three-acre lot, called a house lot, granted him in 1659, adjoining his father's land; a ten-acre lot granted at Poche; meadow at Great Namskaket, Billingsgate and Boat Meadow in 1659. He had twenty acres of land at Poche granted in 1664, which was formerly possessed by Josiah Cooke and Francis Baker; and also meadow granted him the same year, which was located

at Namskaket. In 1668, he again was put into legal possession of some swamp land near his garden, which adjoined Richard Bishop's land. He was a quiet and peaceable man, and occupied but a few official positions in the town. He was a deacon of the church in Eastham as early as 1677. The date of his death does not appear. He had, it is certain, two sons, Stephen and William. His daughter Joanna, born May 30, 1657, married Thomas Bills, March 2, 1676, who had, it is reported, in 1673 married her sister Anne, and who died Sept. 1, 1675. He also had a daughter Susannah, born Feb. 25, 1654, who probably died young. He doubtless had other children.

William Twinning, of the third generation, and grandson of the settler, married Ruth Cole, March 20, 1688-89, settled in the eastern part of Orleans. He had seven children. His sons were William and Barnabas. William Twinning, the son, born in 1704, married Apphia —, settled near his father's place, and died about 1769, leaving wife Apphia, and sons Thomas and Elijah. Thomas removed to Sandesfield, Mass., in 1787, with his family. Elijah, brother of Thomas, married Lois Rogers, and removed from town.

The son William, of the fifth generation, brother of Thomas and Elijah, born March 25, 1739, died March 26, 1759, some ten years before his father's death. The mother Apphia, was a member of the Orleans church, and was living in 1773. As her death was not recorded by Mr. Bascom in his register, it is supposed she died abroad with one of her sons. It is believed the name is extinct on the Cape.

GEORGE CRISP.

George Crisp was in Eastham in 1650, acting in the capacity of a constable, but the precise year of his settlement is not known. Though a townsman, he was not of the class called Town-purchasers, and had no legal right to the common land. What his vocation was, is now unknown. His townsmen, who had the disposal of the common land, were very liberal in their allowance to him. He was, it is supposed, a resident in that part of Eastham called by the Indians Poche, and now denominated East Orleans.

In 1658, in that vicinity, near his house, he had a swamp and upland allowed him, near John Young's. Under date of April 27, 1659, he was allowed 17 acres of land near William Twinning, Jr.'s, in Poche, and also three acres of meadow on the south side of Boat Meadow, or as the Indians called it, Onoscotist. He was the fortunate possessor of a horse, and he is set down as having one as early as May 30, 1660. In 1662, he appears to have brought upon himself some trouble, by receiving for sale liquor illegally, which he claimed was received without knowledge of doing an unlawful act. He was favorably considered by the court. The report of some little disorder at his house in consequence of the sale, was investigated. Mr. Crisp was a grand juror in 1672 and 1678. He died at Eastham, July 28, 1682.

Mr. Crisp was twice married. His first wife, Mary, by whom he had no children, died Feb. 20, 1676. His second wife, Hepsibah, was daughter of Daniel Cole, to whom he was married May 24, 1677. By her he had Mary, born Dec. 9, 1678, and Mercy, born Oct. 15, 1681.

Mr. Crisp attempted to adopt a son of Richard Berry of Yarmouth, in 1660, a lad of some six years of age called Samuel. He became "stubborn and rebellious and went away against" Mr. Crisp's protest "before his lawful time." In consequence Mr. Crisp ordered the executor to pay him the small sum of "twelve pence and no more." Mr. Crisp, it will be seen, could not tolerate stubbornness and rebellion.

Mr. Crisp's widow Hepsibah married Deacon Daniel Doane, a neighbor many years her senior, and had children. Her daughter, Mary Crisp, married Samuel Gold of Topsfield, Dec. 1, 1700. Mercy Crisp married, as is understood, George Williamson. From her descended the late Judge William D. Williamson of Maine. George Williamson settled in Eastham. He was there in 1722. It is said he had seven children, two sons and five daughters. George and Caleb were the sons. George was murdered by a highwayman, and Caleb married and settled in Middleboro. The name of Crisp is extinct in Eastham, also in Barnstable county.

RICHARD RICH.

Richard Rich, the ancestor of the Rich family of the Cape, came to Eastham from Dover, New Hampshire. He was a mariner, say the records, and admitted a townsman Aug. 23, 1681, it being the first notice of him upon the record of Eastham. He appears to have been a man of standing, and entitled to the prefix of "Mister." The particular spot he selected for his house lot, the writer is not informed. He evidently was married before his settlement here. His wife was Sarah Roberts, it is said by his descendants. But very little is said of him in the records. He had the description of his cattle marks entered April 12, 1686. He is mentioned as buying rights to undivided land known as "Smith's Purchase." The right of William Mayo he purchased June 3, 1686, and the right of Stephen Atwood he purchased June 29 of the same year. The tract of land known as "Smith's Purchase," and sometimes called the "Ten Pound Purchase," estimated to contain 1,000 acres, was bought of John Sipson, an Indian of Potonumecot, by Samuel Smith in behalf of the town proprietors in 1684. It extended northerly nearly across the present town of Orleans, from an east and west line between Kescayogansett and Potonumecot rivers.

Mr. Rich died early in the autumn of 1692, evidently not a very aged man. An inventory of his effects was taken by John Doane, Isaac Pepper and Richard Rich, Oct. 5, 1692. Letters to administer upon the estate were granted to Isaac Pepper and Richard Rich, the eldest son, Oct. 19, the same year. A settlement was effected April 8, 1697.

The children mentioned in the settlement as surviving are Richard, the eldest son, John, Sarah, Thomas, Samuel and Lydia. At this date none of the daughters had been married. Richard Rich, the son, born in 1674, went to Truro and settled. He died May 3, 1743, in the 69th year of his age. His wife Anna died May 11, 1754, aged 74. They had nine children.

John Rich, the younger brother, and son of Mr. Richard Rich, married Mary Treat, daughter of Rev. Samuel Treat, Dec. 10, 1700. She died Jan. 4, 1722-23. He, the same year, married Mrs. Hope Sears, widow of Richard Sears of Chatham. He settled in

that part of Eastham now Wellfleet, where he died of the small pox in 1747, which was prevalent there that year. Mr. Rich was deacon of the church and a prominent man. His daughter Hope, by second wife, born May 7, 1725, was the wife of Col. Elisha Doane, a well-known citizen of Wellfleet, who amassed wealth in the whale fishery, and was thought to have been the richest man of his time in Massachusetts. Deacon Rich had 8 children by his wife Mary. His son John, born in 1706, married Thankful Sears, daughter of Richard and Hope Sears, in 1727.

Thomas Rich, the third son of Mr. Richard Rich, married Mercy, daughter of Samuel Knowles, Esq., of Eastham, July 23, 1702, and settled in that part of the town now Orleans, near the late John Doane's house. He had nine children. His sons were Thomas, James, Joseph, David, John and Samuel. He died the middle of the last century. He had land granted by the town, in 1702, on the south side of the way, near the cedar swamp and pond.

Sarah Rich, daughter of Mr. Richard Rich, married, Feb. 25, 1702-3, Isaac Baker of Eastham, and settled at Billingsgate, now Wellfleet. They had six children, viz: Simeon, Samuel, Isaac, Joseph, Richard and Sarah.

JOHN YOUNG.

John Young came to Eastham before 1659. He was a resident of Plymouth in 1643, and his name appears that year among those liable to do military duty. So far as can be now ascertained, his place of residence was in what was called by the Indians, Pochet or Poche, and now called East Orleans. He was a planter, and had but very little to do with town affairs while a resident of Old Eastham. He was not of that class called town purchasers. The old records of Eastham show he was a considerable land holder, and that some of his land was obtained by purchase. He had ten acres at Poche, as early as 1659, adjoining George Crisp's land, the purchase of which was confirmed by the town. His purchase of five acres between "Young's Cove and the highway yt goeth at the end of Richard Sparrow's ground," this year was confirmed also, by the town. In 1676, he bought of Thomas Paine, for £9, fifteen acres of upland on the westerly side of "Young's Cove."

According to the records, he died Jan. 25, 1690, and his wife Abigail, April 7, 1692. No stones with inscriptions mark their resting places. "Goodman" Young died testate, and his will is on record at Barnstable. He had eleven children, two of whom died in infancy. His children that survived were John, born 1649, at Plymouth; Joseph, born in 1654; Nathaniel, born in 1656; Mary, in 1658; Abigail, in 1660; David, in 1662; Lydia, in 1664; Robert, in 1667; Henry, in 1672. These all survived their parents.

John, the eldest, died in 1769, leaving nine children. His wife was daughter of Daniel Cole, and at the decease of her husband, John Young, she married Jonathan Bangs of Harwich.

Joseph Young, son of John, married Sarah Davis of Barnstable, Oct. 25, 1679, and had four children. Nathaniel Young, his brother, married Mercy Davis of Barnstable.

David Young, born in 1662, married Ann Doane of Eastham, Jan. 20, 1687, and had eleven children. His son, John Young, married Widow Dinah Baker, daughter of Joseph Harding, and settled in the western part of Chatham on the old road to Harwich. He died April 20, 1788, aged 93. His wife Dinah died Jan. 3, 1779, aged 78. They lie interred in the old burying ground at Chatham. He had several children. His son, Prince Young, removed to Harwich and settled. He was the first of the name who settled within the limits of the present town of Harwich. There appears to be no full record of the children of John Young, son of David.

THOMAS PAINE.

Eastham had been settled but a very few years when Thomas Paine became a resident. He was born in England, but the particular place is not known with certainty. Credible traditionary accounts that came down several branches of the family, and committed to writing before and soon after the commencement of the present century, have it that he came over when a lad of about ten years of age, with his father, Thomas, and married Mary Snow and settled in Eastham. But as to the father, Thomas, beyond that he settled in Plymouth Colony, tradition is silent. It has been supposed the father was the Thomas Paine who settled in Yarmouth, and the first representative to the Colony court in

1639, but the evidence to establish the fact is yet wanting. It has also been supposed that the lad, the subject of this article, was the Yarmouth Thomas, and that he removed to Eastham from that town. Of this there is no evidence. If he were the man he must have reached a great age at his death in 1706. That Thomas Paine, the lad, did marry Mary Snow and settle in Eastham, as tradition has it and accepted by his descendants, the records clearly show.

His name first appears upon the records as a constable of Eastham in 1653. He was in that town in 1655, and is mentioned as one of the nineteen men then townsmen. He was propounded at the Colony court at Plymouth in 1658, and June 1, that year, was admitted as freeman. In 1662 he was appointed, with Nicholas Snow, Jonathan Sparrow and Giles Hopkins, to view and lay out the meadow between Namskaket and Silver Springs, then within the limits of Eastham, to those of the inhabitants that were entitled to the same; and the same year, with Giles Hopkins, was selected a surveyor of highways. In 1664, for the first time, he was chosen deputy to the Plymouth Colony court, and a jurymen. In 1667, with eleven others, he was called to investigate the cause of deaths of Robert Chappell, James Nichols and James Pidell, of Captain John Allen's company, who were put ashore at Cape Cod. The same year he was allowed by the Colonial court to select a tract of land for his use, and in June, 1669, he was allowed, with Experience Michell, Henry Sampson and Thomas Little, to purchase land at Namskaket, now Middleboro. With these persons, July 20, the same year, he purchased of Tuscaquin, the Black Sachem, and his son William, for £10 sterling, their right to the grant. This land adjoined John Alden's tract, at the famous Assawamsett pond. In 1670, with Jonathan Sparrow, he was appointed an inspector of the ordinaries in town, to see that there was no excessive drinking; and the same year, one of the Grand Inquest.

In 1670, Mr. Paine became interested in purchasing land in what is now Truro, of the proprietors. His first purchase was made of Gov. Prence of Plymouth, May 2, 1670, of his "half share" lying between "Bound Brook" and "Eastern Harbor," or "Lovell's Creek," paying the sum of £20. This tract some twenty years after, he sold to his eldest son, Thomas, for the same sum,

together with the tract he had bought of Jabez Howland in 1673, in the same vicinity for the same amount. In 1670, he was appointed to the office of "bayle by land & water," an officer created to "demand and receive for the Colony's use" the fines of those who disregarded the laws regulating the fishing at the head of the Cape, now Provincetown, and the territory adjacent, now Truro. This office he held many years, giving entire satisfaction. While acting as bailee, he resided during the fishing season in that region. In 1671, he represented Eastham in the Colony court at Plymouth; also in 1672, '73, '76, '78, '80, '81 and '90. He was selectman of Eastham in 1671 and several years afterwards. In 1676, he was one of the committee to collect a debt of Sandwich and to superintend the building of the meetinghouse in Eastham. This meetinghouse was the second one built there and stood near the ancient burying ground. The first one was thatched roof and stood nearby, and had been erected many years. It was now considered unsuitable for the congregation of their minister, Mr. Samuel Treat, who was now regularly settled. Mr. Paine was clerk and treasurer of Eastham, it is understood; but how many years in service is not clear from the record. Mr. Pratt says he was treasurer of the town for nineteen years, and Mr. Freeman says twenty-four years. The sources from which they derive the information the writer cannot find. The early records of the town, covering the years of his active public life, certainly give us but little as to the clerks and treasurers of the town. Mr. Paine was many years a "rate maker" or assessor. In 1685, with Rev. Samuel Treat, Captain Jonathan Sparrow, John Mayo, Sen., and Jabez Snow, he was chosen by the town "to hear and determine the difference between those called the purchasers and the town," respecting land within the limits of Eastham.

In 1667, together with Thomas Huckens of Barnstable, Edward Gray of Plymouth, and Mr. Constant Southworth, the Colonial treasurer, he hired the "fishing privileges and profits" at the head of the Cape for the period of seven years, for which was given £30 a year. By trade he seems to have been a cooper and millwright. He built mills in various parts of the county. In 1683, he conceived the importance of a mill in the southern part of the

town, at a place called by the Indians Kescayogansett, and laid his plan before the town of erecting a mill on the river leading out of the cove. The town entered into an agreement with him, and two mills were built by him; in consideration of which, he had a large tract of land granted him, extending northerly from Kescayogansett cove and river, containing upwards of twenty-six acres, early in the year 1684, together with meadow on Sampson's Island. Whether both of the mills he built were tide mills, we are unable to learn. One was, it is certain, and the millstones from near site many years since, are pointed out. The land given by the town to Mr. Paine for his building the mills, was the parcel claimed by Jefferie and Sampson, Indians, and which the town laid out for them in June, 1682, and afterwards bought of them for the town's use. The tract, upon Mr. Paine's death, passed into the hands of his son, Nicholas, who occupied it until his death. It passed out of the possession of Mr. Paine's heirs about the year 1743. Sometime previous to 1695 he removed to Boston, where the records say he purchased of Thomas Stableford of Philadelphia, March 14, 1694, a homestead at the South end, paying the sum of £130. Here he was residing in 1697. Selling out this year to Eleazar Darby, he returned to Eastham, to his house at Kescayogansett, where he spent, it is supposed, the remainder of his life, passing away Aug. 16, 1706. He appears to have been a man of more than ordinary education. He was an excellent penman. Specimens of his chirography, when "well in years," are yet preserved. His wife Mary, daughter of Nicholas Snow and granddaughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins, one of the Pilgrims who came over in the Mayflower in 1620, to whom he was married in 1650, was a woman of whom much has been said in her praise. She was "a faithful wife," "a careful mother," "a good quiet neighbor," "a diligent reader of God's hold word," and "a lover of, and attendant at God's house of worship." Her son, Deacon John Paine, thus gives in his diary an account of her last hours and death: "On the 28th day of April, 1704, my honored mother, Mary Paine, departed this life, being suddenly taken and struck with death, she having reasonable health all day, was taken ill about sunset, so she never after spoke reasonable; but decaying gradually, gave up the ghost about the dawning of the day."

The will of Thomas Paine bears date May 12, 1705. It was presented for probate Oct. 2, 1706. He mentions seven sons: Samuel, Thomas, Elisha, John, Nicholas, James and Joseph; two daughters: Dorcas, wife of Benjamin Vickery of Hull, and Mary, wife of Israel Cole. To Nicholas Paine, his fifth son, he gave all his "lands, mills, house and house at Keaskokagansett, in the town of Eastham," with all his "right title to all town's privileges," etc. He appointed his two eldest sons, Samuel and Thomas, executors. His house at Keaskokagansett stood between the cove and Fresh pond, near where the house of James Percival now stands. His son Nicholas occupied it until his death, when it passed into possession of his daughter Patience, and her husband, William Norcot; and upon their removal to Connecticut after 1740, it passed into the hands of Mr. Samuel Knowles, and became the residence of Mr. Enos Knowles.

The first place of Mr. Paine's residence in Eastham, it is understood, was within the limits of the present town of Eastham, near the Prence place, and not far distant from the residence of his father-in-law, Nicholas Snow. It is supposed he conveyed much of his real estate to his sons by deeds, before he made his will; but to what extent cannot now be ascertained, as all the books of records of deeds of the county were destroyed by fire in 1827. A deed of gift of meadow to his son Thomas, in his own handwriting is yet extant, bearing date 1684, and witnessed by his two sons, Nicholas and James.

Samuel Paine, the eldest son, married Patience Freeman, daughter of Major John Freeman of Eastham and granddaughter of Gov. Prence, Jan. 31, 1687. He settled within the limits of the present town of Eastham, near the house of the late Deacon Joshua Paine. He was much employed in public affairs. He was six years selectman of Eastham, and for some time lieutenant of the military company. He was cut down by a fever, Oct. 13, 1712. He left a wife and nine children. Only two of his sons left descendants, and they are widely scattered. Hon. Samuel James Bridge, who recently caused to be placed on the college ground at Cambridge, Mass., the statue of John Harvard, the founder of the college, is one of the descendants.

Thomas Paine, the second son, born in 1657, was a man of prominence. He succeeded Mark Snow, as clerk of Eastham, in 1695, and was yearly elected until 1701, when he was succeeded by his younger brother, John. He was an excellent clerk. He was a selectman of Eastham seven years. He became a landholder at Pamet, now Truro, and removed there and settled on the north side of Little Pamet river, where the house spot is yet to be seen. He was clerk of the proprietors many years. He was selectman of Truro seven years, representative five years, and town clerk several years. He was justice of the peace, deacon of the church, captain of the military company, and a special justice of the court of common pleas, to which office he was appointed July 5, 1713. He died June 23, 1721, in the 65th year of his age. He was twice married, and father of fourteen children. His descendants are widely scattered, numerous and highly respected. From his daughter Hannah descended the late Hon. Horace Binney of Philadelphia.

Elisha Paine, the third son, married Hannah Doane, daughter of John Doane of Eastham, Jan. 5, 1685. In 1689, he was a resident of Barnstable. He removed back to Eastham, and resided in "Little Skaket Neck" until 1703, when he bought a tract of 500 acres of wild land in that part of Plainfield now Canterbury, Conn., and removed thither. Here he took an active part in public affairs. He was one of the founders of the first church in that town in 1711. He died Feb. 7, 1736. His wife died very aged, Dec. 19, 1758. He was the father of ten children. His sons, Elisha, Solomon and John, were ministers. The two former were leaders of the Newlights in Connecticut, and distinguished preachers of that denomination. Among his descendants is the author of "Cape Cod Folks."

Deacon John Paine, the fourth son, settled in that part of Eastham, now Orleans. He was a prominent man in the town. He succeeded his brother Thomas as clerk in 1701, and held the office until ill health compelled him to decline an election in 1730. He was several years selectman and seven years representative to the General court. He was treasurer of the town for more than thirty years, being first elected in 1696. He was twice married,

and father of thirteen children. His first wife, Benner, was daughter of Major John Freeman. He died in 1731. He was grandfather of John Howard Paine, author of "Home, Sweet Home." His descendants are widely scattered. He was of a literary turn of mind, and some of his spare moments were devoted to literary pursuits. A portion of a diary kept by him in which are entries as early as 1695 and 1717, is yet extant.

Nicholas Paine, the fifth son, married Hannah Higgins, daughter of Jonathan, and settled at Keaskakogansett. He was a miller and farmer, and had not much to do with public affairs. He died in the autumn of 1733. He was the father of seven children. His only son, Philip, died unmarried, April 10, 1725, aged 20 years and 5 months. Hannah, his mother, died Jan. 24, 1731-2. He had his father's place and a large share of his property.

James Paine, the sixth son, born July 6, 1665, married Bethiah, daughter of Col. John Thacher of Yarmouth, April 9, 1691. He went to Barnstable to reside in 1689. He was a school teacher, miller, cooper and clerk. He was in Captain John Gorham's company at the expedition against Canada in 1691, as "clerk." For his services, his heirs in 1736 received a grant of land in Maine. He was the first clerk of the East precinct or parish in Barnstable. He died at Barnstable, Nov. 12, 1718, and lies buried in the old cemetery, where a headstone marks the spot; he also was a man of a literary turn of mind. He was a member of the Barnstable church. He had seven children. Thomas, his only son, was educated at Harvard college, graduating in 1711. He married Eunice Treat, and had Robert Treat Paine, the distinguished lawyer, who signed the Declaration of Independence and was the first attorney general of Massachusetts under the Constitution. Mr. James Paine resided, at his death, in the house now occupied by Mr. Gray in Barnstable. It was built for Mr. Paine in 1717. The frame was cut in Scituate. Dr. Samuel Savage bought it in, or about, 1776, of Mr. Paine's heirs.

Joseph Paine, the seventh and youngest son, married Patience Sparrow, daughter of Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham, May 27, 1691. He removed from Eastham to Harwich, now Brewster, before 1700. He was one of the founders of the Brewster church,

Oct. 17, 1700. He was selectman of the town in 1701, and by successive elections until 1711. He was chosen town clerk in 1706, and annually chosen until his death, Oct. 1, 1712. He appears to have enjoyed athletic feats in his youthful days. His nephew in his journal says: "He was very stout, and flung Col. Thacher, the Champion of Bay State, at Commencement." He was an exemplary member of the church. His wife was a granddaughter of Gov. Prence. She married for her second husband, John Jenkins of Barnstable in 1715; she died Oct. 28, 1745. Joseph Paine was the father of eleven children. Prof. John K. Paine of Harvard college is a descendant. Most of his descendants are in Maine.

JOSEPH COLLINS.

Joseph Collins was the first of the name in Eastham. Of his ancestry the writer knows nothing of certainty. Some writers have it that he was from Lynn and son of Henry Collins, a starch maker of that place, who came from Ireland, but fail to give authority for their statements. He married Ruth, (not Duty Knowles, as is given by some writers) daughter of Richard Knowles, March 20, 1672. He died at Eastham about 1724. He appears to have been married twice. He mentions Sarah as his wife, in his will in 1723. He was a member of the North church in Eastham, and ordered that his "dragon table-cloth be delivered to the deacons for the use of the church." He had nine children, viz: Sarah, John, Lydia, Joseph, Hannah, Jonathan, Jane, Benjamin and James.

John Collins, his eldest son, born in Eastham Dec. 18, 1674, married Hannah Doane, daughter of John Doane, Jr., Feb. 22, 1701-2, and settled in what is now Wellfleet, having had land laid out to him there in 1698. He removed to Chatham, where he resided till his death, May 24, 1765, in the 92nd year of his age. His grave is marked in the old cemetery at Chatham by a half-sunken slate stone with inscription. He was a man of importance in Chatham. Most of his children were doubtless born in Eastham. They were Solomon, Samuel, Martha, who married Moses Godfrey, John, Hannah, Joseph, David, Jane and Anna. Hannah, wife of

John Collins, died June 6, 1765, aged 85. From John Collins descended Hon. Enos Collins, a distinguished merchant, who died in Liverpool, Nova Scotia, 1871, aged 97 years, very wealthy. His wife was daughter of the late Sir Brenton Haliburton, chief justice of Nova Scotia.

Joseph Collins, fourth child and second son of Joseph Collins, married Rebecca Sparrow, March 25, 1703. He had children. His eldest child, Lois, was born in 1704.

Jonathan Collins, born Aug. 20, 1682, and third son, married Elizabeth Vickery, probably daughter of Rev. Jonathan Vickery, some time preacher at Chatham. He settled in Truro.

Benjamin Collins, born Feb. 1, 1687, married and settled in Truro, where he died Dec. 23, 1756. He had nine children recorded.

Joseph Collins, Sen., the progenitor of the Cape family, had land granted him by the town. In 1681, he had twelve acres laid out near "Spactacle Pond." He is not much mentioned in the records of Eastham as taking active part in town affairs. He was several times juror, and in 1700 constable of the town.

THOMAS BILLS.

Thomas Bills was an early resident of Eastham. He married Anne Twinning, Oct. 3, 1672, for his first wife. She died at Eastham Sept. 1, 1675. For his second wife he married Joanna Twinning, probably her sister, May 2, 1676. By both wives he had: Anna, Elizabeth, Nathaniel, Mary, Mehitabel, Thomas, Gershon, Joanna, all born in Eastham. He had land granted him at various times in Eastham. He had, with several others in 1681, the "dry swamp" granted him, provided it was cleared within six years. The "dry swamp," it is understood, is the swamp northeast of the meetinghouse in Orleans, now mostly covered with cranberry vines. It is not known that he and his partners attempted to clear off the brush. He removed to the west side of Bass river, within the present town of Yarmouth, sometime about 1690, near the house of his brother-in-law, Francis Baker, who had also resided in Eastham. He was alive in 1693, and witnessed the will of Francis Baker. The time of his death is unknown, no

male descendants in the country bearing the surname. His place of residence in Eastham was in that part now East Orleans. His eldest daughter, Anna, born in 1673, married David O. Kelley of Yarmouth, March 10, 1692.

HENRY ATKINS.

Henry Atkins came from Plymouth to Eastham sometime before 1655. He was a quiet man, and had but little to do with town affairs. He doubtless was engaged in tilling the soil. He bought much of his real estate in Eastham of Mr. John Mayo, who for awhile was a resident of Eastham and engaged in ministerial work. The town confirmed his purchase of a lot of 5 acres lying near John Mayo, Jr., which he had purchased of Mr. Mayo April 21, 1659; also at the same date confirmed his purchase of 4 acres of cedar swamp of Mr. Mayo, and a lot of meadow at the harbor's mouth toward Rock harbor. His other purchases, a piece of meadow at Great Meadow, and Boat Meadow, were confirmed April 25th, the same year. He was twice married. His first wife, it is said, was Elizabeth Wells, who died at Eastham in 1662. His second wife was Bethiah Linnell, to whom he was married, say the Eastham records, March 25, 1664. By his wife Elizabeth he had Mary, born at Plymouth March 13, 1647, who died young. By his wife Bethia he had Isaac, born in Eastham June 15, 1657; Desire, born May 7, 1665; John, born Dec. 15, 1666, who died in infancy; Nathaniel, born Dec. 25, 1667; Joseph, May 4, 1669; Thomas, June 19, 1671; John, Aug. 1, 1674; Mary, Nov. 24, 1676; Samuel, June 25, 1679. Henry Atkins died in 1700. His widow married Stephen Hopkins, and with him removed to Harwich, that part now Brewster, where she died March 25, 1726.

Mr. Atkins made his will. It was witnessed by Samuel Treat and Jonathan Sparrow. It was proved Oct. 13, 1700. His estate was valued at £181 11s. The inventory was presented in August, 1700. He desired to be buried in "ye burying at Eastham." He remembered his children in his will, but did not give each a great sum. Wife Bethia was named as executrix of his will.

Mr. Atkins's eldest son, Samuel, fell in the war with the Indi-

ans, June 4, 1675, and he named his youngest son Samuel, who was born four years after the death of the eldest son.

Isaac Atkins settled in Harwich, where he died in 1729, leaving a son, Samuel. Joseph Atkins, his brother, married and settled in Eastham, where he had eight children. Nathaniel Atkins married and settled in Truro, where he had six children. Thomas Atkins removed to Chatham before 1700, where he died, leaving children. John Atkins married at Edgartown Elizabeth Newcomb, and settled in Chatham, where he died in 1733, leaving no issue. Samuel Atkins married Emblem Newcomb of Edgartown, and settled in Chatham, leaving issue.

No. 33.

LIBRARY of
C a p e C o d
 HISTORY & GENEALOGY

FOUNDERS' DAY EDITION
 AUGUST 26, 1916.

of the
EARLY SETTLERS OF EASTHAM
 Containing Sketches of all Early Settlers of Eastham
 By Josiah Paine, Esq., of Harwich

IN TWO NUMBERS: BOOK 1

Book 1: Thomas Prentice, Nicholas Snow, John Doane, Edward Bangs, Richard Higgins, John Smalley, Samuel Hicks, John Jenkins, Robert Wixon, Josiah Cooke, Joseph Rogers, John Freeman, John Mayo, Thomas Williams, Thomas Roberts; 32p.
 Book 2: Richard Knowles, Richard Sparrow, Job Cole, Daniel Cole, Giles Hopkins, Ralph Smith, William Walker, William Merrick, Richard Bishop, William Sutton, William Twinning, George Crisp, Richard Rich, John Young, Thomas Paine, Joseph Collins, Thomas Bills, Henry Atkins; 31 pages.



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:

C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
 THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
 1916.

Joseph H. Burton Ed.
Aug. 7, 1939
cent

X 4431.210

No. 33

EARLY SETTLERS OF EASTHAM.

By Josiah Paine of Harwich.

EASTHAM.

Eastham was the fourth town settled on the Cape. The first settlers were principally from Plymouth, and were persons of character. Pratt, in his history of the town, and those who have written subsequently about its history, state that the settlement began in April, 1644. The authority for the statement is not given. Dr. James Freeman's historical account, in the eighth volume of the collections of the Massachusetts Historical Society, from which Mr. Pratt obtained much of his information for his work, and the Old Colony Records as printed, do not sustain the statement. The evidence is conclusive that at the period Pratt mentions, no white person had attempted a settlement within what was afterwards the township of Nausett or Eastham. From the best authorities, it appears, the first purchase of the Indians was made in June, 1644, by a committee of the Plymouth church, consisting of "Mr William Bradford, Mr. Thomas Prence and divers others," and confirmed unto the Church of New Plymouth or "those that go to dwell at Nausett," March 3, 1644-5.

It was the intention of the Plymouth church when they sent out the committee to make a thorough survey of the territory at Nausett, if found sufficiently large for their accommodation, to remove in a body. But as the committee found the place not large enough to accommodate the whole church, "much less to afford room for future increase," it was judged not proper to remove in a body. Liberty was given, however, to such members as were desirous of going to attempt a settlement, provided they agreed to pay for the purchase which had been made in the name of the church.

The territory purchased of the Indians, for which they paid "moose-skins, Indian boats, wampam, little knives," etc., embraced the greater part of Orleans and the towns of Eastham and Well-

fleet. The deed from the Indians, confirmatory of the purchase, was given Nov. 9th, 1666.

How long after the grant, March 3rd, 1644-5, that Gov. Prence, John Doane, Nicholas Snow, Joshiah Cook, Richard Higgins, John ✓ Smalley and Edward Bangs, the pioneers, went thither to locate, it is not certain, but doubtless not long, as by the Court records of Plymouth Colony, under the date of June 2nd, 1646, we find "Nausett is granted to be a township, and to have all the privileges of a township as other towns within the government have," and Samuel Hicks, constable of the place, the only person reported as an officer of the town.

Nausett is an Indian name and was applied to some particular locality in the present town of Eastham by the aborigines. Our forefathers gave the name to the whole purchase, and so it was called until 1651, when for some unassigned cause, the court at Plymouth promulgated an order that henceforth Nausett should be known as Eastham. That order has never been revoked, though the ancient township has been shorn of territory both on the north and south. The good old Indian name, however, has never been allowed to be forgotten, nor will it be, so long as the beach and harbor, bearing the name, remain. Long before the Pilgrims set feet upon its soil, Nausett was known, and the Indians inhabiting the regions about the famous place had become acquainted with the white man and had suffered from his hands. It is doubtless true that the "First Encounter" the Pilgrims had in 1620, near the Great pond in the present town of Eastham, was on the part of the Indians to gratify feelings of revenge which had been engendered by the perfidy of Hunt, in the employ of Captain John Smith, by entrapping the natives and carrying them off to Spain and selling them. Aspinet was the first sachem of the Nausett tribe known to the English. He did not survive long after the Pilgrims had settled at Plymouth. He joined the conspiracy in 1623 to extirpate the English, but the death of the principal conspirators at the hands of Captain Standish so terrified him that he lived concealed in unhealthy places and died from disease there contracted.

THE SETTLERS.

THOMAS PRENCE.

Thomas Prence was the most distinguished of the settlers of Eastham, though not the best educated. At the time of his removal in 1645, he was holding the position of an assistant to Gov. Bradford, and had twice been chosen governor of the infant colony—first election in 1634, and second election in 1638. He was a native of Lechlade, a parish in Gloucestershire, England, it is understood, and born about the year 1600. He came to Plymouth in the ship *Fortune*, in November, 1621. At the time of his removal he was residing in Duxbury. His farm at Eastham contained many acres. It was situated northwest of Town cove, in that part now included within the present town of Eastham. His house stood on the east side of the county road, near where Mr. E. Doane's house now stands. It is said his farm comprised the "richest land" in the place. The famous old pear tree planted by him while a resident, and which was blown down in 1849, stood but a few rods westward from the site of his house. He was a large land-owner. He owned land in what became afterwards Harwich and Truro, besides tracts at Tonset and other localities in the Colony. He disposed of most of his landed estate before his death. His tracts at Sauquatucket, now Brewster, which came to him by grant, on the account of having been a "Purchaser or Old-Comer," he sold to his son-in-law, Major John Freeman, in 1672. His "half share" at Paumet, both "purchased and unpurchased," lying between "Bound Brook," at Wellfleet, and "Eastern Harbor or Lovell's Creek," he sold to Mr. Thomas Paine in 1670.

Mr. Pratt, in his *History of Eastham*, says the homestead of Gov. Prence was given by will to his son-in-law, Samuel Freeman, but the statement is not supported by documentary evidence. Records show that Gov. Prence did sell to his "beloved son-in-law, Mr. Samuel Freeman, Jan. 12, 1671, for thirty pounds" his "house lot situated and being in the town of Eastham" and "containing eighteen acres of upland, be it more or less," bounded "at the northeasterly end" by a creek, together with other upland and meadows in other parts of the town. Records also show that Gov. Prence provided a place of abode for his son-in-law, Samuel

Freeman and Mercy his wife, soon after their marriage, and that in December, 1662, it was conveyed to them. They were then residing upon it. It was the place the governor purchased of Mr. Josiah Cook, a "gentleman" of Eastham. The position of this house lot the writer cannot give, but undoubtedly it was near Gov. Prence's place.

Gov. Prence continued in the office of an assistant by successive elections till 1657, when he was unanimously elected to the office of governor, as successor to Gov. Bradford, who died that year. As the law required the governor to reside at the seat of government, a dispensation was obtained for him, and he was allowed to remain at Eastham, as he desired. Mrs. Bradford was engaged to entertain him and his assistants while at Court; an attendant was appointed to attend him in his journey to and from Plymouth, and Mr. Allyn of Barnstable was engaged to accommodate him and his attendant in his house with private rooms when passing "to and fro." In 1665, Gov. Prence removed to Plymouth, and occupied the place provided by the government at a place called Plain Dealing, which the late Judge John Davis, a native of Plymouth, says was "nearly two miles from the centre of the town on the road to Boston." The late William Russell in his Guide to Plymouth, says the place called Plain Dealing "extended it is believed to Kingston line"; and that Gov. Prence's house was near "Mr. Hedges," and in the vicinity of "Starts Hill." At this place, while occupying the gubernatorial chair, he died March 29, 1673, in his 73d year. He was "honorably interred at Plymouth, April 8th." Judge Davis says: "The Plymouth church records, in expressing Mr. Prence's character and his amiable and pleasant conversation, depart from their usual course by an indication of his personal appearance, from which it may be supposed that it was peculiarly dignified and striking. He was excellently qualified for the office of governor. He had a countenance full of majesty, and therein, as well as otherwise, was a terror to evil doers. Besides holding the office of governor, Mr. Prence was a great number of years an assistant of Gov. Bradford. He was one of the commissioners of the United Colonies many years; colonial treasurer and one of the council of war. He

was one of those who stood bound to the adventures for the payment of the sum they demanded for their interest in the stock, trade, etc., of the Colony, when the purchase was made in behalf of those who came in the three first ships, viz: Mayflower, Fortune and Ann.

The first marriage of Gov. Prence was with Patience, daughter of Mr. William Brewster, the elder of the Plymouth church, who came in the Mayflower in 1620. It occurred August 5, 1624, and was the ninth marriage in Plymouth Colony, according to the accurate chronologist, the Rev. Thomas Prince. Miss Patience Brewster did not come over in the Mayflower, with her father, but deferred her coming till 1623, when with her sister, Fear, she arrived in the Ann. Mrs. Patience (Brewster) Prence, it is reported, died in 1634, leaving children. Among them it is certain, were Thomas, Rebecca, Mercy and Hannah. The governor again united in marriage with Mary Collier, according to the Old Colony records, April 1, 1635. It has been asserted that he was subsequently married, but there appears no conclusive proof of the fact. The assertion rests upon two significant declarations which are yet inexplicable. First, the declaration of Gov. Prence in 1662 and 1671 that Samuel Freeman of Eastham was his "beloved son-in-law," and secondly, upon the injunction of Captain Thomas Howes of Yarmouth, in 1676, upon going forth in the expedition to the Narraganset country to fight the Indians, to allow "Mother Prence to enjoy without molestation, during her natural life, the house she now lives in."

The births of the children of Gov. Prence, by his wives Patience and Mary, are not recorded either at Plymouth or Eastham. Besides those already mentioned, viz: Thomas, Rebecca, Mercy and Hannah, his children were (though we know not the order of their nativity), Jane, Mary, Judith, Sarah and Elizabeth. Thomas was born before 1627 and went to England early, where he died. He left a widow and a daughter, Susanah. Rebecca, also born before 1627, married Edmond Freeman, Jr., of Sandwich, April 22, 1646, who died soon after. Mercy, born about 1631, married John Freeman of Sandwich, Feb. 13, 1649-50, and settled at Eastham, where she died Sept. 28, 1711, aged 80

years. Hannah married first, Nat. Mayo of Eastham, Feb. 13, 1649-50; second, Captain Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham. Jane, born November, 1637, married Mark Snow of Eastham, Jan. 9, 1660; she died in Harwich, now Brewster, in 1712. Mary married John Tracy of Duxbury. Judith married Isaac Barker of Duxbury, Dec. 28, 1665. Sarah, born in Eastham about 1646, married Jeremiah Howes of Yarmouth and died, according to grave stone, in 1706, aged 60 years. Elizabeth married Arthur Howland, Jr., of Marshfield, a son of a Quaker, much against the feelings of the puritanical governor, Dec. 9, 1667.

Soon after the death of Gov. Prence, the widow removed to that part of Yarmouth now North Dennis, and occupied a house belonging wholly or in part to Captain Thomas Howes, brother of Jeremiah Howes, who married Sarah Prence. Here she died. The Yarmouth book of records has this entry respecting her death: "Mrs Mary Prence wife of the late Governor Thomas Prence, died upon the ninth day of December, 1695, and was buried upon the eleventh day of ye said 1695." It is not known where she was interred; if at Yarmouth, doubtless in the old Howes Yard at North Dennis.

Gov. Prence's will bears date March 13th, 1673, and codicil March 28th, 1673. He appointed his wife, Mary, executrix, and desired that his brother, Thomas Clark, and Mr. Josiah Winslow be her advisers. To his wife Mary, he gave the profits of his part of the mill at Sauquatuckett, now West Brewster, with the land adjacent to it, which he desired at her death to go to his grandson, Theophilus Mayo, who was living with him. This, he said, he gave him for his encouragement to proceed in learning. He also gave him all his "books fit for him in learning." He enjoined him to "carry it well with his grandmother," and, in case he did so, to have a "bed." How dutiful he was to his aged grandparent, we have no means of knowing. He doubtless removed with her to Yarmouth. From what can now be gathered he did not survive her. His death, it is supposed, took place about 1678. He was the youngest son of Nathaniel and Hannah (Prence) Mayo, and it would seem, at the death of his father, was taken by the governor into his family. The governor also gave him one-half

of his land and meadow near Namassakett, in Middleboro, which if he died without descendants, would be equally divided between Gov. Prence's daughters. Of his books he gave, among others, "to Maj John Freeman, of Eastham, Speeds', Church's and Wilson's Dictionary; Simpson's History of the Church, and Newman's Concordance." He made other bequests, but we cannot mention them all.

The inventory of the governor's estate shows he owned on the Cape, "one fourth of the mill and land adjoining to it at Satuckett," now West Brewster; twenty acres of land and three acres of meadow at Tonsett in Eastham, and eighteen acres on Porchy Island. Before his death Gov. Prence disposed of most of his estate by deeds. Thomas Prence's descendants are numerous upon the Cape. Thomas Prence, the only son of the governor, died in England, leaving no sons, consequently he has no descendants of the patronymic living.

NICHOLAS SNOW.

Nicholas Snow, one of the first seven who settled at Nausett, was a man of sterling worth and very prominent in the settlement. He came over from England, a passenger in the *Ann*, in the latter part of July, 1623, and at first located in the township of Plymouth, where he soon married. The *Ann* brought over many of the near relatives of the Pilgrims, besides quite a number of other passengers to settle with them, among whom might be mentioned Thomas Clarke, Anthony Anable, Edward Bangs, Experience Michell and George Morton. The settlers of Plymouth at the arrival of Nicholas Snow and other passengers of the *Ann*, were sadly destitute, not only of apparel, but of food to eat. The new comers were "diversely affected" to behold "their low and poor condition." "The best dish," says Bradford, the renowned leader of that settlement, "they could present their friends with was a lobster or a piece of fish without bread or anything else but a cup of fair spring water." Bradford farther says, "Some of the passengers wished themselves in England again; others fell aweeping, fancying their own misery in what they saw now in others; some pitying the distress they saw their friends had been

long in and still were under; in a word, all were full of sadness.” In this ship it may be well to state, came Mrs. Alice Southworth, to become the wife of the renowned leader, and they were married shortly after.

What were the feelings of the subject of this sketch upon knowing the sufferings of these poor ragged and half-fed Pilgrims, we are not told, but from what we can gather relative to the character of the man, we are led to believe he regretted their condition, cheerfully lent them a helping hand and prayed for better times, which, according to both Bradford and Morton, came at harvest time.

Nicholas Snow, not long after his arrival, became acquainted with Miss “Constanta” or Constance, an elder daughter of Mr. Stephen Hopkins, who had but a few years before braved the dangers of the Atlantic in the Mayflower and escaped the first winter’s distress, and took her for his wife, who, before 1650, had borne him twelve children, all then alive. The date of his marriage does not appear; but he was married before 1627, as by the record of the division of the cattle, May 22nd, he and his wife Constance received their share, they belonging to Mr. Stephen Hopkins’ company, which was composed of thirteen persons. In 1633 he was a freeman and a tax payer in Plymouth. The following year, with Edward Bangs, he was appointed to lay out roads in Plymouth. In 1636, he was one of the arbitrators to settle the difficulty between Joseph Beadle and Edward Dowty. In 1638, he was one of the jurors appointed to investigate the cause of the death of John England, a lad found dead on Plymouth flats. In 1640, he was one of the surveyors of highways at Plymouth. In 1645, with Gov. Prence, Josiah Cooke and others, he removed to Nausett; and when that place became a municipality, to him was assigned the duties of town clerk, an office he held until about 1663, when his son Mark succeeded him. He was surveyor of highways at Eastham in 1647; a deputy to the Colony court in 1648, also 1650-52-57. He was a selectman in 1668-71-72-74-75. He also held other offices in town. His death occurred at Eastham, according to the records of that town, November 15th, 1676. His will bears the date November 14th, 1676. It was witnessed by

his pastor, Mr. Samuel Treat, and his son-in-law, Thomas Paine, Sen. His wife, Constance, survived him and died in October, 1677. The settlement of the estate he entrusted to his fellow townsmen, Deacon Samuel Freeman and John Mayo. He remembered the Eastham church and left a small sum towards furnishing "the furniture of the table of the Lord with pewter or otherwise."

The children of Mr. Snow are not recorded, and consequently the names cannot all be given. Gov. Bradford says he had twelve children in 1650, all alive. He mentions no daughters in his will, though it is certain he had several then alive. His sons mentioned were Mark, Joseph, Stephen, John and Jabez. He was a large land owner. He had land in Harwich, Eastham and Truro. Mark, Joseph and Stephen came into possession of his landed estate in Harwich, then Satucket; John, of that in Paomet, now Truro, and Jabez of that in Eastham, including the homestead. His "moveable goods," at his wife's decease, he ordered divided among all his children equally. His residence was in that part now Eastham, not far from Gov. Prence's homestead, as far as it can be ascertained from the records. He undoubtedly was buried in the old yard at Eastham, though no stone with inscription marks the place. His son Mark, who married Gov. Prence's daughter Jane, and his son-in-law, Mr. Thomas Paine, were distinguished men in their day. The descendants of Mr. Nicholas Snow are numerous, and an effort by them should be made to erect a monument to his memory in the old yard, that the future generations may know where their Pilgrim ancestor lies buried.

JOHN DOANE.

Mr. John Doane was the eldest of the seven first settlers, and undoubtedly next in rank to Gov. Prence. They were the only persons of that band whom the records of that period honor with the prefix of Mister, which in those days was only given to men of means, magistrates and ministers. At what time he arrived at Plymouth, it does not appear. Mr. Pratt, the Eastham historian, was certain he came over in one of the three first ships, his authority he does not state. This, however, is certain:

he did not come over in the Mayflower, Fortune or Ann. His name appears as a freeman and tax payer at Plymouth in 1633, and that year is mentioned as being with Mr. Wm. Bradford, Capt. Miles Standish, Mr. John Howland, Mr. John Alden, Mr. Stephen Hopkins and Mr. Wm. Gilson, an assistant of Gov. Edward Winslow; but having been chosen deacon in the church at Plymouth, "at the request of the church and himself, was freed from the office of assistant in the Commonweale," January 2, 1633-4. In 1633, with others, he was appointed to divide meadow at Plymouth. He is also mentioned in the records as presenting the inventory of the estate of Martha Harding, Oct. 28, 1633, who in behalf of her son, was appointed administrator. In 1635, at the July court, the Colony agreed "to build a mill" at Plymouth, and a committee consisting of Capt. Miles Standish, Mr. Collier, Mr John Doane and John Winslow, was "appointed to collect, etc., money for the building of the same," and to engage the workmen. In 1636, December 24, he sold his house and land at Plain Dealing, which he held in common with John Atwood, late of London, for £60. In 1637, June 7th, the court was called upon to regulate the trade in "beaver, corn, beads," etc., which was "likely to go to decay," and "Mr. Doane," with others, was appointed to aid the governor and council in considering the way to regulate it. In 1637, he had land granted him near his house, also one hundred acres granted him at Jones river, in Plymouth. This year, he was appointed by the court, with others, to view and lay out hay ground between Eel river and South river, at Plymouth. With Nicholas Snow, Richard Burne, Richard Sparrow, Josiah Cooke, John Smalley, "honest and lawful men," and others, whose names we omit, he examined into the cause of the death of a lad found dead on the flats near Plymouth. In 1639, he was again allowed "to draw wine" at Plymouth; and appointed, with three others, to assist the governor and council to revise the laws of the Colony, which was the first revision since the settlement of the Pilgrims at Plymouth. In 1640, "Mr. John Doane" was of the Grand Inquest, and a deputy for Plymouth in 1642-43. In November, 1644, he was licensed "to draw wine" at Plymouth, but in January, 1644-45, the court agreed to allow James Cole, the

keeper of the ordinary or tavern at Plymouth, to take the wine Mr. Doane had on hand. It is evident that Mr. Doane was closing up his business in Plymouth, in view of the removal to Nausett of himself and family. It will thus be seen by these transactions, that Mr. Doane did not go to Eastham to settle in 1643 or 1644, as many of our local historians have stated, but in 1645 (N. S.) as we have heretofore stated, upon authority of the Colony records.

Mr. Doane was appointed, March 3rd, 1644-5, with others, to take the account of the colonial treasurer under consideration, in order for the annual settlement. In 1649, "Mr John Doane" and his son-in-law, Samuel Hicks, were deputies from Nausett or Eastham to the Plymouth court. He was also elected in 1650, 1651, 1653 and 1659. In 1663, he was appointed by the Colony court to solemnize marriages, administer oaths to witnesses, etc., in Eastham.

Mr. Doane held other offices in town and colony. Mr. Pratt, and other historical writers, say he was fourteen years selectman, but they are not sustained in their statement by the Colony records. The office of selectman was created in 1663. The first notice in the Colony records of those chosen in Eastham was in 1666, next in 1668, and then in 1670. After this date they are noticed regularly for many years. Mr. Doane's name is not among them. Possibly he held the office, but it is certain he did not hold it that period of time. In 1663, Mr. Doane was seventy-two years of age, and if their statements are correct, Mr. Doane was near eighty-four years of age when he retired from the board.

Although Mr. John Doane was not one of the purchasers or old comers, yet he was a large land owner. At various periods he had land granted him by the court. In 1657, with Josiah Cooke, Richard Higgins, Richard Sparrow and John Smalley, he had land granted him between Bridgewater and Weymouth; in 1666, a tract of one hundred acres in "Potonomequot Neck;" and in 1681, sixty acres "out of land that was Mauamwed or Takamanuckes, if to be had there." This appears to have been the last grant from the Colonial court.

Mr. Doane, it is understood, settled to the north of Town Cove, in the present town of Eastham, where the site of his

house is pointed out, and stone monuments erected by him are to be seen upon land he formerly owned and occupied. Mr Pratt, in his history of Eastham, published in 1844, says Mr. Doane "took possession of about two hundred acres" in the vicinity, and that his house stood "near the water, and the remains of the cellar" were then visible.

Rev. Mr. Pratt says, Mr. Doane "was forty-nine years old when he came here, and lived sixty years afterwards, being one hundred and ten years old when he died, in 1707." Upon what authority he makes the statements we do not know, but it is clearly evident they are unreliable. Mr. Doane, May 18, 1678, declared his age to be "88 or thereabouts," which shows he was born about 1590. Consequently, in 1645, when he came to Eastham, he was not far from fifty-five years of age. Mr. Doane, it is certain, died in 1686, having lived here about forty-one years, and not sixty-four, as Mr. Pratt has it. If Mr. Doane's statement made in 1678 is reliable, at his death in 1686 he was about ninety-six years of age. Tradition, says Mr. Pratt, in 1844, has it, "that he was rocked in a cradle several of his last years."

He made his will May 18, 1678. It was presented to probate June 2, 1686. His wife mentioned was Abigail. Whether she was the mother of his children or not, the writer has not been able to ascertain satisfactorily. They, too, were undoubtedly interred in the old cemetery at Eastham. No correct record of the children of Mr. John Doane appears; but it is certain he had Abigail, Lydia, John, Daniel and Ephraim. From these three sons have descended the Doanes of the Cape, Connecticut, Ohio, and of other places in the United States.

✓ EDWARD BANGS.

Edward Bangs, one of the seven who began the settlement at Nausett in 1645, came over from England in the Ann in 1623, a fellow passenger with Nicholas Snow, whom we have already noticed. At this period he was about thirty-two years of age, but whether a married or single man is not positively known. In the beginning of the year 1624, it having been decided to allow each person who came over in the first three ships, one

acre apiece to be laid out near the settlement as possible, for planting land, which each was to use for seven years, the records show that "Bangs" was assigned four acres "towards Eel River," while Nicholas Snow was allowed the use of one acre. From this fact, it has been supposed Mr. Bangs was a married man with children at this early date. Mr. Bangs is mentioned in the records as being of John Jenney's company, which numbered thirteen persons, and to which "the twelfth lot" of cattle fell at the division, May 22, 1627. To this company "fell," says the record, "the great white back cow, which was brought over with the first in the Ann." Both Bradford and Morton say the first neat cattle were brought over in the year 1624.

It having been decided at a court, Jan. 3rd, 1627-8, to allow every person twenty acres of land, besides the land each person had already, and Mr. Bangs, with Gov. Bradford, Edward Winslow, John Howland, Francis Cook and Joshua Pratt, was chosen with instructions to lay out the land near the water on both sides of the settlement, and to lay the lots out "5 acres in breadth by the water side, and 4 acres in length." These twenty acres laid out for each person were for tillage. At this period, no meadow ground had been divided in Plymouth. Each year the planters were shown where to cut their hay and how much, by men appointed. They now continued the same rules relative to this matter, which were satisfactory.

Mr. Bangs was a tax payer in Plymouth, March 25, 1633, and his tax is put down as twelve shillings. The same year, with Mr. John Doane, he was appointed to divide meadow, and in 1634, with Nicholas Snow and others, to lay out roads at Plymouth. In 1634 and 1635, he was one of the assessors of Plymouth. In 1637, "for Eel River" he was appointed one of the committee to view the hay ground and assist in laying it out. Among others appointed with him were Mr. Wm. Brewster, Mr. Stephen Hopkins, Mr. John Doane of Plymouth, and Jonathan Brewster of Duxbury. He was one of the grand jury the same year, also in 1638 and 1640. In 1639, he was an arbitrator to settle a case between Samuel Gorton and Thomas Clark. In 1642, he was employed to superintend the building of a barque at Plymouth, to which he

contributed one-sixteenth part of the amount raised for its construction. This vessel is supposed to have been the first built in the Colony.

Mr. Bangs was the first treasurer of Eastham, after the settlement in 1645. He was a surveyor of highways in 1647, 1650 and 1651, and perhaps a deputy to the court in 1652, which year he was also of the Grand Inquest. In 1657, he was allowed "to draw wine" and strong water at Eastham, with instructions not to sell to the Indians. In 1658, he agreed to find "2 horses and 2 men for the country's service," upon the town providing "sufficient furniture for them." In 1659, he "promised freely" to find "a man and horse with complete furniture, for the term of one year for the country's service." Upon an order of the court to appoint overseers of the poor, with Nicholas Snow and Richard Higgins, he was appointed for Eastham in 1659. After this he took but little interest in public matters.

Whether Mr. Bangs was more than once married, it is impossible to determine. His wife, in 1651, was called Rebecca. If she were his only wife, she was a daughter of Robert Hicks, who died at Scituate in 1647, as he mentions his grandson, John Bangs, in his will, which would indicate that John Bangs' mother was a daughter, and that she had been or was the wife of Edward Bangs.

Mr. Bangs died at Eastham, about the last of February in the year 1677-8, at the age of about 86 years, leaving no wife. His will, a lengthy document, in which he makes known his age, bears date Oct. 19, 1677. It was presented for proof at Plymouth, March 5, 1677-8, Mr. John Freeman and Mr. Thomas Crosby upon oath, testifying as to its being his last will. Mr. Bangs' younger son, Jonathan, was appointed the "whole and sole executor," who, it would appear, was somewhat of a favorite with his father, from whose hands he received a good share of his landed estate, which was considerable, he having been of that favored number called "Purchasers or Old Comers." Mr. Bangs undoubtedly resided with Jonathan the last years of his life.

The children of Edward Bangs, as far as can be ascertained, were John, Joshua, Jonathan, Rebecca, Sarah, Lydia, Hannah,

Bethiah, Apphia and Mercy. John and Joshua were married but left no descendants. Jonathan settled finally in Harwich, where he died in 1728. He had three wives and twelve children. From him have descended all the Bangses in the United States, it is supposed. He was a prominent man in his day, and died at the age of 88. From his daughter, Tamsin Burgess, descended that distinguished orator, the late Tristram Burgess of Providence.

JOSIAH COOKE.

Josiah Cooke was born in England in or about the year 1610, and it appears was a servant to some one of the early planters of Plymouth during his minority. The first notice of him that appears upon the records is under the date of Jan. 2, 1633-4, when he and Edward Dowty were before the court at Plymouth to answer for a breach of the peace in having a fracas, in which Mr. Cooke was roughly handled. They were both amerced in the sum of six shillings, although "Dowty drew blood from sd Josias." Dowty had been the servant of Mr. Stephen Hopkins, and was one of those who came over in the Mayflower. He seems to have been a very passionate man, and fond of settling difficulties without due recourse to law. Between Dowty and Lester, the first duel in New England was fought. Lester was also a servant of Mr. Hopkins. They fought with sword and dagger, and both were wounded. This occurred June 15, 1622. They were both punished for the offence, but not so severely as was intended, on account of their master's humble plea in their behalf, and they promised to reform, after being tied head and foot an hour.

In 1638, Mr. Cooke was living in Plymouth, and had forty acres of land granted him on the north side of Fresh lake and also made a purchase of land of Mr. Stephen Hopkins. He was this year one of the grand jurors, and one of those appointed to examine into the cause of the death of John England. In 1640, he was surveyor for Plymouth, and in 1641 and 1642, constable. In 1645 he went to Nausett, and in 1647 was a deputy to the Colony court from that place. He was a deputy or representative in 1651, 1652, 1658, 1659, 1661, 1662, 1663, 1664, 1666 and 1671. In 1648, he was surveyor at Nausett, and that year appointed to

sell wine, and to be a "Register Keeper." Mr. Cooke was a grand juror for Eastham in 1656, and a selectman in 1666 and 1671. In 1664 he was appointed to solemnize marriages in Eastham, succeeding Mr. John Doane. He was one of the Colonial auditors in 1659 and 1661. He was one of the five chosen by the town of Eastham "to survey all the lands granted or laid out to the several inhabitants of the township" in 1659. As Mr. Cooke was not one of those called Purchasers or Old Comers, he was often favored by special grants from the court, of land in various parts of the Colony, upon his application. In 1658, with Mr. John Doane, Richard Higgins, Richard Sparrow and John Smalley, he had land granted between Bridgewater and Weymouth. In 1662, as one of the old servants, he had land allowed him. In 1665, he had a large tract granted him at Eastham, in that part now South Orleans but then known as Pottonumequot, which he purchased of the Indians the same year, and in 1669 exchanged it for land in another part of the town, with Major John Freeman. It was upon this tract the first settlement in this part of Eastham was attempted.

He married, September 16, 1635, Mrs. Elizabeth Deane, widow of Stephen Deane, an early resident of Plymouth, who came in the Ann, in 1623, and had Ann, who married Mark Snow; Josiah, who married Deborah Hopkins, and Bethiah, who married Joseph Harding. He died, say Eastham records, Oct. 17, 1673. His widow survived him several years. His will was exhibited at Plymouth court for probate, Oct. 29th, and letters testamentary were issued to Wid. Elizabeth. The widow, by her former husband, Stephen Deane, had several children, among whom were Elizabeth, who married Wm. Twinning, the first of the name in Eastham; Susannah, who married Joseph Rogers and Stephen Snow, and Miriam, who when aged, married John Wing, Sen. of Harwich. It is quite certain that Mrs. Cooke was somewhat older than her last husband.

Mr. Cooke was a very energetic man, and appears to have given much more attention to material things than his compeers in the early settlement of the place. He was an impulsive man, and often in imbroglios with some of his worldly neighbors of

impetuous temperaments. Some notice of his cases of litigation are upon record. They are principally of a defamatory character, and show unmistakably that Mr. Cooke had some very implacable neighbors, who delighted in giving him trouble, not caring whether their slanderous charges could be sustained or not. The many public positions he held in town from the settlement in 1645 to his death in 1673, show that he was a man that the majority of his townsmen had confidence in and respected. Of the religious life of Mr. Cooke we have nothing positive. It is inferred he was a member of the church.

RICHARD HIGGINS.

Richard Higgins was in Plymouth in 1633, and is mentioned as being one of the freemen and tax payers of that town, his rate being nine shillings. He was a tailor by trade, and married Lydia Chandler, daughter of Edmund of Scituate for his first wife, Dec. 11, 1634. He purchased of John Barnes of Plymouth, the 13th day of January following, the twenty acres of land and dwelling house on it, belonging formerly to Edward Holman, and doubtless at once commenced business, as by record on April following, he is mentioned as having had bound to him, Samuel Godbarson, as an apprentice. In 1639, with Josiah Cooke, he had land granted him at Plymouth. In 1644, he was of the grand inquest and then a resident of Plymouth.

In 1645, he went to Nausett, with the other pioneers, and in 1647, with Josiah Cooke was sent to the Colony court at Plymouth, as representative, or deputy as they were at that time called. He was again chosen to represent Eastham at the same court in 1653, 1655, 1657, 1658, 1660 and 1665, according to the Colonial records. In 1651, he was a surveyor for Eastham, and in 1666 and 1668 a selectman. He was one of the first overseers of the poor appointed by Eastham in 1658, and one of those this year who agreed with the town to furnish men and equipment for "the troop of horse." He agreed to furnish "one man and a horse for the country's service," upon condition the town furnished the "furniture," so long as he was able.

At different periods, while a resident in the Colony, he had

land granted him for his use. In 1657, he was granted a tract thirteen miles from Rehoboth, and in 1658, with four of his associates in the settlement, he had a grant of land between Bridgewater and Weymouth.

Mr. Higgins, it appears, was not satisfied with his situation at Eastham, as in November, 1672, he was residing in "New Pascataway in the province of New Jersey," a place some thirteen miles northeast of Princeton, which had been settled but a few years, and mostly by New England people. At this place it is supposed he died soon after. He was dead, it is certain, in 1675, as that year his son, Benjamin, applied to the Colony court for land in right of his father, Richard Higgins, deceased, and provision was made for him in land at Saconet.

The second and last wife of Richard Higgins was Mary, widow of John Yates of Duxbury, to whom he was married October, 1651. By her former husband, John Yates, she had one son, John, who came with her to the Cape. She survived her husband, and it is thought she returned to Eastham after her husband's decease. She is mentioned upon the Plymouth record in 1682, as Richard Higgins' widow. By both wives, as far as is known, he had Jonathan, Benjamin, Mary, Eliakim, William, Jadhah, Zerviah, Thomas and Lydia.

The place of Richard Higgins in old Eastham has not been pointed out. He sold in 1667, a large tract to Jonathan Sparrow, in what is now East Orleans, and possibly it was in that section he resided when he removed to New Jersey. The Higginses of the Cape are his descendants. Whether any of his children settled in New Jersey we have not ascertained.

JOHN SMALLEY.

John Smalley, an associate of Richard Higgins and the other pioneers in the settlement at Nausett, was neither freeman nor tax payer at Plymouth in 1663. He was, however, at Plymouth as early as 1638. By trade he was a tailor. He seems to have taken but very little part in public affairs. He was admitted a freeman at Plymouth in 1642. He was a constable at Nausett in 1646, a surveyor in 1649, and of the Grand Inquest in 1654, 1660

and 1665. He was specially favored by the court, and had land granted him in 1658 between Bridgewater and Weymouth, and in 1662 near Taunton.

Mr. Smalley was married at Plymouth to Ann Walden, Nov. 9, 1638. No full list of his children appears. He had Hannah, born at Plymouth, June 14, 1641; John, at Plymouth, Sept. 8, 1644; Isaac, Dec. 11, 1647, and Mary, Dec. 11, 1647. The time of his death is not known, and we fail to find any settlement of his estate. He was living in January, 1668, and had a ward some six years of age, who wandered six or seven miles from his house into the woods and died from exposure.

Mr. Smalley was undoubtedly a man who did not seek notoriety. He seemed to enjoy the quietness of his farm more than the honors and troubles of office. He lived in peace with all men, there can be no doubt, and was gathered to his fathers in peace. Many have supposed that from him descended the Smalleys of Smalls of the Cape. The writer also entertained a similar opinion until quite recently. Investigations by the writer of ancient documents, show that one branch of the Harwich Smalls, at least, descended from one Francis Small, a fisherman of Casco Bay, who, as early as 1657, purchased the land of Scitterygussett, the Sachem, near the site of the city of Portland, and that he assigned a portion of it to Mr. Jno. Phillips, in 1659. Family tradition is that the Smalls laid claim to land near Portland, and attempts at law to recover it were early made. The tradition is sustained by documents that not long since came to light, in which it appears that an attempt was made in the year 1764.

SAMUEL HICKS.

Samuel Hicks was among the first who went to Nausett after the settlement commenced. He came over with his mother, Margaret, in the Ann in 1623, to meet his father, Robert, who had previously come in the Fortune. His age at the time is not known. He was in Plymouth in 1643 and able to bear arms. He went to Nausett and was the constable in 1646. He was a representative to the Colony court in June, 1647, and also in 1649 with

Mr. John Doane. He did not long remain in Eastham. He was a resident of Barnstable as late as 1662, and an inhabitant of Dartmouth in 1670, where the family was interested in some landed estate. His wife was Lydia Doane, daughter, it is understood, of Mr. John Doane, to whom he was married Sept. 11, 1645. Among his children were Dorcas, born 14th of February, 1652; Margaret, born 9th of March, 1654.

Robert Hicks, the father of Samuel, came to Plymouth in 1621, without his family, from London, where he had been engaged in the business of a fellmonger. His wife came over with the children in the *Ann*, in 1623. He died in 1647, leaving his wife Margaret and four children, viz: Samuel, Ephraim, Lydia and Phebe.

JOHN JENKINS.

John Jenkins was an early resident of Nausett, and a contemporary of Mr. Hicks and had land laid out to him, but he early removed from town. He came from Plymouth, where he had been a resident, and where he had been admitted a freeman in 1637. He appears to have been a resident of Barnstable in 1652. He was a volunteer in 1637 to fight the Pequots, and in 1645 a soldier against the Narraganset Indians. He came over in 1635, it is understood, in the *Defense of London*. Of his life after his removal from Eastham, we have not an accurate account. He had children born at Barnstable and at other places where he resided. There was a John Jenkins in Sandwich early, friendly to the Friends or Quakers, and one at Succanesset or Falmouth.

ROBERT WIXON.

Robert Wickson, or Wixon, was a resident of Eastham in 1648. He came from Plymouth, where he had been a constable in 1647. He was an indentured apprentice of Wm. Edge, or Hedge, of that town in 1638, but at the desire of Hedge, Gov. Prence took him in November of that year, and with him, undoubtedly, he spent the remaining years of his minority. It is inferred that the governor had something to do in his settlement at Nausett. The settlers in 1648 chose him a surveyor with Josiah Cooke. At the

June session of the Old Colony court at Plymouth, in 1651, he was made a freeman. He was chosen a surveyor in 1655, 1674, 1675 and 1676. He was a constable in 1666. With Mr. John Doane and Jonathan Bangs, of this town, he was on the jury that tried Tobias and other Indians, for the alleged murder of the famous John Sasamon, in Middleboro in 1675, whose dead body was found under the ice in Assowamsett Pond. The trial, conviction and execution of the supposed murderers of Sasamon greatly exasperated King Philip, and undoubtedly caused that warrior to commence the meditated acts which resulted so disastrously to the Colony, and brought sorrow to so many homes.

Robert Wickson died at Eastham in October, 1686. His widow was Alice. His will bears date Oct. 1, 1686, and was presented for probate at Barnstable, Oct. 23, 1686. He had Jemima, born in 1655; Titus, in 1657; Elizabeth, in 1660, and Barnabas. From Barnabas, the son, have descended the Cape Wixons. The sons of Barnabas Wixon were Barnabas, Joshua, Robert and Prence. Joshua, Robert and Prence settled in that part of Yarmouth now Dennis, where they married early in the last century. About 1760, Reuben, Robert and Pelick Wixon removed from the Cape to that part of the Oblong now in Putnam County, New York. This surname was sometimes written Vixon, Wixam, Wickson and Wixon. The prevailing mode is Wixon.

JOSEPH ROGERS.

Lieut. Joseph Rogers went to Eastham soon after the settlement opened, paid his proportion of the purchase money, and at once took a leading part in the affairs of the new township. He came over in the Mayflower, with his father, Thomas Rogers, and appears to have been the only member of his father's family that ventured in that famous vessel. At the time, it appears, he was a lad. He doubtless was the eldest of his father's children, and, perhaps, came to have care of his father, who, it is inferred from what Bradford has stated, was a widower. His father did not survive the first winter; he took the distemper which carried off so many of that noble band, died, and was buried, as is supposed, with the other victims on Cole's Hill. Some years after-

wards the remaining portion of his family found their way to this country, where they married and settled. With whom Lieut. Joseph lived during that terrible winter and spring, after burying his father, does not appear. It certainly must have been a dreary winter to him as well as to the other survivors. The bill of mortality as given by Prince, the chronologist, as gathered from Bradford's papers, shows that the little band of worthies was incapable of doing much more than to attend to the sick and to bury the dead, for the first four months. The number of deaths occurring in December was six; January, eight; February, seventeen, and in March thirteen. Elder Brewster and Captain Standish were among the very few that escaped the sickness. They have been highly spoken of by the Pilgrim historian for their great services during the sickness.

In the allotment of land in 1623 to those who came over in the Mayower, Joseph Rogers had two acres allotted him; and in the division of the cattle in 1627, he had his portion in the eleventh lot, which fell to Gov. Bradford's company, of which he was one. From the fact of his being in this company, it is thought that he was a member of the governor's household. He was a resident of Plymouth in 1633, a tax payer and married man. His rates this year were nine shillings. In 1636, he was located near Jones' River in that part afterwards Duxbury, and was allowed to establish a ferry near his house, and to take one penny from each person who took passage. In 1637, Duxbury became a township, and in 1639, with John Washburne, he was surveyor of highways for that town. In 1640 he was again surveyor. While a resident of Duxbury he had large tracts of land granted him. In 1638, he had sixty acres of land granted him, and in 1640, he and his "brother John Rogers" had each a tract of land of forty acres granted them at North River, in what is now Marshfield. In 1645, he was one of the six appointed by the court to lay out land at Duxbury, at a place called Saughtuckett.

In 1647, at the June session of the Old Colony court, he was proposed as a suitable person for a lieutenant at Nausett to "exercise the men" in arms, and was appointed. He held this position till 1661, when his lieutenantcy was revoked, and he was released

from further duty as militia officer. He was, however, reappointed lieutenant of the Eastham Company in 1664, succeeding Lieut. Wm. Merrick or Myrick. In February, 1652, with other persons from various parts of the Colony, he was appointed to lay out the way from Sandwich to near Eel River in Plymouth. In 1658, he was one of the Council of War, and that year had liberty to purchase tracts of meadow at Pottonumecot, near the mouth of the river.

In 1661, with Giles Hopkins, who was a passenger with him in the Mayflower, and Josiah Cooke, he had liberty to look out for land between Bridgewater and the Bay line. In 1663, he was on the jury from Eastham, and in 1665, with Lieut. John Freeman, was appointed to view certain land petitioned for by Richard Higgins, and to purchase the same if he thought proper. The same year he was made a grantee of land at Manomoyick, now Chatham, which had been illegally purchased by the first settler of that place, Wm. Nickerson; and also liberty with the other grantees to purchase the unpurchased land there. In 1670, he was allowed to purchase more meadow at Pottonumecot near his former purchase. In 1672, he disposed of a large tract in what is now Brewster, which came to him at the division of the "Purchasers or Old Comers reserve," he having been one of that favored number. Lieut. Rogers died the latter part of the winter 1677, and undoubtedly was buried in the old yard at Eastham, which is

"A lonesome acre thinly grown
With grass and wandering vine."

His wife Hannah survived him, but how long is not known. His children were, Sarah, born in 1633; Joseph, in 1635; Thomas, in 1638; Elizabeth, in 1639; John, in 1642; Mary, in 1644; James, in 1648; and Hannah, in 1652.

Joseph, the eldest son, married Susannah Deane, in 1660. In December following, he fell from his horse with such violence that his death took place within forty-eight hours. A prominent citizen of Yarmouth was arraigned for being in some way the cause of his death; he left no issue. Thomas married Elizabeth Snow in 1665, and died in 1678, soon after his father. Elizabeth

married Jonathan Higgins, son of Richard. John married Elizabeth Twinning in 1669, and settled in South Eastham. John had a large family, and from him have descended the South Orleans Rogers. He died about 1724. He was a large land owner. James, the youngest son of Lieut. Joseph, married Mary Paine, Jan. 11, 1670. He died April 11, 1677; he left no sons.

The will of Lieut. Joseph Rogers was witnessed by John Bangs and Wm. Twinning, and was presented at Plymouth court March 5, 1677-8. He mentions sons Thomas, Joshua and James; daughters Elizabeth Higgins and Hannah Rogers, and grandson Beniah Higgins, who resided with him. Thomas was the executor, but died before the final settlement of his father's estate. To James was given the homestead. To Beniah he gave one-third of his purchased and unpurchased land at Pamet, now Truro, provided he continued to live with him until his death. Lieut. Rogers gave the church at Eastham ten shillings.

The spot where he resided has not been indicated to the writer; but the records point to that part of Orleans called Barley Neck, as the place where this pioneer and passenger in the Mayflower located upon his removal to Nausett plantation. It is probable he was the first who settled in that vicinity. Tradition has it that in early times a house in that locality was palisaded, to protect the occupants (as well as those who sought it in time of danger) from the hostile Indians then lurking around to get recruits for King Philip's army. It is probable that this house was Lieut. Rogers's, as he had been long active in military matters in the town.

JOHN FREEMAN.

Next in prominence to Thomas Prence of the early settlers of Nausett, was his son-in-law, John Freeman. He was the youngest son of Edmund Freeman, the Sandwich settler, and was born in England. He came over with his father's family when a lad, in the ship Abigail, Captain Hackwell, in 1635. Upon his marriage with Mercy, Gov. Prence's daughter by wife Patience Brewster, Feb. 13, 1649-50, he removed from Sandwich to that part of Nausett called Namskecket, now within the limits of Orleans, and located,

having paid his part of the purchase money. He was admitted a freeman in 1651, and the same year was one of the Grand jury from Eastham. In 1652, he was chosen to represent Eastham in the Old Colony court, and also elected in 1654, '56, '62, '63, '64, '65 and '66. He was chosen an assistant to the governor in 1666-7 in place of Mr. William Collier of Duxbury, and re-elected at every yearly election thereafter, until 1692. He was elected a selectman several years, but not as often as has been reported by some who have written concerning him. He was early connected with the militia. In 1665, he was the ensign of the company at Eastham, and in October, 1659, confirmed as lieutenant of the "troop of horse" by the Colonial court. This was the only company of mounted soldiers in the Colony at this date. Command was given to Capt. William Bradford of Plymouth.

Robert Stetson was cornet or color bearer. For this company of mounted soldiers, Eastham was required to furnish three troopers; and Thomas Prence and Edward Bangs each "freely" agreed to furnish a man fully equipped. After this period he was captain of the military company. Upon the division of the Colony into three counties in 1685, the militia was divided into three regiments. The Barnstable county regiment was placed under the command of Captain John Freeman, who was now commissioned major. At that period there were no regimental officers known as colonel and lieutenant colonel. The highest commanding officer of a regiment then known was major. The Plymouth county regiment was placed under the command of Major William Bradford, and the Bristol regiment under Major John Walley. For many years after the union of Plymouth with Massachusetts Colony, there was but one regiment of militia in this county. Upon the division into two regiments, the militia of the towns below Dennis, then Yarmouth, composed the second regiment.

In 1665, to settle the difficulty at Monomoy, now Chatham, between William Nickerson and the Colonial government respecting the illegal purchase of land of the Indian sachem there, Nickerson was allowed one hundred acres of the purchased land, and Major Freeman, with Thomas Hinkley, William Sargeant, Anthony Thacher, Nathaniel Bacon, Edmund Hawes, Thomas

Howes, Sen., Thomas Folland, Sen., and Lieut. Joseph Rogers, was allowed a grantee of the remaining portion, with the privilege with the above named to purchase adjacent land. Major Freeman, in 1672, disposed of his right to William Nickerson; and in 1674 Major Freeman and Captain Jonathan Sparrow were appointed to lay out Nickerson's land with instructions, but for some cause the work was not accomplished by the committee until 1692.

He was one of the Council of War, and, it seems, had seen some of the dangers of camp life during the war with King Philip. In a letter from Taunton, under date of June 8, 1675, to Gov. Josiah Winslow, to whom he was an assistant, he writes: "This morning three of our men are slain close by one of our court of guard; houses are burned in our sight; our men are picked off at every bush. The design of the enemy is not to face the army, but to fall on us as they have advantage." Two of the men who fell as above mentioned were from Eastham, viz: Samuel Atkins and John Knowles. The major in the same letter expressed his fears as to the people of Eastham defending themselves in case of assault, and urged the governor "to give instructions how to manage things for their security," as he was of the opinion that the town had "not twenty good arms in it." It is probable the major was forced to believe that the place was not free from the emissaries of Philip, and that an attack was not impossible. Tradition has it that the people of Eastham apprehended attacks and had palisaded houses for refuge erected. Two of them, it is reported, were in East Orleans, one of them near the house of Mr. J. L. Sparrow, and in charge of Captain Jonathan Sparrow, the owner, which we may notice more fully in a future article; and also one at Barley Neck, or vicinity. It is certain, had not Bourne, Treat and others instructed the Cape Indians and influenced them to remain friendly, the English in the Cape towns would have severely suffered, and the result of the conflict been serious to the infant colony. At the period of the war, Eastham was the only incorporated town below Yarmouth, and the whole territory from Dennis bounds to the head of the Cape was considered under the municipal control of the town.

Major Freeman has been very justly regarded as one of the

"fathers of the town." No one of the early residents was held in higher esteem, and it is certain no one was longer in public employment and performed his duties so acceptably. Excepting Gov. Prence, none held a higher public position. His education, it is true, was inferior to several of his contemporaries in the little settlement; but in point of ability he was inferior to none in the township. Upon the union of the two colonies in 1692, he was appointed, with Barnabas Lothrop, Barnstable, John Thacher, Yarmouth, and Stephen Skiff, Sandwich, a justice of the Court of Common Pleas. He held the office until "infirmities of age" rendered "him incapable" of further service, and he was succeeded by Captain Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham, March 6, 1695. After the commencement of the eighteenth century he gradually gave up public employment, and on the 19th of October, 1719, passed away, in the 98th year of his age, according to the headstone in the old burying-ground at Eastham, where his friends and neighbors lie buried. His wife, Mercy, preceded him to her rest, having died Sept. 28, 1711, in her 81st year.

Major Freeman was a man of some means. He was quite a large landholder, not only in Eastham, but in Harwich, at an early period. He bought out Gov. Prence's right to land he held as a "Purchaser or Old Comer," in the latter town early, and much of it he deeded to his sons, Thomas and John, after their settlement in that part of Harwich now Brewster.

He had, so far as is known, eleven children. They were John, who died in infancy; John, 1651, who settled in Harwich; Thomas, 1653, who also settled in Harwich and was a prominent man; Patience, who married Lieut. Samuel Paine of Eastham; Hannah, who married John Mayo; Mercy, who married Samuel Knowles, Esq.; William, who married Lydia Sparrow; Prence, who died young; Nathaniel, 1669, who married Mary Howland of Quaker parentage, and who was a man of note in Eastham, and who died at a great age; and Bennet, who married Deacon John Paine, whose great-grandson was the brilliant John Howard Paine, author of "Home, Sweet Home."

The will of Major John Freeman bears the date June 1, 1716, and was presented for probate Nov. 4, 1719.

JOHN MAYO.

The first who went to Eastham as a religious instructor, as far as can be ascertained, was Mr. John Mayo. He was from England, it is understood, and came over quite early. He was at Barnstable, said the late Amos Otis, as early as 1639, and there when Mr. Lothrop and company came from Scituate. Mr Mayo "was ordained teaching elder of the Church" over which Mr. Lothrop was pastor, on Fast day, April 25, 1640. His stay here was not long, as Nov. 9, 1665, he was inducted to the pastoral office of the Second church, in Boston, which had been gathered June 5, 1650. Here he preached until the beginning of the year 1672, when he became "very infirm insomuch as the congregation was not able to hear and be edified," and concurring with his brethren, in the proposal to secure another, he retired from the ministry soon after, and in 1673, moved "his person and goods" to Barnstable to reside with his daughter. He afterwards resided at Yarmouth, where he died in May, 1676, and was buried.

Of his ministry at Eastham, but very little is certainly known. It is evident he was not a settled minister there. The settlers, at the time of his removal to the place, were in no condition apparently to hold out great inducements, and it is probable for their failure in that respect, that Mr. Mayo left the town and colony.

Of his children there appears no complete record. It is certain he had Samuel, Hannah, Nathaniel, Elizabeth and John.

The wife of Mr. Mayo survived him, it is supposed, as a "Ma Mayho" died at Yarmouth, according to the records of that town, Feb. 26, 1682.

Samuel, their son, born in England, married Thomasin Lumpkins of Yarmouth, and at first located at Barnstable. From there he went to Oyster Bay, L. I., it is stated in 1653, and purchased land of the Indians. He sold out his land there in 1658, and resided in Boston. He died there the latter part of the year 1663, or the beginning of 1664. He seems to have been a sea-faring man. His father settled the estate. He left a wife, Thomasin or Tamzin, and several children. The widow married Mr. John Sunderland of Boston soon after. Mr. Sunderland was a citizen of Eastham

as early as 1678, when the town was thrown into excitement on account of the appearance of the smallpox. Mr. John Cotton, under the date of Aug. 26, this year, in a letter to Mr. Increase Mather, reports the disease increasing and four or five sick; that one man had died, and that Mr. Sunderland's son and grandson had each had it. Mr. Sunderland was a school teacher many years, and was admitted townsman of Eastham in 1695. He died testate, Dec. 26, 1707, aged 84 years; and she died, aged 84, June 13, 1709. They both lie buried at Brewster, where stones with inscriptions mark the spots. Samuel Mayo's daughter Elizabeth was the first wife of Mr. Samuel Treat, the first settled minister of the town; daughter Mary was the first wife of Jonathan Bangs of Harwich; their daughter Sarah, the second wife of Lieut. Edward Freeman of Eastham; their daughter Mercy Mayo married Captain Samuel Sears of Harwich; and their son John Mayo married Hannah Freeman, daughter of Major John Freeman, and settled in Harwich. He was the first representative from that town.

Hannah, the daughter of Mr. John Mayo, married Nathaniel Bacon of Barnstable in 1642. He was the first of that name in the county.

Nathaniel Mayo, son of Mr. John Mayo, married Gov. Prence's daughter Hannah, Feb. 13, 1649-50, and removed to Eastham, where he was somewhat of a prominent man. He died at that place, the beginning of the year 1662. He made his will Jan. 10, 1661-2, and it was presented in March following. He left Thomas, Nathaniel, Samuel, Theophilus, Hannah and Bathsheba. He desired that all of his children should be "brought up to read and write." His son Theophilus went to reside with Gov. Prence, but died when a young man. Hannah Mayo married for her second husband Captain Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham.

Elizabeth Mayo, daughter of Mr. John Mayo, married Joseph Howes of Yarmouth.

John Mayo, Jr., married Hannah Reyecraft of Eastham, Jan. 1, 1650-1. He made his will in 1702. It was presented for probate May 4, 1707. He had eight children.

After the removal of Mr. John Mayo to Boston, in 1655,

Mr. Thomas Crosby was engaged as a religious teacher to carry on the Sabbath services, at a salary of £50. Mr. Crosby was a graduate of Harvard college in 1653. He was an author, and his works have been noticed by Mr. Sibley, late librarian of Harvard college. He seems not to have been a settled preacher. While at Eastham, he was engaged in trade. He resided near the old burying-ground at Eastham, on the place he bought, in 1665, of Jonathan Sparrow and Pandora, his mother. After Mr. Crosby's release as preacher at that place, which was about 1670, he removed to Harwich, now Brewster, and located. Here he was also engaged in trade. He was one of the eight who formed the church at that place in 1700. He died at Boston, while on business, June 13, 1702. Mr. Crosby's wife Sarah, by whom he had twelve children, married John Miller of Yarmouth, April 28, 1703. None of Mr. Crosby's children settled in Eastham. His descendants are widely scattered.

THOMAS WILLIAMS.

Thomas Williams was at Eastham in 1649, and that year a road surveyor. He was at Plymouth in 1635, in the employ of Mrs. Richard Warren, and having said to someone that he neither "feared God or the Devil," was arrested for making a "blasphemous" speech and brought before the court, and though the governor thought that he was deserving of corporal punishment, was easily let off. In 1637, he was eager for a brush with the ferocious Pequots, and offered to go with others, under Mr. Prence and Lieut. Holmes, to fight them, but when upon the point of embarking, word came not to proceed, as the "enemy was as good as vanquished and there would be no need" of the company's service. He married Elizabeth Tart at Plymouth, Nov. 30, 1638. He resided in Eastham, on the north side of Town cove, in Gov. Prence's and Nicholas Snow's neighborhood. He survived his wife, and died aged in 1696. There appears no record of his children. His will bears date May 10, 1692, and was presented for probate Oct. 22, 1696. He had, it is certain, five daughters; four only survived him. He had no sons that survived him, or descendants bearing his surname. Among his grandchildren mentioned

in his will were John Smith and William Nickerson. John Smith seems to have been a favorite. Two of Goodman Williams's daughters married sons of William Nickerson of Chatham, then Monomoy or Monomoiet. Mercy, who married William Nickerson, Jr., about 1670, died in Chatham, very aged, April 7, 1739. Rev. Joseph Lord, pastor of the Chatham church, thus speaks of her:

On the "7 (2.) 1739, died here Mrs. Mercy Nickerson (commonly written here Nickerson) aged 90 years, or more as is judged,—and some say 95,—for she could not tell her own age. She was born in Eastham, and has left a numerous posterity, 146 being now living in this land, besides which there was a daughter of hers that about twenty years ago went to a place called Duck Creek, either in Pennsylvania or West Jersey, of whose posterity her relation here cannot inform who are living; but she carried away eleven children with her when she went." Mr. Lord was afterwards informed by her son that he found 157 of her posterity living here in this country; "and Duck Creek," says Mr. Lord "I am informed is in Penn. on the borders of Maryland."

Mr. Lord was nearly right in his location of "Duck Creek." That part of Pennsylvania now is included in Kent county, Delaware; and the creek flows easterly into Delaware bay. The particular place where this granddaughter of Thomas Williams settled is not now known with certainty. It is probably in the vicinity of Salisbury—a settlement a few miles north of Dover. To this region about 1711, more than thirteen families removed from Monomoy or Chatham. In this county and Queen Ann's in Maryland, are families of Nickersons now residing, whose ancestors undoubtedly went there at that period or afterwards from the Cape. At Lewes, (in Sussex county) a place south of "Duck Creek," on the eastern coast of Delaware, was residing Captain Nathaniel Hall in 1716. He was from Yarmouth, and had been a brave soldier in the Indian wars, and many years a licensed keeper of a house of public entertainment before his removal.

The other daughters who survived Thomas Williams were Sarah, wife of John Nickerson of Monomoy; Mary Hopkins, probably wife of Caleb of Truro, and Elizabeth, an unmarried daughter.

Thomas Williams was a proprietor of land at Saconett, which he sold to Joseph Howland of Duxbury, Nov. 9, 1683.

THOMAS ROBERTS.

Thomas Roberts was an early resident of Eastham. He came from Plymouth. He was a servant of Mr. John Atwood of that township in 1637. He married Mary Paddock, March 24, 1650-1. He resided in that part of Eastham now East Orleans. He sold to Captain Jonathan Sparrow a large tract of land, about 1667. He was not long a resident of Eastham after that date. He was a surveyor of highways in 1657.

*4431.210
No. 34
No. 34.

LIBRARY *of*
C a p e C o d
HISTORY & GENEALOGY

NICHOLAS¹ SNOW *of* Eastham

AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS, TOGETHER WITH
SAMUEL¹ STORRS, THOMAS¹ HUCKINS, ELDER JOHN¹ CHIP-
MAN, AND ISAAC¹ WELLS, ALLIED TO THE SNOWS BY
MARRIAGE.

By JAMES W. HAWES.



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
1916.

Joseph H. Benton Fil.
Aug. 17, 1929.
C
cont.

44431.215
No. 34

NICHOLAS¹ SNOW *of* Eastham

AND SOME OF HIS DESCENDANTS, TOGETHER WITH
SAMUEL¹ STORRS, THOMAS¹ HUCKINS, ELDER JOHN¹ CHIP-
MAN, AND ISAAC¹ WELLS, ALLIED TO THE SNOWS BY
MARRIAGE.

By JAMES W. HAWES.

Copyright, 1916, by Charles W. Swift.

NICHOLAS¹ SNOW OF PLYMOUTH
AND EASTHAM, AND SOME OF
HIS DESCENDANTS.*

FIRST GENERATION.

Nicholas¹ Snow was b. in Eng-
land and came to Plymouth in the
Anne in the latter part of July,
1623.(a) He m. between 1623 and
May 22, 1627, Constance, daughter
of Stephen¹ Hopkins by his first
wife, who came with her father
on the Mayflower.(b) He d. in
Eastham Nov. 15, 1676; she d.
there about the middle of
October, 1677.(c) He resided

in Plymouth until early in 1645,
when with Mr. Thomas Prence
(previously and afterward Gov-
ernor), John Doane, Josias Cook,
Richard Higgins, John Smalley and
Edward Bangs, he settled Nauset
(afterward called Eastham). In
1646 the place was made a town.(d)
The same year he was elected
town clerk. He served as such
for 17 years. He was a deputy to
the General Court for three years
from 1648 and one of the select-
men for 7 years from 1663.(e) He
resided at Skaket, now Orleans.(e1)
In the casting of lots in 1623 his
premises fell "on the other side
of the towne towards the eele-
river" and butted against Hobbs
Hole.(f)

*An account of him and some
of his descendants is given by
Mrs. Charles L. Alden in the New
England Historical and Genealog-
ical Register (hereinafter cited as
N. E. Reg.), vol. 47, pp. 81, 186,
341; vol. 48, pp. 71, 188; vol. 49,
pp. 71, 202, 451; vol. 51, p. 204.

(a) 2 Mayflower Descendant
(hereinafter cited as Mf.), 179;
New England's Memorial, 47, 48;
12 Plym. Col. Recs. 5, 6.
(b) 1 Mf. 148-154; 2ib. 118.
(c) Eastham Recs.; 3 Mf. 167.

May 22, 1627, in the division of
the cattle, he with his wife formed
part of the seventh company,
headed by his father-in-law,
Stephen¹ Hopkins. This company

(d) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 81, 102.
(e) Deyo's Barnstable County,
728-730.
(e1) Ib. 722.
(f) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 5 and 6.

obtained two she goats and a black weaning calf, to which was to be added that year's calf of the black cow which fell to John Shaw and his company.(g)

Nicholas¹ Snow was a freeman of Plymouth in 1633.(h)

In 1633 he was rated at 18 shillings, payable in corn at six shillings per bushel,(i) and in 1634 at 12 shillings.(j)

Oct. 1, 1634, Nicholas¹ Snow was one of seven men appointed to lay out highways in Plymouth before November 15 next.(k)

He evidently assigned his servant to John Cooper, for on Jan. 5, 1634-5, the servant expressed his willingness to serve out his time with Cooper, according to the tenor of his indenture.(l)

Twiford West, a servant of Governor Edward Winslow under an indenture for six years, was assigned to Nicholas Snow, but after some trial he disliked to be with Snow and proposed to Winslow if he would take him back that he would serve him an additional year. Thereupon Winslow compounded with Snow, and an indenture for seven years from the date of the first indenture was entered into between Winslow and West and agreed to by Snow Feb. 12, 1635-6.(m)

March 14, 1635-6, it was arranged that Nicholas Snow should

mow at Wellingsley and have "one small jag of hey" from the marsh assigned to John Faunce and Mr. Coomb.(n)

Oct. 5, 1636, he was appointed one of three arbitrators to settle the controversy between Joseph Biddle and Edward Doty, they having brought cross actions against each other, "their matters being raw & impfect."(o)

March 7, 1636-7, he was one of the freemen at the court then held.(p)

March 20, 1636-7, he was given the same hay ground at Wellingsley as the year before.(q)

His house was east of the way to Eel river from Plymouth laid out by a jury and confirmed by the court July 7, 1637. It seems to have been between the houses of Edward Bangs and Stephen¹ Hopkins.(r)

Oct. 2, 1637, Nicholas¹ Snow was on a jury. Also, March 6, 1637-8; March 3, 1639-40; Sept. 1, 1640; June 1, 1641; Sept. 6, 1641; March 7, 1642-3, and June 6, 1643.(s)

May 7, 1638, Nicholas¹ Snow de-sired land towards the Six Mile brook.(t)

June 5, 1638, he was on the grand jury.(u)

The same day he was on a jury of inquest upon the body of John

(g) Ib. 11.

(h) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 4.

(i) Ib. 9, 10.

(j) Ib. 26, 27.

(k) Ib. 31.

(l) Ib. 33.

(m) Ib. 37.

(n) Ib. 40, 41.

(o) Ib. 44.

(p) Ib. 52.

(q) Ib. 57.

(r) Ib. 58, 59.

(s) 7 ib. 7, 8, 16, 17, 20, 23, 34, 35.

(t) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 83.

(u) Ib. 87.

England found dead on the Plymouth flats. They found he was drowned while sailing in a canoe, that the canoe was the cause of his death, and that it should be forfeited to the King.(v)

By deed dated July 6, 1638, he sold to Samuel Eddy the house and garden where he dwelt in Plymouth, with the fence in and about the same, for the consideration of £12 sterling, to be paid in forty bushels of good merchantable Indian corn at current rates, and if it should fall short, then Eddy was to make up the sum in money or other commodity. The price was to be paid and delivery given by the last day of the following October.(w)

July 2, 1638, Mr. Snow requested more hay ground and was allowed to cut hay that year upon the meadow reserved for the town of Plymouth.(x)

August 7, 1638, he desired five or six acres of land lying on the N. side of the land lately granted to Mr. Atwood.(y)

March 3, 1639-40, he is mentioned as one of the surveyors of highways for Plymouth.(z)

March 3, 1639-40, by act of the General Court, it was provided that "the purchasers, or old comers" should make choice of two or three plantations for themselves and their heirs, and on Dec. 1, 1640, they gave notice that they had chosen three places, of which

one was on Cape Cod from Yarmouth from sea to sea to three miles east of Namskaket, and the others on the mainland, all the rest of the land in the colony being surrendered "to the body of freemen," except such as had been already granted to plantations or individuals. Nicholas Snow was one of the purchasers.(a)

May 5, 1640, he was one of a committee of five appointed to view all the meadows at Greens Harbor that had not been granted, to measure them and report to the next court.(b)

June 2, 1640, he is mentioned as one of the surveyors of highways for Plymouth.(c)

Nov. 2, 1640, he was granted ten acres of meadow "in the South Meddows towards Aggawam, Colebrook Meddowes."(d)

Dec. 1, 1640, with two others he was presented for not mending the highways at the "Second Brooke, Smylt River, New Bridge, and other places." They were discharged upon condition "that they shall repaire the heigh wayes this yeare."(e)

Feb. 1, 1640-1, with Edward Bangs and Joshua Pratt he was appointed to lay out Sarah Morton's lot at the Eel River.(f)

He was one of those in Plymouth in August, 1643, between 16

(v) Ib. 88.

(w) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 31.

(x) 1 ib. 90.

(y) Ib. 93.

(z) Ib. 141.

(a) 2 ib. 4, 5, 177.

(b) 1 ib. 151.

(c) Ib. 155.

(d) Ib. 166.

(e) 2 ib. 5.

(f) Ib. 7.

and 60 years of age, able to bear arms.(g)

June 6, 1644, by his will Stephen¹ Hopkins gave his mare to his daughter Constance, wife of Nicholas¹ Snow.(h)

Probably in 1646 he sold to Thomas Morton for twelve pounds, the payment of six pounds whereof is acknowledged and the other six pounds were to be paid at the next harvest in good merchantable corn or cattle, all his house, buildings and the upland thereunto belonging and adjoining, with two acres of meadow lying at the High Pines and ten acres of upland meadow lying at Colebrook Meadows, containing in all 52 acres more or less, with the fencing in and about the same, said premises being in the town of Plymouth.(i)

March 10, 1645-6, he sold to Nathaniel Morton for ten shillings to be paid in merchantable corn at the next harvest one acre of upland lying at or near Wellingsley Brook in Plymouth.(j)

June 1, 1647, he and Edward Bangs are mentioned as surveyors of highways of Nauset.(k)

June 7, 1648, he was a committee or deputy to the General Court from Nauset.(l) The same date he was appointed "to take up the excise" at Nauset.(m)

June 4, 1650, with Mr. John Doane he was a deputy from Nauset to the General Court.(n)

June 3, 1652, he was one of the deputies to the General Court from Eastham.(o)

June 7, 1653, he is mentioned as one of the surveyors of highways for Eastham.(p)

In 1655 he and his son Mark signed the call to the Rev. John Mayo to become the minister of Eastham.(q)

June 3, 1657, he was a deputy to the General Court.(r)

July 9, 1660, Nicholas Snow, Edward Bangs and Josias Cook took oath before Gov. Prence as to Cook's share of the South meadow.(r1)

Nicholas¹ Snow was one of those who took the inventory of Richard Sparrow Jan. 22, 1660-1.(s)

June 3, 1662, he is mentioned as constable of Eastham.(t)

Nov. 28, 1664, Nicholas Snow brought into Eastham a gallon and a half of liquor.(u)

March 5, 1667-8, a shipwrecked carpenter, Crispen Wadlen, having stayed about three weeks at Ralph Smith's house in Eastham, complained that Smith oppressively kept a certain parcel of tools of his. Smith was ordered to deliver the tools to Nicholas Snow

(g) 8 ib. 189.

(h) 2 Mf. 12.

(i) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 134.

(j) Ib. 135.

(k) 2 ib. 115.

(l) Ib. 123.

(m) Ib. 125.

(n) Ib. 154.

(o) 3 ib. 9.

(p) Ib. 33.

(q) 47 N. E. Reg. 82.

(r) 3 Plym. Col. Recs. 115.

(r1) 15 Mf. 30.

(s) 12 ib. 58.

(t) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 15.

(u) Ib. 100.

to be sent to Wadlen, and was allowed to keep a parcel of cotton wool which he had of Wadlen as compensation for his entertainment.(v)

June 3, 1668, he is mentioned as one of the selectmen of Eastham.(w) Also, June 7, 1670;(x) June 3, 1671;(y) June 5, 1672;(z) June 3, 1673;(a) June 3, 1674;(b) June 1, 1675.(c)

Nicholas¹ Snow, April 5, 1669, was witness to a deed of land in Yarmouth.(c1)

June 5, 1671, he is mentioned as one of the surveyors of highways of Eastham.(d)

He having died, on March 6, 1676-7, letters of administration on his estate were granted to his widow Constant and his sons Mark and John Snow.(e)

His will is dated Nov. 14, 1676, and was witnessed by the Rev. Samuel Treat and by Thomas Paine, Sr. It was proved at Plymouth March 5, 1676-7. The inventory of the personal estate, amounting to £102 10s. 9d., was sworn to by the widow March 22, 1676-7, before John Freeman, Assistant. The inventory included two oxen, appraised at £7 10s.; four cows, £7 5s.; £2 5s. in silver

money; a psalm book and another book, 1s. each; a parcel of old books, 4s.; 27 sheep, £9; 59 lbs. of wool, £2 10s.; 3 hives of bees, £1 10s.; 4 swine, £1 6s.; horses, £4 10s.; 1 five year old steer, £2 10s.; young cattle, £4 1s.; Indian corn, £5 8s.

In his will he gave to his son Mark Snow 20 acres of upland at Namskaket (Orleans) where his house then stood and two acres of meadow and all his broken marsh there; also two-thirds of his great lot at Satucket (Brewster) lying next to the Indians' ground.

He gave land to his sons Joseph, Stephen and John. His youngest son Jabez was living with him and to him he gave most of the residue of his land. To his wife Constant Snow he gave all his cattle, horses, sheep and swine, with all his movable goods, "to be att her Disposall for the Comfort and support of her life," and after her decease to be equally divided amongst all his children. To his wife he also gave the use and disposal during her life of the part of his house she was dwelling in and after her death to his son Jabez. He gave to his wife ten acres of upland at Pochet (East Orleans), "for her Desposall for the Comfort of her life, but if shee need it not, and leave it undisposed; I Give it then to my son Steven Snow." He also upon like conditions gave 20 acres of upland at Billingsgate (Wellfleet) to his wife, but if she left it undisposed of, then to his son Jabez Snow. He gave out of his estate after his wife's death ten shillings "to the Church of Eastham for

(v) Ib. 175, 176.

(w) Ib. 182.

(x) 5 Ib. 35.

(y) Ib. 57.

(z) Ib. 92.

(a) Ib. 113.

(b) Ib. 144.

(c) Ib. 164.

(c1) 15 Mf. 51.

(d) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 58.

(e) Ib. 220.

the furniture of the Table of the Lord, with pewter or other Necessaries." He named Deacon Samuel Freeman and John Mayo as overseers of his will.

His will and inventory are recorded in Vol. 3, pt. 2, pp. 74-77, of Plym. Col. Wills. They are printed at length in 3 Mayflower Descendant, 167-174.(f)

Children.

Mark, b. in Plymouth, May 9, 1628.(g)

Mary, b. ; m.(i) Thomas Paine about 1650; had 10 children and d. in 1704.(h) John Howard Payne, author of "Home, Sweet Home," was a descendant.(j)

Sarah, b. ; m.(k) Jan. 25, 1654-5, in Eastham William Walker. She had children born in Eastham.(l)

Joseph, b. ; m. Mary ; d. Jan. 3, 1722-3.(m) She d. after 1717. They had 11 children.(n) He left a will. Oct. 2, 1689, the choice of Joseph Snow as lieutenant of the military company of Eastham was approved.(o)

(f) His will also appears in 47 N. E. Reg. 83.

(g) East. Recs.; 7 Mf. 14.

(h) 22 N. E. Reg. 61, 62; 2 Paine Family Records (edited by Henry D. Paine) 43.

(i) 3 Mf. 168; 8 ib. 230; 15 ib. 189, 190.

(j) 8 ib. 180; 2 Paine Family Records, 87, 164-166, 224-232, 259, 272, 285-287.

(k) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 15.

(l) 6 Mf. 206.

(m) 3 ib. 231.

(n) Ib. 230.

(o) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 218.

Stephen, b. ; m.(p) in Eastham 1st Oct. 28, 1663, Susannah Rogers, widow of Joseph Rogers and daughter of Stephen and Elizabeth (Ring) Deane; and 2d April 9, 1701, Mary Bigford;(p) d. Dec. 17, 1705. His children were born in Eastham and were by his first wife.(p) In 1684 he was a freeman of Eastham.(q) He left a will. See also 15 Mf. 34 and 51, and 3 Plym. Col. Deeds, 334.

John, b. ; m.(r) in Eastham Sept. 19, 1667, Mary Smalley; d. 1692. She m. 2d Ephraim Doane and d. 1703. John Snow's children were born in Eastham.(r) In 1684 he was a freeman of Eastham.(q) He was sworn as such June 5, 1684.(s) See also 12 Mf. 190, and "The Doane Family," 30.

Elizabeth, b. ; m. Dec. 13, 1665, in Eastham, Thomas Rogers; d. June 16, 1678, leaving children.(s1)

Jabez, b. ; m.(t) before Oct. 29, 1670, Elizabeth, daughter of Ralph Smith; d. Dec. 27, 1690. His children were born in Eastham.(u) June 1, 1680, Jabez Snow was on the grandjury.(v) The same day he was propounded to be a freeman and took the oath of fidelity.(w) June 7, 1681; he was one of the surveyors of highways for Eastham, and was ad-

(p) Eastham Recs.; 8 Mf. 15.

(q) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 208, 209.

(r) Eastham Recs.; 7 Mf. 17.

(s) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 130.

(s1) East. Recs.; 6 Mf. 14.

(t) 5 ib. 51.

(u) 4 Mf. 32; 5 ib. 22.

(v) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 36.

(w) Ib. 42, 43.

mitted a freeman.(x) June 6, 1682, he is mentioned as a surveyor of highways for Eastham.(y) March 5, 1684-5, Elizabeth Snow, wife of Jabez Snow of Eastham, was fined ten shillings for using railing expressions on a Lord's day to the Rev. Samuel Treat.(y1) June 3, 1690, he is mentioned as one of the selectmen of Eastham.(z) June 5, 1690, he was chosen one of the lieutenants for the expedition to Canada.(a) His inventory is printed in the Mayflower Descendant.(b)

Ruth, b. ; m. at Eastham Dec. 10, 1666, John Cole; d. Jan. 27, 1716-17, leaving children.(b1)

Three other children of Nicholas Snow, numbered by Gov. Bradford, are not accounted for. Probably they died young.

SECOND GENERATION.

Mark^a (Nicholas¹) Snow, b.(e) in Plymouth May 9, 1628; m. 1st Anna, daughter of Josiah Cook, in Eastham, Jan. 18, 1654-5.(f) She d.(g) July 24, 1656, and he m.(h)

2d in Eastham, Jan. 9, 1660-1, Jane, daughter of Gov. Thomas Prentice and granddaughter of Elder William Brewster, a Mayflower passenger. He d. in Eastham between Nov. 23, 1694 (date of his will), and Jan. 9, 1694-5 (date of his inventory). His widow d. in Harwich between Dec. 21, 1703 (date of her will), and June 28, 1712 (date of her inventory). She was admitted to the church there in April, 1701.(i) She was born in Plymouth Nov. 1, 1637.(j)

Mark Snow was one of those in Plymouth stated to be between 16 and 60 able to bear arms in August, 1643.(k) He removed with his father to Eastham, where he was town clerk 14 years from 1663, succeeding his father; one of the selectmen 18 years from 1667; and a deputy to the General Court 6 years from 1675.(k1) He was captain of the militia company in 1659.(k2)

June 8, 1655, Mark Snow was propounded to take up his freedom and is mentioned as constable of Eastham.(l)

June 3, 1657, he is mentioned as one of the surveyors of highways for Eastham, and on the same date he was admitted and sworn as a freeman.(m)

(x) Ib. 61, 62.

(y) Ib. 88.

(y1) Ib. 152, 153.

(z) Ib. 242.

(a) Ib. 251.

(b) 12 Mf. 39.

(b1) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 57; 5 Mf. 196, 197.

(e) East. Recs.; 7 Mf. 14.

(f) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 15; Eastham Recs.; 5 Mf. 23; 7 ib. 14; 15 ib. 34.

(g) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 30; East. Recs.; 5 Mf. 23; 7 Mf. 14.

(h) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 28; Eastham Recs.; 7 Mf. 14.

(i) Brewster church recs.; 4 Mf. 245.

(j) Eastham Recs.; 7 Mf. 14; 6 ib. 230.

(k) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 189.

(k1) Deyo, 728-730.

(k2) Deyo, 727.

(l) 3 Plym. Col. Recs. 78.

(m) Ib. 116, 117; 8 ib. 202.

June 4, 1657, and July 7, 1668, he was on a jury.(n) June 5, 1667, he was on the grandjury.(o)

Dec. 24, 1667, Mark Snow and Joseph Snow signed at Eastham a verdict of a jury of inquest, their names being the first two of the subscribers.(p)

June 5, 1671, he is mentioned as one of the selectmen of Eastham.(q) Also, June 5, 1672;(r) June 3, 1673;(s) June 3, 1674;(t) June 1, 1675;(u) June 7, 1676;(v) June 5, 1677;(w) June 5, 1678;(x) June 3, 1679;(y) June 1, 1680;(z) June 7, 1681;(a) June 6, 1682;(b) June 6, 1683;(c) June 3, 1684;(d) June 2, 1685;(e) June, 1686;(f) June, 1689;(g) June 3, 1690.(h)

Feb. 21, 1675, Mark Snow was witness to a deed of John Doane, Jr., to Jonathan Sparrow.(i)

Gov. Thomas Prentice March 13, 1672-3, in his will, gave to his daughter Jane, wife of Mark Snow, his silver tankard, and in his codicil March 28, 1673, a bed. She also had one-eighth of the residue of his estate.(j)

June 1, 1675, he was a deputy from Eastham to the General Court.(k)

Feb. 29, 1675-6, he was appointed one of the council of war for Eastham.(l)

March 6, 1676-7, he was appointed an administrator of the estate of his father, Nicholas Snow, deceased.(m)

Mary Ingham, wife of Thomas Ingham, of Scituate, was indicted for having through witchcraft caused Mehitable Woodworth to fall into violent fits and to suffer great pains. On March 6, 1676-7, she was tried and found not guilty, Mark Snow being on the jury. He was also on the jury that the same day tried three Indians, Timothy Jacked (alias Canjuncke), Nassamaquat and Pompacanshe, who were indicted for murdering John Knowles, John Tisdall, Sr., and Samuel Atkins. The verdict as to Jacked and Nassamaquat was: "Wee find they are very suspicious of the murder charged on them," and as to Pompacanshe: "wee find nothing against him." The Indians were sent out of the country, the last named be-

(n) 7 ib. 83, 147.

(o) 4 ib. 148.

(p) Ib. 176.

(q) 5 ib. 57.

(r) Ib. 92.

(s) Ib. 113.

(t) Ib. 144.

(u) Ib. 164.

(v) Ib. 195.

(w) Ib. 230.

(x) Ib. 257.

(y) 6 ib. 10.

(z) Ib. 35.

(a) Ib. 59.

(b) Ib. 84.

(c) Ib. 108.

(d) Ib. 129.

(e) Ib. 168.

(f) Ib. 186.

(g) Ib. 207.

(h) Ib. 242.

(i) 14 Mf. 176. His signature is

reproduced on a page fronting 129 in that volume.

(j) 3 ib. 204, 205.

(k) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 165.

(l) Ib. 186.

(m) Ib. 220.

cause he was a prisoner taken in war.(n)

June 5, 1677, he was a deputy from Eastham to the General Court.(o)

Oct. 30, 1678, he was with John Rogers made administrator of the estate of Thomas Rogers, late of Eastham, deceased.(p)

Feb. 26, 1679-80, with Jonathan Sparrow he was a witness to an agreement of Samuel³ Howes (son of Joseph² and grandson of Thomas¹ Howes) with his uncle Thomas² Howes.(q)

In June, 1686, he was a deputy to the General Court from Eastham.(r) Also, in June, 1689, and Aug. 14, 1689.(s)

Mark Snow was witness to the will of Robert Wixam of Eastham Oct. 1, 1686, and Oct. 11, 1686, he was one of those who took his inventory.(t)

Mark Snow was one of those who took the inventory of William Freeman of Eastham in 1687.(u)

March 5, 1688-9, Mark Snow witnessed the codicil of Giles Hopkins. He made oath to it April 16, 1690.(v)

His will is printed in full in 47 New England Historical and Genealogical Register, at page 85. It was proved Jan. 16, 1694-5, and is

recorded in 1 Barnstable Probate Records, page 111. Letters testamentary were granted to his widow April 13, 1695.(w) The inventory of his estate amounted to £86 14s. for real estate and £45 16s. 1d. for personal property.(x) He does not name his daughters in his will.

He made his wife Jane Snow executrix and gave to her his entire personal estate after his debts and funeral charges were paid. He gave his real estate to his three sons Nicholas, Thomas and Prence. The last named obtained the testator's dwelling house after his wife's decease or widowhood and all the land adjoining and 15 acres of land "above ye common road," three acres of meadow lying "below my now dwelling house," and after his wife's decease "ye remainder of my lot of land in ye before specified Indian fields," at Satuckett, of which Nicholas received one half. He also gave Prence after his wife's decease an acre and a half of meadow "in Namskaket meadow," and one third of the land lying undivided after his wife's death. He also gave him "my musket cat-box and cutlass and one pistol." He gave to his son Thomas "my back sword and one pistol" and to his grandson Jonathan Snow "my carbine." The witnesses were Samuel Knowles, Thomas Crosby, Jr., and Jonathan Sparrow.

The will of his widow, Mrs Jane Snow, of Harwich, is printed

(n) Ib. 223, 224.

(o) Ib. 232.

(p) Ib. 271.

(q) 6 ib. 30, 31.

(r) Ib. 186, 187.

(s) Ib. 206, 211.

(t) 2 Mf. 177, 178.

(u) 1 Barn. Prob. Recs. 9; 3 Mf. 177; 13 ib. 19.

(v) 1 Barn. Prob. Recs. 113.

(w) 1 Barn. Prob. Recs. 110.

(x) Ib. 112.

in full in 47 New England Historical and Genealogical Register; at page 186, and is recorded in 3 Barnstable Probate Records, page 271. It was proved July 2, 1712. She makes her son Nicholas and her brother Jonathan Sparrow executors. She gives articles to her three sons Nicholas, Thomas and Prence, to her daughter Anne Atwood and to her grandchildren Jane Nickerson and Jane Snow. Her cattle she divides equally among all her children. The rest of her moveable estate she divides equally between her two daughters Mary and Sarah. The witnesses to her will are Mary Sparrow and Martha Cobb. She signs with a mark. Her inventory amounted to £39 16s. 8d. in personal property.(x1)

Children,

all born in Eastham.(y)

By 1st wife:

Anna, b. in Eastham July 7, 1656; m.(z) Eldad Atwood in Eastham Feb. 14, 1683-4. Her children were born in Eastham.(z)

By 2d wife:

Mary, b. Nov. 30, 1661; m. in Eastham Jan. 22, 1690-1, William² (Nicholas², William¹) Nickerson. Her children were born in Eastham.(a)

Nicholas, b. Dec. 6, 1663; m.(b) in Eastham Lydia Shaw April 4, 1689. He moved to Har-

wich in 1706 and about 1729 to Rochester, where he d. about 1754, leaving a will. His children were mostly born in Eastham.(b) June 3, 1690, he was admitted a freeman of Eastham.(c)

Elizabeth, b. May 9, 1666; d.(d) Jan. 18, 1675-6.

Thomas, b. Aug. 6, 1668; m.(e) 1st Feb. 8, 1692-3, Hannah, daughter of Lt. Silas Sears, who was b. in December, 1672,(e) and 2d(f) Sept. 30, 1706, Lydia Hamlin, widow of Eleazer Hamlin, and daughter of Paul Sears; d. after 1732. He had children by both wives born in Eastham.(g) See Sears Genealogy, 42, 43, 48.

Sarah, b. May 10, 1671.

Prence, b. May 22, 1674.

Elizabeth, b. June 22, 1676; d. March 22, 1677-8.

Hannah, b. Sept. 16, 1679.

THIRD GENERATION.

Prence² (Mark,² Nicholas¹) Snow, b. in Eastham May 22, 1674; m. Hannah, daughter of Samuel Storrs of Barnstable;(h) d. in Harwich July 7, 1742, in his 69th year. He was first ensign and then lieutenant of the military company.

Prence Snow's wife was admitted to the Harwich church March 6, 1708-9. His children, Jabez, Samuel, Prence, Hannah and Mercy, were baptized March 20, 1708-9.(i) He

(x1) 3 Barn. Prob. Recs. 273.

(y) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 30, 58; Eastham Recs.; 5 Mf. 23; 7 ib. 14, 15; 15 ib. 36, 37.

(z) 4 ib. 141.

(a) Ib. 33.

(b) Har. Recs.; 4 Mf. 207.

(c) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 239.

(d) East. Recs.; 7 Mf. 14.

(e) 8 ib. 13.

(f) 4 ib. 177.

(g) Ib. 175, 177, 178; 8 ib. 13.

(h) Brewster Gravestone Recs. 57.

(i) 4 Mf. 247; Brewster Ch. Recs.

was admitted July 17, 1720.(j) She d. in Harwich between Oct. 19, 1751 (date of her will), and Dec. 19, 1751 (date of probate).

Prence Snow was chosen one of the selectmen in 1718 and served for 13 years.(k)

May 18, 1711, Prence Snow was one of the purchasers from John Quason and other Indians of a large tract of land in what is now Harwich and Brewster, besides Monomoy Great Beach and Strong Island in Chatham.(l)

April 19, 1714, the proprietors met in the house of Nicholas Snow within the present limits of Brewster, and divided the lands in Harwich. Of the portion N. of the road from Chatham to Yarmouth Prence Snow obtained the 19th lot, and of the portion S. of that road, the 5th lot.(m)

In 1713 he was a lot owner in "Sipsons Land" in what is now East Brewster.(n)

Prence Snow of Harwich, March 23, 1720-1, conveyed to Jonathan Sparrow of Eastham for £14 10s., his half of a lot of land in Harwich in the tract lately purchased of the Sipsons and called the 17 shares purchase.(o)

In 1724 Ensign Prence Snow bought one of the 23 spots for a pew in the new church for £6.(p)

In the drawing of the "Little

Division" in the Quason purchase Oct. 14, 1730, he drew the 20th lot.(p1)

Prence Snow left a will, dated Jan. 13, 1740-1, and proved July 20, 1742.(q) He made his son Jabez sole executor, and mentions also his wife Hannah, his daughter Mary Burgess, his granddaughter Hannah Snow, his grandsons Mark and Prence Snow, his granddaughter Mary Snow, and his son Jonathan Snow. His sons Jabez and Jonathan were residuary devisees of his real estate. The inventory of his real and personal estate was dated June 17, 1742, and amounted to £1515 5s. 6d.(q1) His widow March 23, 1746-7, joined in an agreement with her sisters dividing the land her father, Samuel Storrs, had left them, she obtaining one-fifth.(q11) She left a will, dated October 19, 1751, and proved Dec. 19, 1751.(q2) The inventory of her estate, taken Jan. 14, 1751-2, amounted to £66 5s. 10d. in personal property.(q3) She mentions her daughter Mary Burgess, her granddaughter Hannah Snow (daughter of her deceased son Samuel), her grandson Prince Snow, her granddaughter Mary Snow (daughter of her deceased son Prince), and her sons Jabez and Jonathan, who with her

(j) 5 Mf. 18.

(k) 2 Freeman, 532, 759.

(l) Deyo, 832; Old Superior Ct. Recs. No. 63,888.

(m) Deyo, 533, 534.

(n) Deyo, 834, 835.

(o) 14 Mf. 179, 180.

(p) 2 Freeman, 504.

(p1) Deyo, 834; Old Superior Ct. Recs. No. 30,339.

(q) 6 Barn. Prob. Recs. 227.

(q1) Ib. 230.

(q11) 5 Mansfield (Conn.) Land Book, 174; 51 N. E. Reg. 76.

(q2) 8 Barn. Prob. Recs. 486.

(q3) Ib. 505.

daughter Mary Burgess are her residuary legatees. Her son Jabez is made sole executor. The will is signed with a mark.

Children,

born in Harwich:(r)

Jabez, b. Nov. 11, 1699.

Hannah, b. Nov. 29, 1701.

Samuel, b. Dec. 16 1703; m.

Mary, daughter of Stephen and Sarah (Howes) Hopkins March 6, 1729-30; d. July 26, 1730.(s)

Mercy, b. Nov. 18, 1705.

Prence, b. Oct. 26, 1707; m.

Jane ; d. May 24, 1740.(t)

Jonathan, b. Dec. 22, 1709.

David, b. Dec. 22, 1709.

Mary, b. Sept. 10, 1712; m.

Burgess.

Copy of

WILL OF PRENCE SNOW.

In the Name of God Amen January the thirteenth 1740 I Prence Snow of Harwich in the County of Barnstable within the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England Gentleman being weak in body but of Perfect mind and memory thanks be given to God therefore calling to mind the mortality of my Body and knowing yt it is appointed for all men once to Dye do make & ordain this my Last will and Testament that is to say principally and first of all I Give and recommend my Soul into the hands of God yt Gave it and my body I recommend to the Earth to be buried in

Decent Christian burial at the Discretion of my Exectr herein after named Nothing doubting but at the Resurrection I shall receive ye same again through ye mighty Power of God and as Touching such worldly Estate wherewithall it hath pleased God to bless me in this Life I Give Demise and Dispose of the same in the following manner and form.

Imprimis I will that all my Just Debts and funeral charges be well and truly paid out of my moveable or personal estate and then I Give and bequeath unto Hannah my well beloved wife the use and Improvement of the one third of all my upland and meddow During her Natural Life Also my will is yt my wife have the whole and sole Disposal of all the Land her Father gave her Lying in Mansfield in Connecticut further I Give to my wife all my Personall or moveable estate after my Debts and ye Legacies herein given out are all paid out I also give unto her the use and Improvement of my three eighths in ye wind Gristmill whh I own in partnership with my Neighbours during her Life I also give and bequeath to my well beloved wife ye use and Improvement off of ye Westerly half of my Dwelling house with half my Barn so long as she shall remain my widdow.

Item I give and bequeath to my well beloved and Natural Daughter Mary Burg ye southerly part of a half a Lot of Land that I bought of my brother Nicholas Snow scituate in Harwich at ye southerly from Samuell Crosbey Land near the Clift pond from ye middle of a Deep Valley yt comes

(r) Har. Recs.; 4 Mf. 176, 177.

(s) Brewster Gravestone Rec. 58; Har. Recs.; 8 Mf. 35.

(t) Har. Recs.; 13 Mf. 71; Brewster Gravestone Recs. 57.

up from ye Clift pond and runs across ye said half lot to ye south end of said half lot to her her Heirs and assigns forever and also I give unto her my said Daughter Mary one hundred pounds worth of ye old Tenor out of my moveable Estate with what she hath had since marriage.

Item I Give and bequeath unto my Granddaughter Hannah Snow fifty pounds in bills of credit of ye old Tenor or ye value of fifty pounds in Land out of my Real Estate to her her heirs & assigns forever.

Item I Give and bequeath unto my Grandson Mark Snow my Gun and Cutlass and Catouch-box.

Item I Give and bequeath to my Natural Grandson Prence Snow that Lot of Land that I bought and hold by Deed from Jacob Davis and another half Lot that bought and hold by Deed from Paul Sears and John Wing and my part of a Lot whh I hold in Partnership with Edmund Freeman Esq. being on the Long pond and a piece of meddow yt I bought of Jonathan Bangs & a half share Lot of meddow yt I had of Thomas Clarke, Esqr. to him his Heirs & assigns forever he my said Grandson Prence Snow paying out to my Granddaughter Mary Snow a Legacie of fifty pounds in full for her Portion out of my Estate which I will and bequeath to her.

Item. I Give to my Natural son Jabez Snow Ten acres of Land where his Dwelling house now stands and one quarter of the wind grist mill after his mother's Decease to him his Heirs and assigns forever.

Item I Give and bequeath to my Natural son Jonathan Snow & to his Heirs and assigns forever my other half Quarter of the wind grist mill

Item I Give and bequeath unto my Natural & well beloved sons Jabez Snow and Jonathan Snow equally between them & to their Heirs & assigns forever all the Remainder of my upland and meddow with the fences to ye same belonging only Reserving to my wife the Use and Improvement of one third as aforesd during her Life & then the whole to the said Jabez Snow and Jonathan Snow as abovesaid and I do hereby constitute make appoint and Ordain by above named son Jabez Snow to be my whole and sole Execr. of this my Last Will & Testament and I do hereby utterly disallow revoke and Disannull all & every other former Testaments wills Legacies & bequests & executors by me in any wise before named willed or bequeathed Ratifying and Confirming this and no other to be my Last will and Testament In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the day and year above written

Prence Snow (Seal)

Signed Sealed Published Pronounced & Declared by the said Prence Snow to be his Last Will and Testament in the Presence of us the Subscribers

Joseph Payne
John Crosbee
Chillingth Foster.

Copy of

WILL OF HANNAH SNOW.

In the Name of God Amen this 19th day of Octor. Anno Domini 1751 I Hannah Snow of Harwich in the County of Barnstable Within the province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England being the widdow of Prince Snow of said Harwich Deceased being week in body and well stricken in years but of Disposing mind and memory Thanks be to god therefore calling to mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to die do make and ordain this my Last will and Testament That is to say Principally and first of all I give and Recomend my Soul into the Hands of God that gave it and my body I Recommend to the Earth to be buried in Decent Christian Burial at the Discretion of my Exe^r. hereinafter named & nothing doubting but at the General Resurrection I shall Receive the same again by the mighty power of God and as Touching such worldly Estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this Life I give Demise and Dispose of the same In the following manner and form.

Imprimis I will that my Just Debts and funeral Charges be well & Truly paid by my Exe^r. and then I give and Bequeath unto my well beloved Daughter Mary Burge and to her Heirs and assigns forever six pounds Thirteen Shillings and four pence Lawfull money of New England to

be Leivd. out of my Estate as also my best Feather Bed Bedstead and Curtain and also the furniture belonging to it and my Brass Kittle and my Pewter Platter marked with the Letters S. S. M. on it and all my wearing apparel.

Item I Give and Bequeath to my Grandaughter Hannah Snow Daughter to my son Samuell Snow Deceas'd & to hir heirs and assigns forever the sum of two pounds Thirteen Shillings and four pence Lawfull money of New England to be Leivd. out of my Estate.

Item I Give and Bequeath to my Grandson Prince Snow my Deceas'd Husbands Silver Shoe Buckels. *

Item I Give and Bequeath unto my two sons Jabez and Jonathan Snow and to their Heirs and Assigns forever all that Hundred pounds Old Tenor which my sd Deceased Husband sold a piece of Land for to James Ellis and Then I give and Bequeath unto my above named two sons and to my above named Daughter Burgis and to their heirs and assigns forever all the Rest of my moveable Estate both indoors and without to be equally divided among them three or among their Heirs or assigns and I do hereby utterly disallow Revoke and Disanul all and every other former Testaments wills Leagacies and Bequests and Exe^rs by me in any ways Before named willed and Bequeathed Rattifying this and no other to be my last will and Testament and do constitute make and Ordain my son Jabez Snow to be my whole and sole Exe^r. of this my last will and Testament In Witeess whereof I have here-

unto set my hand and seal the
day and year above written.

hir

Hannah X Snow (Seal)
mark

Signed Sealed Published
Pronounced and Declared By
the said Hannah Snow to
her last will & Testamt. In
presence of us &c

John Snow

Thomas Crosby

Philip Selew

* Item I Give and bequeath to
my Grandaughter Mary Snow
Daughter of my son Prince Snow
Deceased one silver spoon marked
P. S. H.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Jabez⁴ (Prence,³ Mark,² Nich-
olas¹) Snow, b. Nov. 11, 1699; m.(u)
April 2, 1724, Elizabeth⁴ Lewis, b.
August 28, 1701, daughter of Dea-
con John³ (Edward,² George¹)
Lewis, of Barnstable, and Elizabeth
Huckins, his wife; d. probably
shortly before 1770.

In 1725 he dwelt at Namska-
ket.(v)

He was chosen one of the select-
men in 1739 and served for 29
years.(w)

In 1742 he was executor of his
father's estate and in 1751 of his
mother's.

Feb. 13, 1741-2, Jabez Snow and
his wife, signed a release for her
portion of her father's estate.(x)

Oct. 22, 1742, he was appointed

guardian of Prince Snow and Mary
Snow, children of his brother
Prince Snow, Jr.,(y) and Dec. 9,
1756, he rendered his account as
guardian of Prince.(z)

In 1743 Jabez Snow and William
Freeman were appointed agents to
agree with the agents of Eastham
respecting the rates of persons in
either town owning lands or
meadows in the other.(a)

Oct. 10, 1758, Mr. Jabez Snow
was chosen by the legislature one
of the guardians of the Indians of
Harwich, Yarmouth and Eastham,
but by inadvertence the resolve
was not laid before the governor.
Therefore a resolve was passed
Jan. 3, 1759, re-electing them and
ratifying their acts.(b)

In 1760, when the meeting house
was repaired, Jabez Snow was one
of the precinct committee.(c)

Children,

born in Harwich:(d)

Elizabeth, b. Nov. 12, 1724.

Mark, b. Oct. 13, 1727.

Sarah, b. July 12, 1729.

Mehitable, b. April 22, 1731;
bap. April 25, 1731.(e) She m.(f)
1st Aug. 23, 1753, Samuel⁵ (Nathan-
iel,⁴ Stephen,³ Giles,² Stephen¹)

(y) 6 Barn. Prob. Recs. 187, 188.

(z) 9 ib. 264.

(a) Deyo, 510.

(b) 16 Mass. Prov. Laws (Appen-
dix, vol. 11), 241; 16 Mf. 241.

(c) Deyo, 903.

(d) Har. Recs.; 8 Mf. 162.

(e) Brewster Church Recs.; 6
Mf. 217. John Snow had a daugh-
ter Mehitable, b. Jan. 16, 1733-4
(8 Mf. 163), but she d. in May,
1755 (10 Mf. 124).

(f) Har. Recs.

(u) 2 Otis's Barnstable Families,
139.

(v) 2 Freeman, 506.

(w) Ib. 532, 759; Deyo, 845.

(x) Barn. Prob. Recs.

Hopkins of Harwich, who d. Nov. 15, 1761;(g) 2d Reuben Ryder, of Chatham, Oct. 16, 1766,(h) who d. before April 30, 1773; and 3d Deacon Paul Crowell, of Chatham, May 4, 1775.(h) She d. before June 29, 1813. She had children by all three husbands. Her daughter Mercy Hopkins m. John^a (John,⁴ Isaac,² John,² Edmond¹) Hawes, of Chatham.(i)

Samuel, b. Jan. 31, 1735-6.

Mercy, b. Nov. 22, 1739.

Hannah, b. March 5, 1741-2.

STORRS.

Samuel¹ Storrs(k) was born in the parish of Sutton cum Lound,(l) Nottinghamshire, England, shortly before Dec. 7, 1640; m. 1st Dec. 6, 1666, in Barnstable, Plymouth colony, Mary, daughter of Thomas Huckins, who d. there Sept. 24, 1683, and 2d Dec. 14, 1685, widow Hester Egard, who d. in Mansfield, Conn., April 13, 1730, aged 88 years. He d. there April 30, 1719.

He was a resident of Barnstable in 1663 and removed to Mansfield about 1698. His 1st wife was a member of the Barnstable church in 1683. He was admitted a member March 8, 1685-6. His will was

(g) Brewster Gravestone Recs. 57.

(h) Chat. Recs.

(i) See "Edmond Hawes" and "Stephen¹ and Giles² Hopkins," by the compiler.

(k) Also written Stores, Storr, and the like.

(l) Composed of the villages of Sutton and Lound. The church was in Sutton.

dated May 22, 1717, and was proved July 7, 1719. He had been possessed of considerable property. By his will he gave his five daughters, Sarah, Hannah, Elizabeth, Lydia and Esther, 160 acres of land at Corry Rock in Mansfield equally, and after his wife's decease all his movables and household stuff within doors and cattle if there were any, Lydia to have the feather bed he lay on with the furniture thereof over and above the rest.

Children,(m)

all born in Barnstable:

By 1st wife:

Mary, b. Dec. 31, 1667; not mentioned in her father's will and probably d. before him.

Sarah, b. June 26, 1670.

Hannah, b. March 28, 1672; m. Prence^s Snow, of Harwich.(m1)

Elizabeth, b. May 31, 1675.

Samuel, b. May 17, 1677.

Lydia, b. June, 1679.

Mehitable, (bap.) Sept. 16, 1683; d. in infancy.

By 2d wife:

Thomas, b. Oct. 27, 1686.

Hester, b. about the middle of October, 1688.

Cordiel, b. Oct. 14, 1692.

Who Hester Egard or her 1st husband was is not known. Her name may also have been written Agard. She had a son John by her 1st husband who went to Mansfield and married.(n) She may also have had a daughter

(m) Barn. Recs.; 12 Mf. 154; 4 Savage's Geneal. Dict. of N. E. 241.

(m1) 51 N. E. Reg. 76.

(n) Ancient Windham, by Weaver, 30.

Esther who d. young. The Boston town records give the birth July 16, 1683, of Esther, daughter of John and Esther Agard.(o)

Charles Storrs, in "The Storrs Family," pp. 49-38 and 75-83, gives an account of Samuel¹ Storrs and his ancestors, printing several wills.

The will of William Storrs (No. 1), of Lound in the parish of Sutton was dated Aug. 3, 1557, and was proved at York Oct. 6, 1557. He mentions his wife Dorothy and the following children:

Robert. (No. 2)

William.

Elizabeth.

Dyonice.

Ellen.

He directs his body to be buried in the church of St. Bartholomew of Sutton.

The will of Robert Storrs (No. 2), husbandman, of Lound in the parish of Sutton and county of Nottingham, was dated May 16, 1588, and proved at York, Feb. 5, 1588-9. He had been twice married. His 2d wife Mabel survived him. He names the following children:

By his 1st wife:

Cordall. (No. 3)

By his 2d wife:

Robert. (A)

John.

Dorothy.

Anne.

He directs that his body shall be buried in the church or church yard "of Sutton and Lound aforesaid."

The will of Cordall Storrs (No. 3) of Lound in the county of Nottingham was dated Feb. 23, 1615-6, and proved at York Oct. 10, 1616. He names his wife Isabel, his mother Mabel, his brothers Robert and John, and his sisters Dorothy and Anne. He names the following children:

Thomas. (No. 4)

William.

Mary.

He directs that he be buried in the church or church yard of Sutton.

No will of Thomas Storrs (No. 4) has been found. He was baptized April 25, 1605, in the parish of SuttoncumLound, and married Mary . Their children were baptized in the parish church as follows:

Thomas, Jan. 27, 1632-3.

Cordall, Sept. 21, 1635.

George, April 29, 1638; d. April, 1653.

Samuel (No. 5), Dec. 7, 1640; the emigrant.

Joseph, Aug. 20, 1643.

Elizabeth, Feb. 8, 1648-9.

Mary, Nov. 2, 1650.

The will of Robert Storrs (A) "of Lound in the Parish of Sutton upon Lound in the Countie of Nottingham," great-uncle of Samuel (No. 5), was dated July 12, 1658, and proved at York March 29, 1662. He was buried in Sutton Dec. 23, 1661. He mentions his deceased brother Cordall Storrs (No. 3), his nephew Thomas (No. 4), son of Cordall, and Thomas's children Thomas, Cordall, Samuel (No. 5) to whom he gives £13, Joseph, Elizabeth and Mary. He directs that he be buried in the parish church of Sutton.

(o) Boston Births, Baptisms, Marriages and Deaths, 159.

The wills of William Storrs, uncle, and Cordall Storrs, brother, of Samuel (No. 5), style the testators yeomen. All the above testators had considerable property.

HUCKINS.

Thomas¹ Huckins(p) was born in England about 1618 and came over to New England before he was 21; m. 1st in 1642 Mary (daughter of Isaac¹ Wells of Barnstable), who was buried July 28, 1648,(q) and 2d Nov. 3, 1648, Rose, widow of Hugh Hillier of Yarmouth,(r) who d. in 1687, aged about 71 years. He was cast away in his vessel in a gale and perished Nov. 9, 1679, in his 62d year.(r1)

He resided first in Boston or vicinity.

In 1637 a military company was formed, and Thomas Huckins was the 6th signer of the roll. March 13, 1638-9, it was incorporated as The Military Company of Massachusetts. It was afterward called The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Company of Massachusetts. In 1639-40 he was chosen ensign.(s)

Mr. Otis, in his "Barnstable Families," vol. 2, pp. 58-65, gives an account of him. He styles him Mr. Thomas Huckins.

He was an exemplary member of

Mr. Lothrop's church. His lot in Barnstable was granted Sept. 14, 1640, and Mr. Otis thinks he was one of the earliest settlers. "As a business man he perhaps had no superior in the colony, certainly not in the town. . . . Mr. Huckins had a landing place or wharf near his house, where he discharged and received freights. He was one of the 'farmers' or partners that hired the Cape Cod fisheries. In 1670 considerable quantities of tar were manufactured in the colony, and he was appointed one of the purchasers." Oct. 4, 1675, he was appointed Commissary General of the colony.(t) He held various colonial and town offices, each for several years, to wit: constable, selectman, deputy to the colony court, member of the council of war for the colony and for the town, member of the committee to audit the colony accounts, surveyor of highways, and member of the grand and petit juries. In 1670 and 1671 he and Mr. Thomas Hinckley were appointed "to look after the minister's rate," and in 1677 he was on a committee to adjust the claims against the col-

erts says it is known that he was one of the number who went to England, and under command of Col. William Rainsburrow of the above company, fought for Cromwell, returning to New England, but he gives no authority, and his statement is at least doubtful.

(t) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 175; Bodge's King Philip's War, 183, 439.

(p) Also written Huckens, Huckings, Huggins, and the like.

(q) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 44, 45; 6 Mf. 138, 139.

(r) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 45.

(r1) 2 Otis, 62, 63, 64.

(s) 1 Roberts's History of The Ancient and Honorable Artillery Co., 9, 10, 12, 28, 84, 136, 234. Rob-

only for expenses incurred in King Philip's war.

March 1, 1652-3, he was licensed "to sell wines and strong waters until the next June court." June 1, 1663, "his former liberty [was] renewed to keep an ordinary at Barnstable." He had probably been authorized to keep an ordinary, or public house, during the previous ten years. He was for several years receiver of the excise imposed on the importation of wines and liquors and powder and shot. In the last mentioned year he was captain of the packet, and he brought into the town for himself 35 gallons of wine and 9 of brandy, besides liquors and powder and shot for other persons. Mr. Otis says:

"After the death of Mr. Lothrop the Barnstable church ceased to act in harmony. Mr. Huckins adhered to the party that invited Mr. William Sergeant to become its pastor. This faction belonged to the political party that in 1656 had become dominant in the colony, and had adopted the narrow sectarian policy that had always ruled in Massachusetts. That Mr. Huckins adopted the intolerant policy of the party to which he belonged does not appear. Though constable in 1657, he lived on friendly terms with his neighbor Nicholas Davis [of Quaker sympathies], and as the notorious Barlow of Sandwich was employed to search the house of Davis, it may be inferred that Huckins declined to act officially in the case. In 1662 Mr. Huckins cordially united with the other faction of the church in the settlement of Mr. Walley, a man of peace and

an able advocate of the tolerant principles of the Rev. Mr. Lothrop." He was a large land owner.(u)

Children,

born in Barnstable:(v)

By 1st wife:

Lydia, b. July 4 and buried July 28, 1644.

Mary, b. March 29, 1646; m. Dec. 6, 1666, Samuel¹ Storrs.

Elizabeth, b. Feb. 27, 1647-8; buried Dec. 28, 1648.

By 2d wife:

John, b. about Aug. 2, 1649.

Thomas, b. April 25, 1651; m. 1st May 1, 1680, Hannah, daughter of John Chipman, and 2d Aug. 17, 1698, Sarah, widow of Samuel Hinckley; left issue.

Hannah, b. Oct. 14, 1653; m.(w) Feb. 24, 1674-5, James Gorham.

Joseph, b. Feb. 21, 1655-6; lost with his father Nov. 9, 1679.

SECOND GENERATION.

John² (Thomas¹) Huckins, b. about Aug. 2, 1649; m. Aug. 10, 1670, Hope, daughter of Elder John¹ Chipman; d. Nov. 10, 1678. His widow m. March 1, 1682-3, Jonathan Cobb, and removed to Middleboro. He was constable in 1672.

Children,

born in Barnstable:

Elizabeth, b. Oct. 1, 1671; m. June 4, 1695, Deacon John² Lewis; d. July 12, 1741.

Mary, b. April 3, 1673; m. in 1690 Nathan Bassett of Sandwich.

(u) See Plym. Col. Recs., vols. 2-8, *passim*.

(v) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 44, 45; Barn. Recs.; 6 Mf. 138, 139.

(w) Barn. Recs.; 5 Mf. 72.

Experience, b. June 4, 1675; m. Thomas Lewis Sept. 28, 1699.

Hope, b. May 10, 1677; m. Thomas Nelson. She d. in Middleboro Dec. 7, 1782, aged 105 years, 6 mos. and 20 days, "the longest liver of any of English descent born in Barnstable."

HILLIER.

Rose Hillier was the widow of Hugh Hillier (or Tilly),(x) who came to Salem from Dorchester, England, or its vicinity, in 1629, in the Lyon's Whelp, under the auspices of the Rev. John White of Dorchester, to serve Sir Richard Saltonstall.(y) He afterward settled in Yarmouth. March 5, 1638-9, with Mr. Nicholas Simpkins and Giles Hopkins he deposed to the will of Peter Werden, the elder, of Yarmouth.(z) March 1, 1641-2, he was with Thomas Starr and another complained of as a scoffer and jeerer at religion and as causing disorder at town meetings, and was ordered to answer at the next court.(a) June 7,

1642, styled planter, he appears on a bond in the sum of £40 that Thomas Starr shall appear at the next court, shall be of good behavior in the meantime and forbear attending town meetings during the pleasure of the court. In the margin it is noted that the bond was released.(b) In August, 1643, he was one of those in Yarmouth between 16 and 60 able to bear arms.(c) June 5, 1644, he is mentioned as one of the surveyors of highways of Yarmouth.(d) His wife's maiden name is not known. They had Deborah, b. in Yarmouth Oct. 30, 1643, and Samuel, b. there about July 30, 1646.(e) He d. in Yarmouth Jan. 28, 1647-8, and was buried the next day.(f)

CHIPMAN.

Elder John¹ Chipman(g) was the only son of Mr. Thomas Chipman of Brinspittal near Dorchester, Dorestshire, England, who had had an estate there; b. about 1621. He had two sisters Hannah and Tamson, who remained in England. His father d. before he left Eng-

(x) In the Plym. Col. Recs. the name is sometimes Tilly and sometimes Hillier. In some places it is Hugh Tilly, alias Hillier. It has been erroneously stated that before his death he was of Barnstable.

(y) 1 Felt's Annals of Salem, 36, 99, 112, 170; 1 Hist. Colls. by Ebenezer Hazard, 280; 4 Savage, 302; Pope, 455, who says he was appointed to help in setting up a sawmill in Salem.

(z) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 117.

(a) 2 ib. 36.

(b) Ib. 41.

(c) 8 ib. 194.

(d) 2 ib. 73.

(e) 8 ib. 45; Barn. Recs.; 6 Mf. 138, 139; 12 ib. 154.

(f) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 4. See also Swift's Old Yarmouth, 65. Pope says the Scituate Church Recs. show the m. of the widow Tilly at "Nocett" Nov. 3, 1648, to Thomas "Higgins." This should be Huckins.

(g) Mr. Otis (v. 1, pp. 153-161) has an account of him. See also Plym. Col. Recs. vols. 2-5, passim.

land and his mother before 1642. He came to New England in May, 1637, in the service of his cousin Mr. Richard Derby, who settled in Plymouth. He had the trade of a carpenter. March 2, 1641-2, Ann Hinde, the wife of William Hoskins, aged about 25 years, being examined before Mr. Edward Winslow in a case between John Darby^(g1) and John Chipman, made oath that she lived in the house of Mr. Darby's father with John Chipman at the time when "the said John Chipman came from thence to New England to serve Mr. Richard Darbey, his brother." That she afterwards came over also to serve the said Richard Darby, "when old Mr. Darbey requested this deponant to comend him to his cozen Chipman, and tell him if hee were a good boy hee would send him over the money that was due to him when hee saw good; and further, whereas this deponant heard the said John Darbey affirme that his money was paid to John Chipmans mother, shee further deposeth that his said mother was dead a quarter of a yeare or therabouts before her old master sent this message to his cozen Chipman."^(h)

Feb. 8, 1657-8, he made a declaration⁽ⁱ⁾ that he supposed himself to be about 37 years old and that the following May it would be 21 years^s since he came from England. He was the only son and heir of Mr. Thomas Chipman, late deceased at Brinspudel, about 5 m. from Dorchester, Dorsetshire, and

he had two sisters, Hannah and Tamson. His father had entailed to him and his heirs a tenement or tenements with a mill and other edifices belonging thereto in Whitchurch of Marshwood Vale near Bridport in Dorsetshire, worth £40 or £50 per annum. His father, while single, had sold them, he thinks about 60 years before, to his kinsman Mr. Christopher Derby of Sturhill near Bridport for only £40 and the agreement to maintain him during life with diet, apparel, &c. Derby gave him only a poor cottage and garden spot. John Derby, late deceased, of Yarmouth, had acknowledged to him (John Chipman) that his father Christopher had done him (John) much wrong.

In August, 1643, he was not on the list of those between 16 and 60 able to bear arms. In 1646 he m. 1st in Plymouth Hope,² second daughter of John¹ Howland and Elizabeth,² (daughter of John¹) Tilley, his wife, Mayflower passengers. He was of Barnstable in 1649. His wife d. there Jan. 8, 1683-4, aged 54 years, and is buried in the ancient burying ground on Lothrop's hill, where her gravestone was standing in 1860.

He m. 2d Ruth Bourne, daughter of Mr. William Sargeant, b. in Charlestown Oct. 25, 1642, who had m. 1st Jonathan, son of Josiah Winslow of Marshfield and 2d Mr. Richard Bourne of Sandwich. Elder John Chipman d. in Sandwich April 7, 1708. His 2d wife

(g1) Usually written Derby.

(h) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 98.

(i) 1 Otis, 153; 35 N. E. Reg. 127, 128; 4 ib. 251.

d. at Sandwich in 1713, leaving no issue. His will and inventory are printed in full in 3 Mayflower Descendant, 181-185.(j) His 2d wife's will appears in the same volume, pp. 185, 186. He later resided in West Barnstable (also called Great Marshes), and about 1680 removed to Sandwich. His 1st wife had joined the Barnstable church Aug. 7, 1650, and he joined Jan. 30, 1652-3. He was chosen one of the Ruling Elders of that church and was solemnly invested with the office April 14, 1670. He was the last Ruling Elder. Upon his removal to Sandwich strong, but ineffectual, efforts were made to retain him in Barnstable. He was a freeman in 1649. He served several terms as deputy to the colony court and as one of the selectmen and in other important public capacities. June 5, 1663, he was one of those taking the Colonial Treasurer's account.(k) "For his public services the court in 1669 granted him one hundred acres of land, between Taunton and Titicut, which was afterwards confirmed to him."

March 7, 1675-6, the court, considering the estate of Capt. John Gorham, ordered Mr. Hinckley, Mr. Chipman and Mr. Huckins "to take Care that such prte of the said estate which belongeth unto his youngest Children be prserved and Disposed of to them as they Come to be of age."(l)

He left a considerable estate.

Children,(m)

all by his 1st wife and all born in Barnstable except the 1st, who was born in Plymouth:

Elizabeth, b. June 24, 1647; m. as his 2d wife, Hosea Joyce of Yarmouth.

Hope, b. Aug. 13, 1652; m. 1st John^a (Thomas¹) Huckins, who d. Nev. 10, 1678. Their daughter Elizabeth, b. Oct. 1, 1671, m. Deacon John^a Lewis June 4, 1695. She m. 2d March 1, 1682-3, Jonathan Cobb.(n) June 3, 1703, she was dismissed from the church in Barnstable to the church in Middleboro. From there the family removed to Portland, Me.

Lydia, b. Dec. 25, 1654; m. as his 3d wife John Sargeant, removed to Malden, and d. March 2, 1730-1, leaving no issue.

John, b. March 2, 1656-7; d. May 29, 1657.

Hannah, b. Jan. 14, 1658-9; m. Thomas^a Huckins May 1, 1680; d. in Barnstable Nov. 4, 1696, leaving issue.

Samuel, b. April 15, 1661; m. Dec. 27, 1686, Sarah, daughter of Elder Henry Cobb; d. in 1723, leaving issue. She d. Jan. 8, 1742-3.

Ruth, b. Dec. 31, 1663; m. April 7, 1682, Eleazer Crocker; d. April 8, 1698, leaving issue.

Bethia, b. July 1, 1666; m. Shubael Dimmock and d. early, probably leaving two children.

Mercy, b. Feb. 6, 1668-9; m.

(j) 3 Barn. Prob. Recs. 228-231.

(k) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 108.

(l) 4 Mf. 153.

(m) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 4, 42, 43; Barn. Recs.; 4 Mf. 121.

(n) Barn. Recs.; 3 Mf. 149.

Deacon Nathaniel Skiff and removed to Chilmark.

John, b. March 3, 1670-1. He was thrice married. He removed to Sandwich and thence to Chilmark and later to Newport, R. I. He left issue.

Desire, b. Feb. 26, 1673-4; m. Hon. Melatiah Bourne of Sandwich Feb. 23, 1695-6; (o) d. March 28, 1705, leaving issue.

WELLS.

Isaac¹ Wells, (p) of Scituate, took the oath of allegiance Feb. 1, 1638-9; (q) m. (probably his 2d wife) Margaret ; d. between June 5, 1673 (date of his will), and Dec. 24, 1673 (date of his inventory). (q1) She d. before Aug. 24, 1675, when her inventory was made. (q2) Oct. 27, 1675, administration on her estate was granted to Mr. John Miller and Isaac Chapman, nearly related to her and entitled to her property. (q3)

Oct. 11, 1639, he was among the members of Rev John Lothrop's church who with him came from Scituate to Barnstable with his family. (r)

He was a grandjurymen March 7, 1642-3. (s) He was admitted to the Barnstable church May 27, 1643. (t)

He was among those between 16 and 60 years of age able to bear arms in Barnstable in August, 1643. (u) June 2, 1649, his land in Barnstable is referred to. (v)

The estate of Anthony Gilpin of Barnstable was indebted to him April 2, 1655, he being styled "goodman Wells." (w) The estate of John Darby of Yarmouth was indebted, Feb. 22, 1655-6, to "goodman Wells." (x)

March 15, 1657-8, he signed the verdict of a jury of inquest with a mark. (y) Oct. 18, 1665, the estate of Mr. Thomas Howes, Sr., of Yarmouth, was indebted to him in the sum of £1. (z)

Deane (a) says that Joseph Wells who m. in Scituate in 1666 Grace Dipple, was probably his son. His daughter Mary m. in Barnstable in 1642 Thomas¹ Huckins. (b) His

(s) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 53.

(t) Barn. Church Recs.; 9 N. E. Reg. 280.

(u) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 193; 4 N. E. Reg. 258.

(v) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 180.

(w) 2 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, pp. 6-8; 14 Mf. 21-23.

(x) 2 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, p. 29; 14 Mf. 112.

(y) 3 Plym. Col. Recs. 146, 147.

(z) 2 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 2, p. 33; 6 Mf. 160.

(a) History of Scituate, 379.

(b) 2 Otis, 62, 63, 64.

(o) At p. 115 (vol. 1) Otis gives another date, viz. 1692-3.

(p) Also written Weels and Welles.

(q) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 110; Pope, 486.

(q1) 3 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, p. 99.

(q2) 3 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, p. 166.

(q3) 5 Plym. Col. Recs. 180, 181.

(r) 2 Freeman, 243, 244.

daughter Lydia m. in Duxbury Nov. 23, 1642, Ralph Chapman. They had a son Isaac, whose house and shop later stood in Barnstable on the lot formerly owned by Isaac¹ Wells.(c) As we have seen, Isaac Chapman was one of the

heirs of the estate of Margaret, widow of Isaac¹ Wells.(d)

(d) Winsor's Duxbury 244, 1 Savage 362, and Pope 94, say that Ralph Chapman married Lydia Wills or Willis; but the compiler judges that Otis is correct in making his wife the daughter of Isaac¹ Wells.

(c) 1 ib. 151.

*4431310

No. 35

No. 35.

LIBRARY *of*
C a p e C o d
HISTORY & GENEALOGY

EDWARD KENWRICK
The Ancestor of the Kenricks or
Kendricks of Barnstable County
and Nova Scotia and His
Descendants



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
1915.

EDWARD KENWRICK

The Ancestor of the Kenricks or
Kendricks of Barnstable County
and Nova Scotia and His
Descendants

Copyright, 1915, by Charles W. Swift.

By
JOSIAH PAINE, Esq.,
of Harwich.

Joseph H. Benton, Jr.
Aug. 7, 1939

X4431.210
No. 35

Cont.

EDWARD KENWRICK, the ancestor of the Kenricks or Kendricks of Barnstable County and Nova Scotia, came, according to tradition, from the "West of England;" but at what place he first came and the date of his landing, as yet nothing has been shown with certainty. By a few it has been thought that he came to the Cape from New Hampshire. He was in Harwich in 1704, as this year the records of the town show that he married for his first wife, Elizabeth Snow. Early in 1705, he was in town prospecting in that part now South Orleans, between the head of Arey's pond, which at that period was known as Potonumecot Saltwater pond, and the fresh pond called by Indians Poponessett, now called Baker's pond, for a tract of land suitable for a farm. He finally selected a parcel of nine acres in the primeval forest on the west side of the old line between Eastham and Harwich established in 1682. The parcel adjoined the line and stretched up from John Yates' land to Poponessett, or Baker's pond as it is now called. It belonged to that noted Indian landholder, John Sipson, who resided at Potonumecot and within the limits of the old town of Harwich.* On the 27th of June, the parcel, "out of ye love" he had for "Mr. Edward Kindwrick, weaver" and for other "valewbel considerations" was conveyed to Mr. Kenwrick by Sipson, with the "liberty" of grazing, cutting timber and fire wood on any of his land "within ye township of Harwich." This tract was his first purchase so far as his deeds that are extant show. Upon a small parcel of land adjoining it, which he purchased of "Mr. John Paine," he erected his first house. In what way Mr. Kenwrick befriended the grantor, as to gain his esteem in so short a period, would interest many of his descendants at this day to know. The Indians had their likes and dislikes, and when once befriended it was never forgotten. The Sipsons, especially John and Thomas, or "little Tom," as he was sometimes called, were large owners of land which came to them by inheritance in Harwich and Eastham, and when Mr. Kenwrick made his purchase but a small portion of it had been sold to the white men. It was well that friendship existed between the two. John Sipson was an Indian of note, and had an influence among the Indians which was helpful to Mr. Kenwrick in many ways.

*The old town of Harwich included South Orleans, which was set off to Eastham in 1772, and Brewster, which was set off as a town in 1803.

Mr. Kenwick purchased at times many acres of upland of the Indians. Among the Indian grantors that his deeds show were John Laurence, Jacob Jacob, Stephen Jacob, Amos Quason, Rebecca Quason, Lusty Tom, Amos Larrance, Samuel Quog, Joseph George, Thomas Boreman and Matthias Quansit. In their deeds they call Mr. Kenwick a "dealer," which shows he was a "shop keeper" or "trader," and confirms the tradition that he was engaged "in trade." He purchased of Peepen and Joshua Ralph, Indians, large tracts in Harwich between Muddy Cove river and Round cove; but no deeds are found showing the dates of the sales, yet other evidence is conclusive of the fact. Mr. Kenwick had meadow at the Great beach which he bought of Judah Hopkins; meadow in Gregory's neck at Matchapoxit,* and meadow at Chequeset near Pleasant bay. He had at the time of his death a tract of twenty acres in Truro, which he had of Experience Turner. He was clerk of the proprietors of the Great beach meadow in 1729, and for some years after. The Great beach was included in the Quasons' deed to the purchasers in 1711.

Mr. Kenwick after 1725, changed his place of residence. He built a house on the west side of the public road now leading from Orleans to Harwich and Chatham, a short distance southwesterly of the residence of John Kenrick, Esq., at South Orleans. It was erected upon a lot of land that belonged to "Mr. Tom," the "Indian minister," then deceased, and conveyed by his sons, Lusty Tom, Abel Tom and John Tom, to Mr. Kenwick. At that period the locality was within the limits of the old town of Harwich. The house he built, according to tradition, was of good size, and in style of those erected by the more wealthy class of that time—two stories in front and one story in rear. A few of this kind of a house are yet seen in Yarmouth. Here he continued in the same business as in the Baker's pond neighborhood—being yet a "dealer." This part of the town now his home, was as sparse in population as the locality he had removed from, but he doubtless saw advantages in moving which would be beneficial to his business, besides living near a much travelled road. In his new home prosperity attended him. Acres were added to his estate and money to his coffer.

Like most of men in different kinds of business, and in easy circumstances, at that period, he had colored servants to help in and out of the house. At the time of his death, he had three colored men and the same number of colored woman servants. They were all valued at ninety-eight pounds in the inventory of his personal property. Some of them lived in cabins on his land.

When he removed to his new home near Potonumecot, the old

*This was the Indian name of Taylor's pond at South Chatham.

forest there had been but little disturbed by the white men. The pines and oaks yet their giant branches tossed, shook and creaked in the wind; the red men yet, though civilized, roamed in the woods, fished in the inlets, entrapped the fleet-footed deer, and mingled with the settlers as occasion required. The bays, ponds, inlets, streams and localities yet bore their Indian names. Some of them were euphonic and easily pronounced, while others were long, harsh and almost unpronounceable by the settlers.

On the east side of the main road northeasterly, about two hundred rods from Mr. Kenwick's new house, on the westerly slope of a triangular piece of land which Eastham, through the efforts of the Indians, had set apart for the purpose of setting their meeting house upon, and north of the way leading down to the Saltwater pond, stood the house of their solemnities, and near it, on the same slope, their place of burial in which, until about 1830, mounds of the graves were made invisible by the plow. This house of worship of the praying Indians was here before the advent in old Harwich of Mr. Kenwick, and remained on the spot some years after his decease it is understood. When he came, the praying Indians of Potonumecot were quite numerous, and had religious instructors. Among them during Mr. Kenwick's time, were "Minister Tom," Jabez Jacob, an educated Indian and a native of the place; and John Tom, also an Indian of the neighborhood, whose death occurred in 1730. As Mr. Kenwick was a friend to the natives, and they friends to him, it is quite probable that he occasionally attended their meetings, and perhaps gave them pecuniary aid in sustaining religious services. Up to the time of his death in 1743, there had been a slight decrease in their number in that part of the old town. When Rev. Ezra Stiles visited Potonumecot in 1762, he found there thirteen heads of families, eleven widows, besides a number of children. At this time, John Ralph was their minister, and so far as known, the last of the Indian preachers there.

The records of Harwich give Mr. Kenwick two wives. His first wife was Elizabeth Snow, to whom he was married December 21, 1704. She was probably a daughter of Lieut. Jabez Snow, who was with Capt. John Gorham in the expedition to Canada in 1690 under Sir William Phips. She died before 1713, leaving two sons.

For his second wife, he married Deborah Tucker of Harwich, April 30, 1713, whose parentage has not yet been determined. She was a strong minded woman, and known among her neighbors and townspeople as "a doctress." There is evidence that she knew the art of bleeding, indicating that she had a knowledge of surgery. She had many appreciative friends among her relation and acquaintances. In 1719, Lieut. Thomas Clarke, a prominent citizen of Harwich, residing in that part of the town now West Brewster, made her a gift of the parcel of land about one mile southeasterly

of her home at Baker's pond, bordering the Potonumecot Saltwater pond on the north, which he had purchased of John Tom, an Indian, in 1717. The parcel was a valuable one, and contained by estimation about fourteen acres. This gift, he affirms, was "in consideration of that love, good will and affection" he bore "towards" her. This parcel caused him much vexation, from the time she obtained her title. Her husband was put to much trouble and expense by the "herbage men," who claimed prior right to it from the Indians. He had to have lawsuits to establish the title and keep off intruders. He began its clearing soon after 1719.

By his two wives he had four children. His children by his first wife, Elizabeth, were:

2. i Solomon,^a born about 1705 or 1706.

3. ii Thomas,^a born about 1708.

By second wife, Deborah, his children were:

4. iii Susanah,^a born January 24, 1713-14.

5. iv Jonathan,^a born Nov. 14, 1715.

Edward Kenwick died early in the year of 1743, well stricken in years, leaving a good estate. His will bears date Nov. 30, 1742. It was witnessed by Joseph Doane, Maziah Harding and John Whitney, and was presented for proof, February 18, 1742-3. After providing for his wife, Deborah, he divided his estate among his four children: Solomon, Thomas, Susanah Wing and Jonathan. He appointed his son, Jonathan, executor, to whom he had given his homestead at his mother's death. His six colored servants with him at his death: Phillip, Zilpha, Cuffee, Barbara, Joseph and "Luce," he mentioned. Phillip he gave to Solomon, his son, and Zilpha to Susanah Wing, his daughter. The others he left with his wife. He remembered his grandson, Edward Kenwick, a lad of seven years, son of Thomas of Harwich, and gave him twenty-five acres of land in Truro which he had purchased of Experience Turner.

His wife, Deborah, survived him and died late in fall of 1746. She made her will November 26, 1744, and her codicil July 8, 1745. They were proved December 3, 1746. The executrix was her daughter, Susanah Wing. To Solomon and Thomas, sons of her husband by his first wife, she gave the sum of five shillings each. To her daughter, Susanah Wing, she gave her wood lot southwest of Ralph pond, and her colored servants, excepting Joseph, Barbara and her little daughter. To her son, Jonathan, she gave Joseph, her negro servant, and her interest in the grist mill near Joshua Higgins's. To her little grandsons, Samuel and Anson, she made suitable presents. She gave to her faithful colored servant, Barbara, her freedom, and an enclosed piece of land for her use and improvement during life. She gave her a cow; a pair of steers; a bed and linen wheel; and her little negro daughter Barbara her freedom.

The place of burial of Mr. Edward Kenrick and his second wife, Deborah, is not with certainty known; but as their son, Jonathan, was buried in the old Orleans cemetery, it is believed that their dust lies there.

A part of the old homestead of Edward Kenrick, with the house upon it, built in 1792, for (and occupied by) his great-grandson, Jonathan⁴ Kenrick, and yet standing, is now in possession of John Kenrick, Esq., of South Orleans.

The surname of "Kenrick" has been indifferently spelled in the records. The three sons of Edward Kenrick spelled their surname "Kenrick." Some of their descendants have eliminated the w and placed in its stead d, while others have dropped both w and d, and spell it "Kendrick," deeming them as superfluous.

2. SOLOMON² KENWRICK (EDWARD¹) was born in Harwich about 1706, and married Elizabeth Atkins, daughter of Samuel and Emblem (Newcomb) Atkins of Chatham, May 25, 1727. He first settled in the eastern part of Harwich, near Pleasant bay, near or upon a parcel of land his father had purchased of Joshua Ralph, an Indian. His house stood near or upon the site of the one now occupied by Andrew Kendrick. He was a mariner and farmer. He became interested in the settlement of Barrington, of which place he was one of the original grantees, and went thither with his family in or about 1762. He there took part in the meetings of the proprietors, and had an interest in shaping the start of the place. In 1768, he and his son of the same name had lots laid out to them, located and described. In 1784, the second division of land was made and his name appears in the records for the last time as a grantee. There is no record of his death at Barrington. It is thought, however, that his death occurred not far from the year 1790. His wife is reported to have been buried on Sharoes Island, Barrington, N. S., which must have been after 1769. His occupation after leaving Harwich is not shown, but from the fact he had a very large tract granted him in Barrington, it is evident farming was his business to some extent. The place he left in East Harwich was occupied by his nephew, Edward, and today by a great-grandson. He has the honor of being the father of Capt. John Kendrick, the noted navigator and discoverer of the Columbia river on the northwest coast of America. All of the children of Solomon and Elizabeth Kenrick were born in Harwich, but only one was recorded. The following is a list of them so far as is known with certainty, though not sure as to their order of birth:

6. i Solomon,² born in 1731.

7. ii Elizabeth,² born Aug. 29, 1736; mar. Elkanah Smith of Chatham Jan. 24, 1754. They removed to Barrington.

8. iii John.³

9. iv Benjamin.² He doubtless went to Barrington.

3. THOMAS³ KENWRICK (EDWARD¹) was born in Harwich, in the year 1708. He married Anna Atkins, dau. of Samuel Atkins of Chatham. He settled near his brother, Solomon, near or upon land which his father, Edward, purchased of Peepen, an Indian. His house stood near or upon the spot where the house of the late Isaiah Kendrick stood. He was a mariner and farmer. He was a man of prominence in that section of Harwich. The South precinct records of Harwich show that he was a precinct assessor in 1752 and 1753, and the records of the town show that he was a selectman in 1760. He was a large land holder in town. He died at his home in East Harwich, March 13, 1783, in his 75th year. His wife, Anna, died Oct. 31, 1799, at the age of 95. They lie buried in the old cemetery at Chatham, where stones with inscriptions mark their resting places. There is no list of his children in the records of Harwich, but the following is the list given in his will, made in 1783:

10. i Edward,⁴ born in 1735; mar. for first wife, Zelpha King, July 6, 1761; for his second wife he mar. Mary Nickerson. He had children. He died in Harwich Nov. 17, 1821. He resided on the spot where his cousin, Capt. John Kendrick, was born.

11. ii Jonathan,⁴ born about 1740; mar. Mary Bassett of Chatham August 28, 1765. He died in Harwich Sept. 17, 1823, aged 83. His wife died June 20, 1824, aged 77 years. They had children.

12. iii Thomas,⁴ mar. Phebe Smith of Chatham, Nov. 6, 1766. He settled in Harwich; died in 1826. Had children.

13. iv Henry,⁴ mar. Susan Harding of Chatham in 1776. He died in 1819. Had children.

14. v Stephen,⁴ mar. Sarah Nickerson of Chatham in 1775 for his first wife; and for second wife mar. Ziporah Harding of Chatham. He lived in Harwich and had children.

15. vi Levi,⁴ never married. He was a mariner. He went on a voyage with his cousin, the noted mariner, it is said, and never returned.

16. vii Emblem.⁴

17. viii Anna.⁴

18. ix Abigail.⁴

Thomas Kenwick made his will February 27, 1783, and was proved March 6, 1783. He gave his eldest son, Edward, the place he had bought of his brother, Solomon Kenwick, and other parcels of land. His homestead he gave to his sons, Edward, Henry and Stephen. He remembered his daughters, Emblem Buck, Anna Nickerson and Abigail Smith.

He had large tracts of land. His estate was valued at £471, 10 shillings. A few of his descendants of the surname are living in the town.

4. SUSANAH² KENWRICK (EDWARD¹), daughter of Edward and

Deborah (Tucker) Kenwick, was born in that part of Harwich now South Orleans, January 24, 1713-14. She was the only daughter and married Joseph Wing, youngest son of Ananias of Harwich, February 17, 1736-7. They resided in the north precinct of Harwich. They had three children. They were:

19. i Deborah,^s born Dec. 16, 1737; died Jan. 13, 1737-8.

20. ii Elnathan,^s born Oct. 4, 1739.

21. iii Deborah,^s born Feb. 13, 1740-1; mar. Jabez Hinckley of Barnstable Nov. 22, 1764, grandfather of the late Josiah Hinckley of Barnstable, where they resided. Jabez Hinckley was son of Deacon John Hinckley, and born Oct. 24, 1741. He died in February, 1817. The children of Jabez and Deborah Wing Hinckley were James, Josiah, Anna, Joshua, Vicy, Abiah and John.

5. JONATHAN² KENWRICK (EDWARD¹), was the youngest son by second wife, Deborah Tucker, and born November 14, 1715. He was educated for a physician and was a successful practitioner. He married Tabitha Eldridge, daughter of William Eldridge of Chatham, about 1739, and continued his residence on his father's place with his mother, until her death in 1746, when by will of his father, he became the sole owner and occupant, and here he continued to live till his death. He was a very active man and gave attention to his farm, besides attending to his professional duties. His death occurred at the age of 38, July 20, 1753. He was buried in the old cemetery at Orleans, where some years since a stone was standing with inscription, marking the place of his burial.

He died intestate, and his widow was appointed administratrix in 1753. He left a personal estate valued at £189 11s. 2d. and had considerable real estate, which by deed, July 16, 1753, he gave to his "three beloved sons Samuel, Anson and Jonathan," for an equal division. At the time of his death he had only one negro servant, whose name was Joseph, being the one his mother gave him, who lived upon the farm. His inventory shows that he had three horses, forty-five sheep and a number of neat cattle. His surgical instruments, showing he was somewhat skilled in surgery, were valued at £7 14s. 8d.

His widow, Tabitha Kenwick, married Theophilus Hopkins of Harwich, July 24, 1754, and died in the year 1775, leaving children by second marriage. Theophilus Hopkins died early in the winter of 1819, aged 91 years. They had a son, Theophilus, who was a physician.

The children of Jonathan² and Tabitha (Eldridge) Kenwick were:

22. i Samuel,^s b. 1741.

23. ii Anson,^s b. 1743.

24. iii Jonathan,^s b. 1745.

6. SOLOMON² KENWRICK (SOLOMON² EDWARD¹), was born

in Harwich in 1731. He was a mariner and went with his father's family to Barrington, Nova Scotia, and there he was a proprietor of land in 1768. Here he was also a mariner as well as a farmer. He, as reported, was twice married, but no record so far learned, has been found showing the date of his first marriage. His second wife was Martha Godfrey, to whom he was married November 30, 1769. He had children but the writer has no correct list of them.

8. JOHN^s KENDRICK (SOLOMON,^s EDWARD¹), the noted navigator, was born about 1740. Though his birth date is not shown upon the books of record of Harwich, yet it is certain that he first saw light in the eastern part of Harwich within a short distance of the beautiful sheet of salt water known as Pleasant bay, at his father's house—the site of which is yet pointed out. Like most of the boys of that period, he went early to sea and continued going to the end of his eventful life. In the spring of 1760, we find him in the employ of Benjamin Bangs, a hand on board of a whaling schooner of Harwich, of which Judah Hopkins was skipper, Scotto Clarke, Elisha Clarke and David Quansett "ends men;" Peres Bangs, "ship keeper;" and Samuel Sears, Jr., Nathaniel Cahoon, John Cahoon, Abijah Bangs, Amos Lawrence, Micah Ralph and John Sequattom were hands, bound on a whaling voyage to Canada river, now the St. Lawrence. The voyage was a most successful one to all concerned notwithstanding four of the crew were Indians. In 1762, he chose rather to try martial duties on the land than chasing whales in the waters of St. Lawrence or on the banks of Newfoundland, and enlisted for service in Capt. Jabez Snow's company for service against the French on the frontier, serving a few days over eight months. Tradition fails to report anything in regard to his services; but it seems evident that the tented field and routine of military duty had not the charms for him as the vessel's deck and sailing on the rough sea.

After his return from the army he again went to sea, and soon rose to the command of merchant vessels sailing out of Boston to distant ports. For some time before the Revolutionary war he was in command of packets between Southern ports and Boston. During the Revolutionary conflict he was in command of armed vessels, annoying the British and preying upon their commerce.

In the summer of 1787, a voyage of trade and discovery to the northwest coast of America was planned by Messrs. Barrel, Brown, Bulfinch, Darby and Pintard, merchants of Boston, and Capt. Kendrick, now a noted navigator, was given command of the two vessels they had fitted out for the enterprise. The two vessels were Columbia, a ship of two hundred and fifty tons, and Washington, a sloop of ninety tons, a tender. The Columbia was an armed vessel, built at Hobarts Landing on North river, in the present town

of Scituate, in 1773, and in her outward passage was in command of Capt. Kendrick in person. The Washington in the outward passage was in command of Capt. Robert Gray. They sailed from Boston on the 30th of September, 1787, around Cape Horn for the northwest coast, and arrived at Nootka Sound in September, 1789, where they spent the winter, having on the way discovered the river between Oregon and the state of Washington, which Capt. Kendrick called Columbia in honor of his ship which first entered it. While at Nootka Sound the sloop Washington was rigged into a brig and taken charge of by Capt. Kendrick, who ordered the Columbia to proceed to Canton in command of Robert Gray, and from thence to Boston. In the Lady Washington, the intrepid navigator now visited many places on the coast and some of the nearest islands to trade with the natives. While he lay at anchor in 1791, at Queen Charlotte's Island, his vessel was visited by a large number of natives pretendingly to trade but really to capture the vessel, and had it not been for the great bravery and coolness of Capt. Kendrick, when the savages made their attack with knives upon his men, the vessel would have fallen into their hands, and death dealt to the whole number of the crew. The fight, as narrated in the ballad written by one of the sailors after the terrible skirmish, was indeed a warm one, and the Captain shown up as a bold leader. The ballad says the deck was cleared of the dead, and the living landed, and the good vessel was upon her passage to China.

It has been clamied that he purchased of the natives large tracts of land on both sides of the Columbia river at the mouth, and that he determined that Vancouver's land was an island by sailing around it, which, up to that time, was supposed to be united to the main.

While his vessel in 1793, was lying in one of the harbors at Owhyee (now Hawaii), one of the Hawaiian Islands, he died from the effects of a "ball accidentally fired from a British vessel while saluting him," about two hours after the occurrence.

Thus fell the distinguished navigator who had commanded the first expedition to the northwest coast from the United States in the interest of trade and discovery, and who first hoisted the nation's flag in the Straits of San Juan de Fuca and in the Straits of Georgia, which separate Vancouver's Island from the mainland.

The tidings of Capt. Kendrick's death did not reach his widow in Wareham, it is traditionally reported, for a long time after its occurrence. This was due to the infrequency of vessels on that coast and at the far off isles at that time. Vessels were relied on for conveyance of letters to and from friends, and the senders and receivers were satisfied, even with this privilege of a slow trans-

mission, if good or bad news could be received from absent ones at home or abroad. The news of his sad end must have been severe to his family and kindred, especially so when the circumstances of his death and the knowledge of his intention at the end of the voyage to leave the sea for the quiet of home, were made known to them.

Although Capt. Kendrick's parents removed to the township of Barrington, Nova Scotia, and made that place their home, yet there appears no positive evidence that he lived with them there before his marriage when not at sea. It is very probable the newly settled place and its surroundings, away from the stir of business, did not appeal to him as a place of abode.

At Edgartown in Marthas Vineyard, Capt. Kendrick met Miss Huldah Pease, who became his wife Dec. 28, 1767. She was a daughter of Theophilus Pease of that place, and was baptised April 20, 1744, while an infant. She became a member of the church in that town early in life, and when her husband became a resident of Wareham, she united with the church there. She was a gentle woman, "lovingly mild and amiable," and a devoted wife to the bold mariner.

After marriage he made Marthas Vineyard his home, living most of the time in Edgartown, until 1778, when he sold out and removed to Wareham, Mass., where he purchased a large parcel of land, building upon it a costly gambrel roof house, finished internally in accordance to "foreign order of architectural designs." From this old house, he went forth to take command of the expedition to the northwest coast. It was standing a few years ago, and is now probably standing.

Capt. Kendrick visited the Cape in 1781, to see his relatives and renew acquaintance with the friends of his boyhood. At the house of his cousin, Jonathan Kenrick,* in what is now South Orleans, he found an unnamed infant of his cousin which he desired should bear his name. This infant grew to manhood, and was the grandfather of the present John Kenrick, who lives upon the old homestead, and third in the line bearing the name.

Capt. Kendrick, it has been said, was a very large man, possessing great strength and courage.

The children** of Capt. John Kendrick and Huldah, his wife, were:

25. i John,⁴ born at Edgartown, and baptized April 12, 1772.

26. ii Solomon,⁴ born at Edgartown, and baptized Nov. 15, 1772.

*From a statement made in 1846 by John Kenrick, Esq., who was born in 1781 and died in 1849.

**From information furnished the writer by the late Greene Kendrick, Esq., of Connecticut.

27. iii Benjamin,⁴ born about 1776; was a mariner and lost at sea; was never married.

28. iv Alfred,⁴ born at Wareham Oct. 20, 1778.

29. v Joseph,⁴ born at Wareham July 29, 1779.

30. vi Huldah,⁴ born at Wareham in 1781; married Rev. Jonathan Gilman at Starks, Me., in 1803. They had children.

22. SAMUEL^s KENWRICK (JONATHAN,² EDWARD¹) was born in that part of Harwich now South Orleans in the year 1741. He was a physician. He studied with Dr. Nathaniel Breed, a physician of Eastham, who practiced in that town several years before 1760 and who removed to Sudbury not long after this time, and from there to Nelson, N. H. Dr. Kenwick married Esther, daughter of Israel and Mercy (Rider) Mayo, Feb. 21, 1761. She was a great-granddaughter of Rev. John Mayo. Dr. Kenwick was very skillful in his profession and had a large practice in the adjoining towns. He occupied his father's place, which was his grandfather's also. He made many improvements on it. He added many fruit trees to the old orchard, some of which were standing within the remembrance of the older men now living. He died February 10, 1791, at the age of 49. He was buried in the old Orleans cemetery, where a slate stone marks the spot bearing the following inscription:

"Erected in memory of Doct. Samuel Kenwick, eldest son of Dr. Jonathan Kenwick, who lived beloved and died lamented, Feb. 10, 1791, aet 49."

"How loved, how valued once, avails thee not,
To whom related or by whom begot;
No longer thy all-healing art avails,
But every remedy its master fails."

His wife, Esther, survived him thirty-six years, dying early in the year 1827, at the age of 86 years. She was a woman of intelligence and helpful to the doctor in many ways in his business. She was a practitioner in the obstetric art. After her husband's death, she continued to reside in the old house, and after it was taken down and the new one built in 1792, she occupied rooms in the new one till her death. She was a woman well spoken of.* She had rare conversational gift and a genial disposition. She was admitted to church June 26, 1791.**

The birth dates of the children of Samuel Kenwick and wife, Esther, do not appear upon the records. They had an infant that

*The mother of the writer, a great-granddaughter on the maternal side, well remembered her as a most amiable woman, indulgent and entertaining.

**Orleans Chh. Records.

died in 1789. Their children, however, that grew up, were as follows, though they may not all be in order of birth:

31. i Jonathan,⁴ born in 1761; mar. Betsey Rogers; d. in 1839.

32. ii Warren Anson,⁴ born in 1763; mar. Ruth Gould; d. in 1808.

33. iii Samuel,⁴ never married; died in 1784.

34. iv Cynthia,⁴ married 1st Paine Gould, Dec. 6, 1789. He died 1794; she then mar. 2d David Twining, April 13, 1799.

35. v Sabrina,⁴ mar. Jona. Higgins of W. Nov. 27, 1794.

36. vi Tabitha,⁴ mar. Samuel William Kenwick of Barrington, Nova Scotia, April 17, 1800, and removed to the western country after marriage.

23. ANSON³ KENWRICK (JONATHAN,² EDWARD¹), second son, was born in that part of Harwich now South Orleans in September, 1743. He was a boy of about ten years when his father died. In early life he was by occupation a carpenter. At some period between 1765 and 1770, he removed to the township of Barrington, N. S., settling near a place called Shag harbor, where he spent his days in fishing, farming and other business. He married before his removal, Azubah Sears, daughter of Josiah of Eastham, Mass., October 29, 1765. He lost his life by drowning. With his youngest daughter, Abigail, her husband, Mr. Bradford, and their two children, in going from an island to Shag harbor in a boat, it was capsized by a heavy sea on a bar, throwing all on board into the surging water. Mr. Bradford and the two children were immediately drowned. Mr. Kenwick started to swim ashore, but returning to aid his daughter, was drowned. The daughter with the courage of a heroine clung to the up-turned boat in its various motions and successfully reached the shore after a great struggle. The year this sad occurrence happened is not reported.

The following is the list of the children of Anson and Azubah (Sears) Kenwick, his wife:

i Tabitha,⁴ born July 29, 1766; mar. James Smith.

37. ii Edward,⁴ born May 9, 1768; mar. Rebecca, daughter of Jonathan Smith. Their children were: Jonathan, Edward, Cynthia and Abigail.

38. iii David,⁴ born Nov. 13, 1770; mar. Jedidah, daughter of Ansel Crowell. They had David, Judah, Seth, Anson, Samuel, Edward, Rebecca, Azubah, Via and Eliza.

39. iv Anson,⁴ born Dec. 2, 1772; never married; in the naval service; died in a hospital in London.

40. v Martha,⁴ born Nov. 16, 1774; mar. Simeon Nickerson of Cape Sables.

41. vi John,⁴ born Nov. 3, 1776; mar. Letitia Atwood. Their children: Jacob,⁵ Anderson,⁵ Joseph,⁵ Hepsibah,⁵ Tamsin, Dianna, John⁵ and Mary Ann.

42. vii Samuel,⁴ born September 22, 1778; mar. Tabitha, dau. of Dr. Samuel Kenwrick of Orleans, April 17, 1800. They removed to Ohio, is the tradition.

43. viii Azubah,⁴ born April 1, 1781; mar. 1st Jonathan Smith, 2d Samuel Watson, a Scotchman.

44. ix Josiah Sears,⁴ born April 17, 1783; was twice married. He married 1st Hannah Weekes of Harwich; married 2d Lydia Allen. He resided in many places in Nova Scotia. He died at Yarmouth, N. S. He had children by last wife. Among them, David, Huldah, Arvin William.

45. x Seth,⁴ born April 26, 1785.

46. xi Huldah,⁴ born May 18, 1787; married John Bennison, an Englishman.

47. xii Phebe,⁴ mar. Joshua Nickerson of Cape Sables, a brother of Simeon Nickerson.

48. xiii Abigail,⁴ mar. 1st a Mr. Bradford; 2d Thomas West of Queens Co., N. S. She narrowly escaped drowning by the capsizing of the boat she was in with her father, husband and children.

24. JONATHAN³ KENWRICK (JONATHAN,² EDWARD¹) was born in that part of old Harwich, now South Orleans, - February 29, 1745. He was the youngest of his father's family, and was eight years of age when his father died. His wife was Hannah, a daughter of Mr. Isaac Cole, who removed from Eastham to Ashford, Conn., before 1786. His intention of marriage to her bears date Aug. 5, 1771. She was born June 21, 1749, in East Orleans, where her father then possessed a large farm. She became a member of the Congregational church in that town Aug. 24, 1794. Her death occurred at the house of her son, Nov. 2, 1837, at the age of 90 years, surviving her husband 28 years.

Mr. Kenwrick was a mariner and farmer. He had large tracts of land, much of which is now held by his descendants. He resided near or on the spot where the house of John Kenrick, Esq., now stands. He died November 9, 1809, aged 64 years. They lie buried in the Orleans cemetery, where stones mark the spots.

Their children were:

49. i Lucy,⁴ born Dec. 6, 1772; mar. Nathan Kendrick of Harwich, October 26, 1793. They lived in Harwich. Had a large family.

50. ii Seth,⁴ born Aug. 17, 1775; died at San Cruz, Cuba, Nov. 30, 1797.

51. iii Calvin,⁴ born in 1777; lost at sea July 30, 1795; age 18 years.

52. iv Arvin,⁴ born in 1780; mar. Tabitha Sparrow, dau. of Dea. Richard Sparrow, Jan. 13, 1803. He was lost at sea Jan. 1, 1822. Left children. Among them was Alexander Kenrick.

53. v John,⁴ born May 18, 1781.

54. vi Carlton,⁴ born in 1784; died at Havana, Cuba, Sept. 14, 1815.

55. vii Alexander,⁴ born —; died at sea in 1822.

56. viii Hannah,⁴ born —; died

31. JONATHAN⁴ KENWRICK (SAMUEL,³ JONATHAN,² EDWARD¹) was born in that part of Harwich, now South Orleans, in 1761. His father's intention was to educate him for a physician, but he showed a fondness for seafaring life and was allowed his choice and went to sea. He was a master mariner for many years. He married Betsey Rogers of Eastham, daughter of Moses and Elizabeth (Smith) Rogers, November 13, 1783. She was a lineal descendant of Joseph Rogers, who came over on the Mayflower from England in 1620, and was born August 8, 1764. She died Sept. 14, 1852, at the age of 88 years. Capt. Kenwick resided on his father's place with his mother. He took down the old house built for his great-grandfather, and in 1792 built a new house, which is yet standing upon the site, or near it, of the old house. He had a retentive memory and colloquial talents of high order. His last days were spent with his youngest daughter, Caroline, at whose house he died of consumption, at the age of 78, June 4, 1839. He had the distinction of residing in Harwich, Eastham and Orleans, without changing his place of residence. The singularity was owing to change of town lines; the portion of Harwich in which he was born was set off to Eastham in 1772, and in 1797 became a part of the town of Orleans. Capt. Kenwick removed to Smithfield, R. I., at the beginning of the last war with England, returning at the close to Orleans.

The children of Jonathan⁴ and Betsey (Rogers) Kenwick were:

57. i Samuel,⁵ born November 10, 1784; mar. Eunisa, dau. of William Eldredge, Esq., of Harwich, Nov. 24, 1812. He was a mariner and died at Port au Prince, March 6, 1822. They had one son, Jonathan.

58. ii Warren Anson,⁵ born Oct. 12, 1786, who died in January, 1788.

59. iii Betsey,⁵ born May 29, 1788; mar. twice. She had children. Died in 1872.

60. iv Warren Anson,⁵ born July 24, 1790; married Abigail, dau. of Heman Snow, Oct. 23, 1813. He was a master mariner and resided in Orleans. He had children. Among them were: Samuel, born in 1814, who died at St. Jago, March 24, 1835, at the age of 20, from the effects of a fall out of the rigging to the deck of a vessel in command of his uncle Alfred; Polly, the wife of Isaiah Young; Warren, born in 1824, who died Sept. 24, 1843, aged 19 years; and Albert, born in April, 1831, who died Oct. 29, 1850, aged 19 years and 6 months. Capt. Kenrick died at his home in Orleans, Feb. 12, 1842. His wife survived him many years.

61. v Mercy,⁵ born Aug. 12, 1792; married Matthew Kingman, son of Simeon Kingman, Esq., of Orleans, Nov. 30, 1808. They resided in Orleans. Their children were Rebecca F.,⁶ Betsey K.,⁶ Freeman,⁶ Overy,⁶ Simeon,⁶ Alfred,⁶ Seth,⁶ Isabel M.,⁶ Alonzo,⁶ Eliza M.,⁶ and Matthew. Overy and Alfred died young. She died Sept. 17, 1857, at the age of 65. He died October 20, 1848, very suddenly, aged 58. A man greatly respected by all who knew him.

62. vi Esther,⁵ born April 18, 1794; married Luther Nickerson of Orleans. They resided in Orleans. He was a mariner. They had Freeman S., Louiza, Mary, Mercy, Caroline and Esther. Freeman S. was lost at sea. He was in command of the ship Alice Gray, which sailed from Philadelphia for Londonderry with a cargo of corn and flour, April, 1848. She was never heard from after leaving the Capes of Delaware. Mrs. Esther Nickerson died in Orleans.

63. vii Jonathan,⁵ born Jan. 29, 1796; married Abigail Taylor of Orleans, Jan. 24, 1818. They had sons and daughters. He was a master mariner. He resided in Orleans.

64. viii Eliza,⁵ born Feb. 18, 1798; married Edward Hall, Jr., of Harwich, April 9, 1820. They removed to Providence. He was a master mariner. Their children were: Alfred K., Abner, Ahira, Eliza K. and Edward W. He died Aug. 21, 1841. She died Aug. 2, 1839.

65. ix Alfred,⁵ born May 30, 1800.

66. x Seth,⁵ born July 16, 1803; died of a fever Dec. 12, 1821. He was a mariner. Unmarried.

67. xi Frederick,⁵ born October 14, 1805; married for his first wife, Eliza, daughter of John Myrick of Orleans. She dying Sept. 11, 1835, he married her sister, Lucy Myrick. He had children by both wives, but they died young. He was a seafaring man and resided in the western part of Orleans. He died in 1892. He was a highly respected citizen, and of a quiet disposition; he was a good conversationalist. Had seen much of sea life.

68. xii Caroline,⁵ born October 30, 1809; was twice married. Her first husband was Nathan Cole of Orleans, who died at sea. By him, she had two children. Edward H., the eldest, was the well-known merchant of New York, who will be long remembered for his gifts. For her second husband, she married Heman Snow, son of Robert, of Brewster. For awhile after marriage they lived in Orleans. About 1850, they removed to West Harwich, and afterwards removed to Dennisport. By the second marriage, she had three sons. They were Nathan C., William B. and James. She died in April, 1883, and was buried in Dennisport. She long was in ill health. Her husband survived her a few years.

32. WARREN ANSON⁴ KENRICK (SAMUEL,³ JONATHAN,² EDWARD¹) was born in Harwich, that part now South Orleans, in 1763. He was educated for a physician, and finally settled in

Wellfleet, where he was a successful practitioner, and died there, February 10, 1808, aged 44 years. He married in Eastham, that part now Orleans, Ruth Gould, daughter of Thomas, November 18, 1784. She died May 10, 1801, at the age of 33. They lie buried in the Duck Creek cemetery. They had children. Among them were Thomas G.,⁵ Samuel,⁵ Overy,⁵ Warren A., Franklin and Ruth,⁵ who died young. His second wife, Sally, survived him.

53. JOHN⁴ KENRICK (JONATHAN,³ JONATHAN,² EDWARD¹) was born in that part of old Harwich, now South Orleans, May 18, 1781. He early went to sea and continued in the seafaring business until the breaking out of war between the United States and England in 1812, when he left the sea on account of it, and began business on the land, in which he was as fully successful.

His first command as master was given him in 1804, when he was twenty-three years old, of the schr. Primrose of Boston on a trading voyage to Curacao, W. I., and to the Madeira isle on the African coast, taking an assorted cargo and returning with hides, salt and Madeira wine. His next voyage was in 1805 in command of the schr. Three Friends, owned by William Colman Lee of Boston, to Havana, where he obtained a cargo of sugar and molasses for Boston.

In 1806, he was given command of the ship Cecelia, owned by William Colman Lee of Boston, for a voyage to Campeache for a cargo of logwood and fustic or yellow wood for dyeing. The same year he commanded the same ship on a voyage to San Sebastian, Spain, but it was an unfortunate one. The ship encountered, August 28, a terrific gale of wind off Cape Ontegal in the Bay of Biscay of two days' duration, which smashed the stern boat, carried away the ship's quarter boards, and caused the death of a seaman by falling from aloft. To save the ship a part of her cargo of cocoa was thrown overboard. She was brought into San Sebastian after five days in a bad condition, and upon a survey is said to have been condemned and sold. With his boy and negro man, he found a passage to United States on the brig Harlequin of Stonington, Conn., in command of Capt. Dickens.

Capt. Kenrick's next voyage was in command of the brig Maria Caroline, from Boston to Cadiz, Spain. This was in 1807. He took out tar, pitch, turpentine and resin as a cargo, and consigned to the "Widow of Maurice Roberts & Co." In 1808, he was in command of the brig Eliza of Boston, carrying freight to and from ports in Virginia; and from Boston to St. Vincent. At the latter place in the month of November he sold flour and tobacco amounting to the sum of \$18,373 to William Durham.

In 1810, he was master of the brig Alert on a voyage to Barbados from Boston, with a cargo of flour, provisions, lumber, etc., which he sold for Fenno & West of Boston. In 1811, he took

command of brig *Constellation* of Boston, owned by Isaac Winslow of Boston, for a voyage to Lisbon with a cargo of flour consigned to William Jarvis. The same year he commanded the brig *Enterprise* on a voyage to Cadiz, Spain, with an assorted cargo.

It is probable during his seafaring life, Capt. Kenrick commanded other vessels than those named. It is a tradition among his descendants that he was in command of a vessel to Europe that was seized under the Berlin and Milan decrees, yet there is nothing found to verify it among his papers.

Upon leaving the sea, Capt. Kenrick turned his attention to farming, salt making and trade. In all of the patriotic movements in his town during the war, he took an active part. With others of his townsmen, he "was instrumental in saving his town from the heavy exactions of the British cruisers in 1812."

He was selectman, assessor and overseer of the poor for thirteen years from 1818, and a representative to the General Court at Boston in 1830 and 1831. He was a justice of the peace for many years after 1818.

He was one of the founders of the Baptist church in Orleans in 1826, having asked dismissal from the Brewster Baptist church June 10, 1826, for the purpose of being one of the founders, of which he and his wife were members. Becoming an Universalist he helped organize the Orleans church, April 21, 1833, of which he was a member at his death. He was a lay preacher of that denomination, and left in manuscript many sermons he had delivered in various places between 1833 and 1839. His death occurred at his home, May 24, 1849.

Mr. Kenrick married, December 4, 1804, Rebecca, daughter of Dea. Richard Sparrow of Orleans, who was born April 25, 1779, and was baptized by Rev. Jonathan Bascom, May 2, 1779. They were both members of the Orleans Congregational church up to April 6, 1826, when they asked for dismissal in order to unite with the Baptist church at Brewster. She died at Orleans, June 1, 1843, at the age of 64 years.

Their children, all born in Orleans, were:

68½. i Sophia,^s born Oct. 29, 1805; married Elisha Cobb of Eastham, November 13, 1828; died Oct. 23, 1823.

69. ii John,^s born October 9, 1819.

70. iii Rebecca,^s born July 15, 1822; married Mitchel F. Anderson of Boston, and died Dec. 6, 1897.

65. ALFRED^s KENRICK (JONATHAN,⁴ SAMUEL,^s JONATHAN,^s EDWARD¹) was born in Orleans in the old Kenrick house, May 30, 1800. He went with his father's family to Smithfield, R. I., at the beginning of the last war with England, where he worked in a cotton factory; and at the close of the war he commenced his sea life. He rose from an ordinary seaman to a master of a ship at

the age of twenty-seven years. During his long sea life he visited many ports of the world. He crossed the Atlantic one hundred and eight times. In 1853, in command of the bark *Osmanlie* on a voyage to Melbourne and Callao he circumnavigated the world, arriving in Boston in June, 1854. This was his last voyage at sea. But few masters of his time had traversed more miles upon the ocean, or had been more fortunate in avoiding the dangers of the sea. He was upright in all his business affairs with his employers and by them held in high esteem.

Capt. Kenrick never sought office, yet he was called to fill official positions many times. He represented Barnstable county, (with Sylvester Baxter), in the state senate in 1856. He served his town as selectman, school committee, and upon important committees. He was a justice of the peace and for a period a deputy sheriff.

Capt. Kenrick was one of the number who was instrumental in forming the Universalist society in Orleans in 1825, and who was an active member thereafter until his death.

Capt. Kenrick was twice married. He married for his first wife, Almira, daughter of David Taylor of Orleans, Jan. 4, 1825. She died Jan. 11, 1879. For his second wife, he married Mrs. Adeline Walker in 1880, who died in 1889. He died January 18, 1896, in his 96th year.

Capt. Kenrick by his wife, Almira, had seven children, but only four reached adult age. They were:

71. i Alfred,^a born in 1825; mar. Sarah B. Gleason. He resided in Brookline, and died in 1885. Had sons.

72 ii David T.,^a born in 1830; mar. Amanda Gibbs. He resided in Brookline. Now deceased.

73 iii Mary T.,^a born in 1841; mar. George H. Moss. Now deceased.

74. iv Eliza F.,^a born in 1844; mar. Asa Smith. She is now deceased.

After 1835, Capt. Kenrick resided in the northwest part of the town near Rock Harbor, he having purchased of Prentice Snow of Boston the Snow estate in that neighborhood in 1834.

69. JOHN^s KENRICK (JOHN,^a JONATHAN,^s JONATHAN,² EDWARD¹) was born in Orleans, August 9, 1819. He was educated in the public schools. He became early interested in educational matters and was a school teacher at the age of nineteen. He was on the school board of Orleans twenty-five years and the superintendent of the schools eight years from 1880. He was interested in farming, arboriculture and pomology all through life. He was a member of the Barnstable County Agricultural society and a delegate to the state board in 1866. He was in mercantile business in his native village from 1867 to 1891. He was thirty-three years

postmaster of the place; was selectman, assessor and overseer of the poor of Orleans fourteen years; was a trial justice in 1850; was a representative in the legislature in 1852 and 1853; was a member of the governor's council in 1855 and 1856; was a notary public and justice of the peace, and from 1876 to 1898, a trustee of the Cape Cod Five Cents Savings bank. He occupied the place of his father. He died December 26, 1898, at the age of 79.

Mr. Kenrick was twice married. He married for his first wife Thankful Crosby, dau. of Joshua of Orleans, July 30, 1843, who died March 14, 1886. For his second wife, he married Catherine A. M. Crosby of Brewster, dau. of Nathan Crosby, Nov. 17, 1891.

The children of John and Thankful (Crosby) Kenrick:

75. i Sophia,^e b. Jan. 23, 1845; d. Nov. 26, 1845.
76. ii Emma,^e b. March 28, 1850; d. Dec. 7, 1892.
77. iii Clara,^e b. Dec. 16, 1847; d. June 10, 1903.
78. iv Rebecca,^e b. March 16, 1846; d. Feb. 18, 1847.
79. v, Eva,^e b. Nov. 22, 1852; d. Feb. 22, 1853.
80. vi Alice T.,^e b. July 30, 1854; d. Nov. 21, 1887.
81. vii John,^e b. Oct. 25, 1857. He resides at South Orleans and occupies the old homestead. He is engaged in mercantile business. He has held many official positions. He was two years a representative in the House, and two years in the state Senate. He was a selectman, assessor and overseer of the poor of Orleans many years. He is now postmaster, and one of the trustees and vice president of the Cape Cod Five Cents Savings bank.

No. 36.

LIBRARY *of*
C a p e C o d
 HISTORY & GENEALOGY

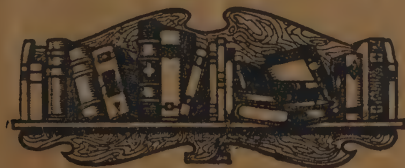
EARLY CHATHAM SETTLERS

By William C. Smith, Esq.,

Author of a History of Chatham.

Early Settlers, 1690, 1711—Atkins, Bassett, Covell, Eldredge, Godfréy,
 Hamilton, Harding, Howes, Lumbert, Nickerson, Paddock, Phil-
 lips, Sears, Smith, Stewart, Tucker.

Later Settlers—Collins, Crowell, Doane, Eldredge, Farris, Hawes,
 Knowles, Mayo, Mitchell, Ryder, Smith, Stewart, Taylor.



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
 C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
 THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
 1915.

Josiah H. Benton Fd.
Aug. 7, 1939
C

*4431.210

No. 36

cont

EARLY CHATHAM SETTLERS

By William C. Smith, Esq.,

Author of a History of Chatham.

Copyright, 1915, by
William C. Smith.

EARLY CHATHAM SETTLERS.*

ATKINS.

Capt. John Atkins, son of Henry and Bethiah (Linnell) Atkins of Eastham, born August 1, 1674, married Elizabeth, daughter of Lieut. Andrew Newcomb of Edgartown, March 5, 1699-1700. He lived a few years in Eastham, removing to Monomoit about 1705. It is not certain where his farm was located. He was active in local affairs, being selectman five years, treasurer two years, etc. He became lieutenant of the military company under Capt. Ebenezer Hawes in 1715 and was appointed captain in 1720. He was one of the first seven members of the church organized in 1720, and was prominent in the controversies, which arose with Rev. Hugh Adams and Rev. Samuel Osborne, the Eastham minister.¹ He died January 30, 1732-3, leaving no descendants. His widow was living as late as 1743, when she conveyed land in Edgartown.²

Samuel Atkins, brother of John, born at Eastham June 25, 1679, married Emlen³ [Emeline] Newcomb, a sister of his brother's wife, April 3, 1703, and settled at

Monomoit soon after. He probably bought a tract of land of the Indians, adjoining the shore and bounded south on the Sears farm. This tract after his death fell to his only son Henry.⁴ He was selectman in 1737 and 1738. His name does not appear on the tax lists or records of the town after 1755, but his estate was not administered upon till August 26, 1768. His widow was not then living. The entire estate was assigned to the son Henry, he paying his sisters certain sums of money.⁵

Dea. Thomas Atkins, an elder brother of John and Samuel, born at Eastham June 19, 1671, removed to Monomoit as early as 1694. The name of his first wife is not known. He bought of the Nickersons and Covells 10 acres of land lying between Lord's pond and the highway, which became his home-stand. The house and four acres of this land, lying north of the meeting house, he sold in 1718 to the town for the use of the ministry and the remaining six acres he sold in 1729 to Thomas Doane.⁶ After the sale to the town, he appears to have

1 Vol. cont.

Aug. 11, 1939

lived on the Vickery homestead, which he had bought of the Vickery heirs in 1714.⁷ With Capt. Joseph Harding he bought Sept. 7, 1797, of Josephus Quason all the interest of the latter in the Quason lands in the south part of Old Harwich and later, in 1713, in the division of these lands, received one-sixteenth part, which he later sold.⁸ He was clerk of the proprietors of these lands. He was one of the leading men of the town, being selectman 21 years, town clerk 14 years, and holding other offices. He was a leader in the church and a firm friend and confidant of the ministers. He was the first deacon of the church. He married 2nd, June 28, 1739, Hope (Horton) Snow, widow of Ebenezer Snow of Eastham. Administration on his estate was granted Jan. 16, 1750-1, to his son Joshua. Although town clerk many years, he failed to record any information about his own family.⁹

NOTES.

*The author is indebted to Mr. Josiah Paine of Harwich, Mr. Stanley W. Smith of Boston and Mr. William E. Nickerson of Cambridge for helpful genealogical information respecting some of the families mentioned in these articles.

(1) Rev. Samuel Treat of Eastham writes of him in 1716 as follows: "He is a person born in our town of godly parents who gave him a religious education and he early expressed a pious inclination to the ways of God and a religious profession and has for many years been entertained in

our church, adorning his profession by a very laudable conversation and so esteemed by the adjacent towns, to many of whom he is well known." *Adams v Hawes*, Files Superior Court of Judicature, No. 10,812.

(2) *Newcomb Genealogy*, 20.

(3) She is called Emlen in the will of Capt. John Atkins. The name has caused trouble for genealogists. In the *Newcomb Genealogy* she is called Emblem, elsewhere Embling. The forms Embling and Emblen (not Emblem) are old forms for Emlen (Emeline), just as we have Hamblen for Hamlin, Tombling and Tomblen for Tomlin, Hambleton for Hamilton, etc.

(4) By deed dated July 29, 1783, Henry Atkins sold to Isaac Howes and John Harding the following tract in Chatham, doubtless his father's farm: "where my dwelling house stands, beginning at a stake and stone at the westerly end of the Pond near my Dwelling house aforesaid in Mr. Paul Sears his range, thence Westerly as the fence now stands to the highway, thence northerly to Thomas Bee's range, being about twenty-five feet, thence Easterly in said Bee's range till it comes to the Partition fence between the aforesaid Bee and Atkins, thence Northerly as the fence now stands till it comes to the land of Seth Smith, thence Easterly in said Smith's range as the fence now stands till it comes to the land of Constant Nickerson, thence still Easterly as the fence now stands till it comes to the corner of the fence to a stone in the ground, thence Northerly in the aforesaid

Nickerson's range as the fence now stands till it comes to another corner to a stone in the ground, thence Southeasterly in the range of the land that was Solomon Collings, as the fence now stands, till it comes to a Ditch near the fore side of the aforesaid John Harding's now Dwelling house, thence Easterly as the Ditch now runs to low water mark, thence Southerly by the water till it comes to Mr. Richard Sears his range, thence Westerly in said Sears his range, as the fence now stands, till it comes to the aforesaid Pond, thence Westerly through the Pond to the first specified bounds * * * exclusive of 5 or 6 acres which belong to said Atkins his sister." Seth W. Hammond papers.

(5) Children of Samuel and Emilen (Newcomb) Atkins (from Probate Records, order uncertain): 1 Eunice, b. 1705; m. Solomon Collins, son of John, about 1726. 2 Elizabeth, b. ; m. 1st Daniel Eldredge of Eastham Jan. 31, 1727-8, (East. Rec.) who was "supposed to be deceased" Jan. 1732-3; m. 2nd about 1735, Solomon Kendrick, son of Edward of Harwich; removed to Barrington, N. S., about 1762. 3 Desire, b. ; m.

Sylvester. 4 Anna, b. 1714; m. Thomas Kendrick, son of Edward of Harwich (int. Jan. 27, 1734-5, East. Rec.). 5 Bethiah, Jr., b. ; m. Christopher Taylor, son of Abraham of Barnstable, Feb. 3, 1757 (Chat. Rec.); d. before 1769. 6 Tabitha, b. ; m. Southworth Hamlin, son of Joseph of Barnstable, May 12, 1757 (Chat. Rec.). 7 Henry, b. (not of age Jan. 1733); m. Deborah Lothrop,

dau. of Joseph of Barnstable, Dec. 8, 1768 (Barnst. Rec.); after selling his farm in 1783 as above, he probably moved to south part of Eastham, where his widow died Nov. 22, 1822, aged 85 (Hdstn.).

(6) Town Records; M. L. Luce papers.

(7) Page 124, note 86, Smith's History of Chatham.

(8) Files Superior Court of Judicature, Nos. 7,626, 9,537, 66,388, 30,339; Osborn Nickerson papers.

(9) Children of Thomas and () Atkins (order uncertain): 1 Thomas, b. ; m. 1st Elizabeth Nickerson, dau. of William, about 1726. She died before Sept. 13, 1739, (date of her father's will) and he m. 2nd Thankful Snow, dau. of Ebenezer of Eastham, May 14, 1741 (East. Rec.). 2 Joshua, b. ; m. Sarah Sears, dau. of Daniel, Aug. 1, 1734 (Chat. Rec.). She died April 30, 1751, and he m. 2nd Mary (Freeman) Doane, widow of Benjamin (int. Oct. 5, 1751, Chat. Rec.). 3 Susanna, b. about 1717; m. Reuben Ryder, son of John, Oct. 26, 1740 (Chat. Rec.); d. Aug. 9, 1743, aged 26. 4 Bethiah, sen., b. ; single in 1757. (See marriage of Bethiah Jr., note 5 supra. Bethiah, sen., considering the known facts, could have been no one but a dau. of Thomas.) 5 Possibly other daughters not identified.

BASSETT.

Nathan Bassett, son of Nathaniel and Mary or Dorcas (Joyce) Bassett of Marshfield and Yarmouth, born , married Mary, daughter of Thomas and Deborah Crow of Yarmouth, March 7, 1709, and

settled at Monomoit soon after. He bought of one of the Covells (probably Joseph) an interest in the common land and settled on that part of it on the south side of the road to Yarmouth, opposite the farm of Joseph Nickerson. In the division of the common land in 1713, he had all the land between the ponds and the road, from the Indian meeting house nearly to Harwich line, assigned to him.¹⁰ He died in 1728, but his estate was not settled. His widow died in 1742, leaving a will dated Nov. 5, 1741, proved May 6, 1742, disposing of her husband's property. She gave the homestead to her sons Nathaniel and Samuel.¹¹

COVELL.

Nathaniel Covell, son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Nickerson)⁹ Covell, born about 1670, married March 1, 1696-7, Judith Nickerson, dau. of William and Mercy. He lived on or near his father's farm between Crow's pond and Ryder's cove at Chathamport.¹² He was selectman two years and treasurer two years. His will, dated Sept. 19, 1746, was proved March 13, 1746-7. He had previously disposed of his real estate to his children. His widow, daughter Elizabeth and granddaughter Daty Nickerson each received one-third of his personal estate.¹³

William Covell, son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Nickerson) Covell, was born at Monomoit about 1673. His wife was Sarah, but her parentage is not known. His homestead, bought of Joseph Nickerson about 1695, was at Chathamport, bounded "Easterly by Ensign William Nickerson, Southerly by the land of Jehosaphat Eldred, Southerly, Southwesterly and Westerly by ye land of Jeremiah Nickerson's to ye Bank or Clift neer ye Wading place, and Northerly by ye Clift," containing 60 acres. On November 28, 1710, he bought of Jeremiah Nickerson a tract of 20 acres adjoining the above on the west. All his lands and right at Chatham, he sold by deed dated September 10, 1716, to John Crowell, Jr., of Yarmouth¹⁴ and removed to Harwich, where he purchased of his brother Ephraim the easterly part of the latter's farm, lying on the southwest side of Flax pond. It was conveyed to him by deed dated February 9, 1718-9, after he had built a house upon the tract.

NOTES.

(10) A Proprietors' Book for Chatham, town clerk's office.

(11) Children of Nathan and Mary (Crow) Bassett (from Probate Records, order uncertain): 1 Dorcas, b. . . . ; m. John Nickerson, Jr., son of William of Harwich, March 14, 1727-8 (Har. Rec.). 2 Nathan, b. . . . ; m. Elizabeth Rogers, dau. of Eleazer of Harwich, Jan. 2, 1734-5 (Har. Rec.). 3 Mary, b. . . . ; single in 1741. 4 Thomas, b. . . . ; m. 1st Deborah Godfrey, dau. of Moses; 2nd, Mary Newcomb, widow of Joseph of Wellfleet, Sept. 15, 1763 (East. Rec.). 5 Hannah, b. . . . ; m. 1st Joseph Covell, son of Joseph, who died before 1741, and she m. 2nd Asa Mayo of Eastham July 23, 1756 (East. Rec.). 6 Nathaniel, b. . . . ; m. Sarah Chase, dau. of Thomas of Yarmouth, Aug. 23, 1739 (Yar. Rec.). 7 Samuel, b. . . . ; living in 1741.

This farm of 40 acres he sold by deed dated August 17, 1725, to Jonathan Smalley of Harwich¹⁵ and removed to that part of Eastham now Wellfleet. He died there January 18, 1760, aged 87.¹⁶

Joseph Covell, son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Nickerson) Covell, born at Monomoit about 1675, married first Lydia Stewart, daughter of Ensign Hugh of Monomoit, about 1700. She died not long after and he married second Hannah Bassett, daughter of Nathaniel of Yarmouth and sister of Nathan of Monomoit, March 1, 1703-4. His farm was on the east side of Muddy Cove and extended east to the present road from the old cemeteries over to the late Rufus Smith's. It was a part of the old William Nickerson farm. There is no record of his death or of his children and no settlement of his estate. He was living as late as 1732,¹⁷ but does not appear in the tax list of 1755.¹⁸

Ephraim Covell, youngest son of Nathaniel and Sarah (Nickerson) Covell, born about 1677; married, first, Mercey, who died Feb. 1, 1727-8; second, Abigail Ellis of Yarmouth Feb. 4, 1729-30, and after her decease, third, Mary Taylor of Chatham (intent. Sept. 20, 1746), who survived him.¹⁹ By deed dated May 19, 1699, he received from his mother one-fourth part of all her interest in his grandfather Nickerson's home, farm and in all his other land at Monomoit, his brothers probably receiving their respective shares at the same time.²⁰ His part of his grandfather's farm lay between the two ponds (which are next the Stephen Smith place)

and the road past the late Dr. Clifford's and extended easterly nearly to the head of Ryder's Cove. This property he sold in 1712 to Edward Bangs of Harwich, receiving in exchange the farm of 300 acres on the south side of Harwich, formerly belonging to Joseph Severance and Manoah Ellis, which lay between Grassy pond, Flax pond and the sea, and bounded west on land of Isaac Atkins and east on land of Scotto Clark.²¹ His house was on the south side of Grassy pond. He sold the easterly part of this farm to his brother William in 1719. In the latter part of his life he was reputed to be a Quaker.²² His will, dated July 14, 1749,²³ was proved Sept. 10, 1753.²⁴

NOTES.

- (12) Town Records, 1734.
 (13) Children of Nathaniel and Judith (Nickerson) Covell (from Probate Records, order uncertain):
 1 Jane, b. ; m. Jonathan Nickerson, son of Thomas, about 1718.
 2 John, b. ; m. Thankful Bangs, dau. of Jonathan of Harwich, Aug. 16, 1721 (Har. Rec.).
 3 Nathaniel, b. ; m. Keziah Tucker, dau. of Samuel, April 14, 1727 (Chat. Rec.).
 4 Seth, b. ; m. Sarah Hurd, dau. of John of Harwich, Nov. 22, 1732 (Har. Rec.); removed to Ridgefield, Conn., about 1747.
 5 Hannah, b. ; m. Alexander Cunningham of Nantucket, Feb. 8, 1732-3 (Nan. Rec.).
 6 Simeon, b. ; m. Thankful Robins of Yarmouth, probably dau. of James, Aug. 26, 1746 (Yar. Rec.); removed to Ridgefield, Conn.
 7 Elizabeth, b. ; died single about 1776. This Nathaniel Covell

did not settle in the north part of Eastham as stated by Pratt (Hist. of Eastham, 113); it was his brother William who is referred to.

(14) M. L. Luce papers.

(15) Files Superior Court of Judicature, No. 62,893.

(16) Children of William and Sarah () Covell (order uncertain): 1 Nathaniel, b. ; m. Esther Atwood, dau. of Medad of Eastham (int. July 29, 1724, East. Rec.). Their children probably were Esther, Sarah, Reuben, Philip, Jedidah and Priscilla. 2 Ephraim, b. ; m. Mercy Brown of Eastham, July 9, 1730 (East. Rec.). Their children were Amy, Phebe, Zeruah, Ephraim, Amy, Solomon, Daniel, Mary, Mercy. 3 William, b. ; m. 1st Joanna Atwood, widow of Eleazer of Eastham, June 27, 1734 (East. Rec.). She died Jan. 16, 1736-7, in her 44th year (Hdstn.) and he m. 2nd Elizabeth Webber of Eastham Feb. 16, 1737-8 (East. Rec.). Children: Joanna and David. 4 Probably a son, b. ; m. Mary , and d. young, leaving a widow and dau. Mary. 5 Prob. a dau., b. ; m. before 1726 Daniel Eldridge of Eastham and d. young. (Files Sup. Ct. of Judicature, No. 19,310.) Other children not identified.

(17) M. L. Luce papers.

(18) Children of Joseph Covell: By wife Lydia: 1 Lydia, b. July 12, 1701 (Chat. Rec.), m. Thomas Nickerson, Jr., May 16, 1716 (Chat. Rec.). By wife Hannah: (order uncertain) 2 Sarah, b. ; m. William Nickerson. ("Red Stockings"), son of William, about 1723 (Osborn Nickerson papers). 3 James, b. ; m. 1st Mehitable

Nickerson, dau. of Samuel of Harwich, Aug. 4, 1727 (Har. Rec.). She died Nov. 26, 1761, and he m. 2nd Ruth (Crowell) Kelley, widow of Amos Kelley of Yarmouth. 4 Nathaniel, b. ; m. Mary Chase, dau. of Isaac of Yarmouth (int. July 20, 1740, Yar. Rec.). 5 Joseph, b. ; m. Hannah Bassett, dau. of Nathan, and died not long after marriage, leaving widow and dau. Hannah. 6 Possibly a dau. Constant, who. m. Ebenezer Nickerson, son of Thomas. 7 Possibly a dau. Dorcas, who m. James Nickerson, son of William.

(19) The Harwich records give the name of the second wife as Mrs. Abigail Ellis and of the third wife as Mrs. Mary Taylor, yet one and perhaps both were unmarried. Mary Taylor was dau. of John Taylor of Yarmouth and Chatham. Her brother, Seth Taylor of Chatham, in his will in 1762 mentions "my sister, Mary Covell, which now liveth with me."

(20) The description in this deed is as follows: "All that part & share of land situate, lying & being in Manamoyet aforesaid bounded viz: ye estern corner a stone marked E near ye harbor, from sd stone Westerly to a stone marked E on ye Southerly side of ye Buriing place hill & so from sd stone Westerly to a rock marked C & so westerly to a stone marked E on ye Southerly side of the Comon road wieh is ye bounds between sd lands & Joseph Covell's land & so ranging on ye Southerly side of sd Comon highway to another stone marked E & from sd stone Southerly to a white oake tree marked on four sids nere a pond called by

ye Indians Nespoxt and so ranging by ye North side of sd pond Easterly to a pond called ye pasture pond to ye old bounds & so by sd pond untill it come to ye land wich was Abraham Johnson's. [Also a parcel of meadow adjoining meadow of Joseph Covell, imperfectly described.] With one quarter part of a small neck of land in said Manamoy comonly called ye short neck, with one quarter part of all my share of the undivided land with all woods, fencings, with whatsoever ys standing, lying or growing on sd lands." Reservation made for "William Nickerson Senr to have a convenient highway from his now dwelling house to ly open to his land at Manamoyet." (Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 3,919.)

(21) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 144,324.

(22) Freeman, History of Cape Cod, II, 512.

(23) On a stone erected to his memory in Harwich Centre cemetery by his grandson, the date of his death is given as Aug. 23, 1748 (13 Mayflower Descendant, 239.) This is obviously a mistake, as his will is dated in 1749.

(24) Children of Ephraim and Mercy Covell (from his will, order uncertain): 1 Thankful, b.

; m. Edward Nickerson, son of Thomas of Chatham, Feb. 24, 1724-5 (Har. Rec.). 2 Mercy, b.

; m. Samuel Burge, son of Samuel of Yarmouth, Sept. 25, 1730 (Har. Rec.). 3 Sarah, b.

; m. Benjamin Nickerson, son of Samuel of Harwich, Oct. 13, 1741 (Har. Rec.). 4 Mary, b.

; m. Thomas Burge, son of Samuel of

Yarmouth, July 28, 1742 (Har. Rec.).

ELDRIDGE.

Lieut. William Eldredge, son of Robert and Elizabeth (Nickerson) Eldredge, married first, ; second, Sarah (Newcomb) Conant, widow of Joshua of Salem and later of Truro, Jan. 30, 1706-7. She was born about 1670. As early as 1700 he had a sloop or small vessel used in coasting trips.²⁵ He acquired his father's farm at West Chatham in the John K. Kendrick neighborhood, lying between the highway and Oyster pond river, besides considerable adjacent land. This property, consisting of about 200 acres, he sold by deed dated December 18, 1711, to Mr. Seth Taylor of Yarmouth, a real estate trader,²⁶ and removed to Monomoit Beach, where he had bought land of Joseph Stewart and others. He built a house here and opened a tavern for the entertainment of sailors and others seeking a temporary harbor at or near Wreck Cove. After a few years he sold this place to Morris Farris and returned to the main land.²⁷ He was selectman for seven years between 1697 and 1727 and lieutenant as early as 1713. His death, which occurred April 27, 1749, is the only one recorded in the first book of town records. There is no settlement of his estate and no list of his children.²⁸

Serg. Joseph Eldredge, son of Robert and Elizabeth (Nickerson) Eldredge, perhaps married first a daughter of Teague Jones, a neighbor at Monomoit from 1675 to 1683. He acquired land and prob-

ably lived for a time in the south part of Yarmouth on the west side of Bass river. His land adjoined land of Teague Jones and his sons, and the circumstances indicate that it was a family community.²⁹ The Boston records give the marriage of a Joseph Eldredge and Elizabeth Gross October 9, 1695. He was living at Monomoit again before 1698, where he settled on a tract of 50 acres on the south side of the Oyster pond, extending from the head of the pond westerly along the pond and river. William Nickerson, son of John, owned and lived upon the farm next southerly, and the present road from Atwood's corner westerly, known as Cedar street, is the old cart way which separated these two farms. His house stood at the east end of the farm in the present John Emery neighborhood.³⁰ He was selectman in 1710. His will, dated August 27, 1728, was proved September 24, 1735. His wife Elizabeth survived him and was living probably as late as 1755. His farm passed to his three sons, subject to the dower of the widow.³¹

Jehoshaphat Eldredge, son of William and Anne (Lumpkin) Eldredge of Yarmouth, born in that town about 1658, married Elizabeth, probably daughter of Nathaniel and Sarah Covell.³² He settled on a portion of the old Nickerson or Sarah Covell farm at Chathamport. His house stood on the west side of Crow's pond, near and south of the William Covell (later Paul Crowell) farm. His will, dated Feb. 9, 1731-2, was proved Nov. 29, 1732. He had a house and lot of land at Red Riv-

er neck, which was given to his son Elisha, a neck of land at Chathamport called Short neck, meadow at Ragged neck, meadow at Matchapoxett and woodland near the Red river. His dwelling house and land near Paul Crowell were given to his sons Ebenezer and Barnabas. His wife survived him, and was probably living as late as 1755.³³

NOTES.

- (25) Town Records, 1700.
- (26) Deed from Seth Taylor to Thomas Doane dated March 20, 1718-9. M. L. Luce papers.
- (27) See page 209, note 29, Smith, History of Chatham.
- (28) Children of William and Eldredge (order uncertain):
 1 Rebecca, b. ; m. Ebenezer Berry of Harwich, son of John, Oct. 13, 1713 (Har. Rec.).
 2 William, b. ; m. Thankful Crowell, dau. of John of Yarmouth, March 20, 1718 (Yar. Rec.); lived at Harwich. Their children were Reuben, Rebecca, Sarah, Thankful, Bridget, William, Isaac, Jeremiah.
 3 Isaac, b. ; m. Dorothy ; lived at Harwich. Their children were Jerusha, Monica, Mary.
 4 Prob. a son Joshua, b. ; m. (taxed in 1755).
 5 Other children, if any, not identified.
- (29) See a deed from Teague Jones to his son Jeremiah, dated May 29, 1691, conveying land on the west side of Bass river, Yarmouth. Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 9,838.
- (30) See a deed from Samuel Sprague to Richard Sears dated March 3, 1707-8. Josiah Paine papers.
- (31) Children of Joseph and

Eldredge (from the will, order uncertain): 1 William, b. ; m. Hannah Taylor, dau. of John, Oct. 1, 1713 (note 45, page 188, Smith, Hist. of Chatham). 2 Tabitha, b. ; m. William Mitchell, son of William, March 19, 1712-3 (note 45, page 188, Smith, Hist. of Chatham), and died not long after. 3 John, b. ; m. Ruhamah Doane, dau. of Thomas, Sept. 26, 1728 (Chat. Rec.). 4 Jeremiah, b. ; m. 1st Lydia Hamilton, dau. of Daniel, before 1720. She died before Jan. 28, 1735-6, and he m. 2nd Thankful , perhaps his first wife's sister.

(32) James Covell mentions Barnabas Eldredge as his cousin.

(33) Children of Jehoshaphat and Elizabeth (Covell) Eldredge (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Nathaniel, b. ; m. Sarah Conant, dau. of Joshua of Truro, Sept. 4, 1712 (East. Rec.). She was b. in Salem April 12, 1695. 2 Elnathan, b. as early as 1694; m. 1st at Yarmouth, Hannah O'Kelley, dau. of Jeremiah of Yarmouth, where he was living in 1723; m. 2nd Deliverance, probably dau. of Caleb Lumbert; removed to Dartmouth about 1740. 3 Elizabeth, b. ; single 1732. 4 Edward, b. July 17, 1702 (Chat. Rec.); m. Mary, dau. of Thomas Nickerson. 5 Elisha, b. ; m. Fear Nickerson, dau. of Robert. 6 Ebenezer, b. about 1707, m. Deliverance, dau. of William and Sarah Nickerson (tradition through Mr. Josiah Paine), about 1742. 7 Barnabas, b. ; m. Mary , about 1735.

GODFREY.

George Godfrey, eldest son of George and Godfrey of Eastham, born January 2, 1662-3, settled at Monomoit about 1690. There is no record of his marriage. He owned land, probably his homestead, near and north of Ragged Neck.³⁴ He was chosen in 1700 with William Nickerson, Sen., to have charge of the building of the first meeting house. There is no mention of him in the town records after this date.³⁵

Moses Godfrey, son of George and Godfrey of Eastham, born Jan. 27, 1667-8, married Deborah Cook, daughter of Josiah and Deborah (Hopkins) Cook of Eastham. He settled at Monomoit about 1695, in that part called Cotehpinecut (Old Harbor) in the vicinity of the farm of William Nickerson, son of the first William.³⁶ He was early interested in religious affairs and was a special friend of Rev. John Latimer, who remembered him and his wife in his will.³⁷ When the church was organized in 1720, he and his wife were among the first to join. He soon, however, found himself at odds with Rev. Joseph Lord, the pastor, on account of the attitude of the latter towards Rev. Samuel Osborn and the church at Pochet (now Orleans) and was excommunicated, together with Mr. Elisha Mayo. They both were at once received again by the Pochet church, to which they had formerly belonged. Mr. Godfrey was selectman in 1710 and held other offices. He was a substantial citizen and reared a large family, which furnished en-

ergetic citizens to the town for nearly two centuries. He died April 16, 1743, aged 75 years, and his wife died seven days later, aged 64. He left a will, dated Feb. 1741-2, proved May 21, 1743, leaving his large property to his seven living sons, Samuel, Moses, David, George, Benjamin, Joshua and Richard, they paying certain legacies. A son Jonathan had died.³⁹

Jonathan Godfrey, son of George and Godfrey of Eastham, born June 24, 1682, married Mercy Mayo, daughter of Thomas and Barbara (Knowles) Mayo of Eastham, October 30, 1707, and settled at Monomoit soon after. The location of his farm is not known. He appears to have been a worthy citizen, but not prominent. He had an interest in the Common land and was one of those who took pew ground in 1742. His will, dated March 7, 1765, was proved April 23, 1765, and divided his property equally among his children and the heirs of deceased children.⁴⁰

NOTES.

(34) See deed from William Nickerson and others to Michael Stewart dated Oct. 12, 1702, and deed from Samuel Eldredge to Seth Taylor dated May 15, 1711. M. L. Luce papers.

(35) It is not known whether or not he had any children.

(36) See Smith, Hist. of Chatham, page 142, note 30.

(37) See Smith, Hist. of Chatham, page 166.

(39) Children of Moses and Deborah (Cook) Godfrey (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Jona-

than, b. ; m. Mercy Nickerson, dau. of Robert, Sept. 2, 1725 (Chat. Rec.). (Admn. on his estate March 18, 1729-30. Children, Caleb, Jonathan, Rebecca.) 2 Samuel, b. ; m. 3 Moses, b. ; m. Martha Collins, dau. of John, about 1726. 4 Desire, b. ; m. Nathaniel Ryder, son of John and Esther of Yarmouth, Sept. 26, 1728 (Chat. Rec.). 5 George, b. about 1706; m. 1st Mercy Knowles, dau. of Richard, Nov. 1, 1733 (Chat. Rec.). She died May 14, 1758, and he m. 2nd Jane (Collins) Bearse, widow of Prince Snow, Jr., and Benjamin Bearse, Nov. 9, 1758 (Chat. Rec.). 6 David, b. ; m. Priscilla Baker, dau. of of Yarmouth, Oct. 14, 1731 (Yar. Rec.). 7 Mary, b. Sept. 4, 1711 (old Bible record); m. 1st Caleb Nickerson, son of William, about 1732. He died Dec. 18, 1749 (Chat. Rec.), and she m. 2nd Seth Smith, son of John, Nov. 18, 1756 (old Bible record). 8 Deborah, b. ; m. Thomas Bassett, son of Nathan. 9 Benjamin, b. ; m. Elizabeth Hopkins, dau. of Elisha, Aug. 23, 1738 (Chat. Rec.). 10 Elizabeth, b. about 1717; m. Benjamin Bearse, son of Benjamin of Barnstable, May 31, 1733 (Chat. Rec.). 11 Joshua, b. ; m. Phebe Gould, dau. of Nathaniel of Harwich (Int. Dec. 17, 1742, Har. Rec.). 12 Richard, b. ; m. Azubah Collins, dau. of Solomon, Jan. 10, 1750-1 (Chat. Rec.). He died in 1759, leaving Enoch, b. April 20, 1752, and Warren, b. April 6, 1757 (Liverpool, N. S. Rec.).

(40) Children of Jonathan and Mercy (Mayo) Godfrey (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Hannah,

b. ; m. James Rogers, Jr., of Eastham May 21, 1730 (East. Rec.). 2 Mercy, b. ; m. 1st Ebenezer Burgess, son of Thomas, of Yarmouth (Int. Feb. 22, 1734-5, Yar. Rec.); m. 2nd Elkanah Rogers, son of Joseph, of Eastham (Int. June 25, 1748, East. Rec.). 3 Thomas, b. ; m. 1st Bethiah Eldredge, dau. of Nathaniel, June 7, 1733 (Chat. Rec.); m. 2nd Mrs. Mary Covell of Eastham, March 8, 1753 (East. Rec.). 4 Ruth, b. about 1719; m. 1st John Gould, son of Nathaniel of Harwich (Int. Aug. 18, 1737, East. Rec.); m. 2nd Thomas Myrick of Harwich. 5 Lydia, b. ; m. 1st Joseph Myrick, son of of Eastham (Int. Feb. 5, 1742-3, East. Rec.); m. 2nd Samuel Smith, Jr., of Eastham (Int. July 3, 1756, East. Rec.). 6 Jephthah, b. ; m. Bathsheba Eldredge, dau. of Nathaniel (See deed dated April 12, 1759, Warren J. Nickerson papers). 7 Mehitabel, b. ; m. Nathaniel Hamilton, son of Thomas, Sept. 7, 1749 (Chat. Rec.). 8 Anna, b. ; m. 1st Eldredge; m. 2nd James Freeman Dec. 8, 1763 (Chat. Rec.). 9 Barbara, b. ; m. Young; died before her father.

HAMILTON.

Serg. Daniel Hamilton, probably son of Thomas and Lydia Hamilton of Rhode Island, Sandwich and Eastham,⁴¹ born in 1670, married at Eastham Mary, daughter of Samuel Smith, about 1693 and resided there till after the birth of their second child. By the will of her father, who died in 1697, his wife came into possession of one-half of two farms at Monomoit located at Tom's Neck, and the

family removed thither. His first wife having died, he married second August 5, 1708, Sarah (Smith) Snow, widow of Joseph Snow of Eastham,⁴² and daughter of John and Hannah Smith of Eastham. His third wife was Desire Springer, widow of Edward Springer of Newport, R. I., and daughter of James Gorham of Barnstable, whom he married at Barnstable Dec. 15, 1715. His fourth wife, who survived him, was named Elizabeth, perhaps daughter of John Taylor. Serg. Hamilton, with his brother Thomas, served under Capt. John Gorham in the expedition to Canada in 1690 and received therefor a share of land at Dunbarton, N. H., in 1735.⁴³ He was active in local affairs, being selectman three years, constable several years and holding other positions. He was styled Sergeant as early as 1710. Through his first wife, he was interested not only in the farm at Tom's Neck, but in the Common lands and the Great Beach. He died December 8, 1738, aged 68 years. His will, written by Rev. Mr. Lord, dated January 20, 1735-6, was proved March 22, 1738-9. In it he calls Sarah, Elizabeth and Thankful his three youngest daughters.⁴⁴

NOTES.

(41) Note the following entry in the Sandwich town records: "Thomas Hambleton, the son of Thomas Hamblton and lidia his wife was bourne the 17 of Febuary 1671, borne at Rohd Iland." 44 Mayflower Descendant, 170.

(42) "Nathaniel Snow of Lawful Age Testifieth and Saith that on

or aboute ye year 1709 I went to Chatham to Live with my Father in Law, Daniel Hambleton, Late of said Chatham, Deceased, and I saw my said Father, John Atkins, Theophilus Mayo, Thomas Mayo, John Smith and Joshua Higgins Mow and Carry of hay from Monomoit Great Beach, so called, for seven years together without Molestation. Sworn in Court July 1753. Att. Saml Winthrop Clerk." Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 71,149.

(43) State Archives, vol. 114, page 116; petition of Shubael Gorham June 12, 1735. Acts and Resolves of Mass.

(44) Children of Daniel Hamilton (from the will and Eastham records). 1 Grace, b. Aug. 3, 1694; d. Aug. 20, 1694 (East. Rec.). 2 Thomas, b. Sept. 1, 1695, m. Rebecca Mayo, dau. of Nathaniel of Eastham, May 3, 1716 (East. Rec.). 3 Lydia, b. ; m. Jeremiah Eldredge, son of Joseph, about or before 1720. 4 Mary, b. ; m. Judah Mayo, son of Thomas, of Eastham (Int. Jan. 27, 1721-2, East. Rec.). 5 Samuel, b. ; m. 1st Bethiah Stewart, dau. of Michael, May 25, 1727 (Chat. Rec.); m. 2nd Mrs. Mercy Ellis of Harwich, Oct. 3, 1741 (Har. Rec.). 6 Daniel, b. ; m. 1st, Abigail , about 1729; m. 2nd Mrs Sarah Lewis of Harwich (Int. July 21, 1750, Chat. Rec.). 7 Sarah, b. ; m. Theodore Harding, son of Joshua, of Eastham, Jan. 23, 1728-9 (Chat. Rec.). 8 Joseph, b. ; m. Martha Atkins, dau. of Joseph, of Eastham, Jan. 22, 1731-2 (East. Rec.); lived at Eastham. 9 Elizabeth, b. ; m. Seth Taylor, son of John, about 1730. 10 Thankful,

b. ; single in 1736; perhaps m. Jeremiah Eldredge as 2nd wife after sister's death. The last four children were by wife Sarah.

HARDING.

Capt. Joseph Harding, eldest son of Joseph and Bethiah (Cook) Harding of Eastham, born July 8, 1667, married Dinah , probably daughter of Tristram Hedges, and settled at Monomoit prior to 1693 in the southwest quarter of the town. He was selectman seven years, treasurer two years and held other local offices. He became lieutenant of the military company as early as 1702 and captain as early as 1706, holding that position till 1715. He was probably one of the first members of the church. He had interests in the Common lands and with Thomas Atkins, bought of Josephus Quason in 1797 the interest of the latter in the Quason lands in Harwich, later receiving one-sixteenth part in the division of these lands⁴⁵. In 1721 he took the contract to build a new parsonage for Rev. Mr. Lord, but later, after he had begun, the town cancelled the agreement and controversy ensued. He lived on the neck south-east of Cockle Cove, then called Ragged Neck, the whole of which he owned at his death. Harding's Beach, which adjoins this neck, was named for him. His wife Dinah died January 28, 1738, aged 76 years. He died early in 1745, leaving a will dated February 16, 1738-9, proved May 8, 1745. The homestead at Ragged Neck was given to his son Nehemiah. His son Maziah had a homestead and land on each side of the road

leading out of the neck to the highway, bought by the testator of Samuel Taylor in part and of Michael Stewart in part.⁴⁶

NOTES.

(45) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 7,626.

(46) Children of Joseph and Dinah [Hedges(?)] Harding (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Joseph, b. ; m. 1st Jane Adams, dau. of John of Boston and sister of Rev. Hugh Adams, July 23, 1713 (note 45, page 188, Smith, Hist. of Chatham); m. 2nd Mary Stewart, widow of Michael, betw. 1716 and 1720. 2 Maziah, b. about 1693; m. Bethiah Hawes, dau. of Isaac, about 1721. 3 Dinah, b. about 1700; m. 1st, William Baker, Jr., of Yarmouth, who d. soon after marriage; m. 2nd John Young, son of David of Eastham (Int. March 10, 1721, East. Rec.). 4 Bethiah, b. ; m. William Nickerson, son of Thomas, before Oct. 1725. 5 Priscilla, b. ; m. Joseph Howes, son of Thomas, Feb. 2, 1726-7 (Chat. Rec.). 6 Grace, b. ; m. ; d. before her father, leaving dau. Mary. 7 Mary, b. ; m. John Buck, son of , after 1726. 8 Nehemiah, b. about 1708; m. Priscilla Collins, dau. of Joseph of Eastham, Jan. 14, 1730-1 (East. Rec.). The Harding Gen. by Rev. Abner Morse mentions a son John who m. a Deborah Nickerson, but the will of Joseph Harding does not mention him or any children of his. Sylvanus Harding, a grandson of Joseph, had a son John who m. Deborah Nickerson, Jr., Sept. 15, 1767 (Chat. Rec.).

HOWES.

Capt. Thomas Howes, son of Joseph and Howes of Yarmouth, born about 1680, married at Eastham Dec. 11, 1701, Content Smith, daughter of Daniel and Mary (Young) Smith of Eastham.⁴⁷ By deed dated April 8, 1703, he purchased of William Griffith, Sen., all the real estate of the latter at Monomoit, consisting of a homestead lot of 26 acres in the Christopher Smith neighborhood, one-half of 20 acres on the Great Neck and some meadow land (in all about 40 acres).⁴⁸ Two years later by deed dated October 22, 1705, he purchased of Philip Griffith a lot of four acres adjoining the homestead, the other half of the 20 acre lot on the Great Neck and another lot of meadow.⁴⁹

Still later, by deed dated April 6, 1713, he purchased of James Eldredge, the farm inherited by the latter from his father, Nicholas Eldredge, which adjoined a portion of the Howes farm.⁵⁰ He was selectman two years and treasurer two years. He was ensign of the military company in 1715, later lieutenant and then captain. His will, dated May 29, 1736, was proved October 19, 1738. His widow survived him. His real estate was divided between his three sons.⁵¹

NOTES.

(47) The Howes Genealogy by Mr. J. C. Howes is incorrect in giving the wife of Thomas as Rebecca Howes. See the will of said Daniel Smith in Barnstable Probate Records.

(48) "Thirty acres of which Farm or Tenement is yt on which ye dwellinghouse now stands,

which hath a highway through it down to ye Inlands so Called, ye land on ye North side of sd way where ye house stands was bought of William Nickerson deceased, with ye priviledge of Comon for Cutting wood feeding or grasing as pr deed expressed under hand of ye sd William Nickerson; and ye land on ye South side of sd way bought of James Maker, excepting four acres of sd Tract which was formerly disposed of to my son Philip Griffeth x x x and also one half of a twenty acre lot upon ye Great Neck & is Called ye fourth lot, my son Philip Griffeth owning ye other half—with two acres of salt and fresh meadow, one acre bought of Trustrum Hedges & one acre bought of Samuel Nickerson, joyning both together & lyeth on ye South side of ye Oyster pond & is on ye Easterly side of ye meadow of Lieut Eldred deceased. With ye Interest in ye Meeting house according to charge paid in building ye Same by ye said William Griffeth." Old Barnstable Deeds, book 4, page 87. M. L. Luce papers.

(49) Forty acres more or less, bounded "beginning on ye south side at a stone next ye lands of ye sd Thomas Howes & on ye west side it is bounded by ye sd Howeses land & John Paddock's land, from sd stone to a red oak tree, thence to ye Corner of ye fence, thence to a red oak tree by ye Cart way, thence by a sett off Easterly to a pine tree marked, thence a little Southerly to a white oak tree by a swamp side & so through ye Swamp to another white oak tree & thence by

ye swamp to ye Indian bounds, leaving ye highway to ye Jury way, thence by ye sd Jury way Westward to ye first mentioned stone. And also ye one half of a twenty acre lot on ye Stage Neck, ye other half of said lot is now in ye tenure & possession of ye sd Thomas Howes. And also half an acre of meadow, lying in Grigeries Neck adjoining to David Melvels meadow & was formerly William Griffith Junrs meadow." Old Barnstable Deeds, book 5, page 49. M. L. Luce papers.

(50) Sixteen acres, "bounded on ye Southwest by an old ditch & post & rail fence down to ye White Pond so called & then bounded Northwest by sd Pond down to ye land of John Eldredg which was set out to him as a part of his Father's farm to a Beach tree marked, thence Easterly to a markt red oak tree near ye head of a swamp & stone set in ye ground & thence upon ye same range straight over a fresh pond to ye other side thereof. And then bounded by sd Pond down to meet with ye other land of ye sd Thomas Howes: Then it is bounded Easterly by ye land of ye sd Thomas Howes up to ye land now in occupation of Lieut. Seth Taylor which he bought of Lieut. Eldredge (excepting only ye highway or road throu) And then by ye land of sd Taylor to ye first mentioned ditch & post & rails (only still allowing to Elizabeth, ye mother of ye sd James to gather cherrys & other fruit for her spending in ye summer time & ye sd James to take off ye timber & old bords of ye old house thereon)." Old Barnstable Deeds,

book 6, page 513, Luce papers.

(51) Children of Thomas and Content (Smith) Howes (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Daniel, b. about 1702; m. Elizabeth Doane, dau. of Thomas, about 1723. 2 Elizabeth, b. ; m. Samuel Stewart, son of Hugh, as his 2nd wife about 1730. 3 Mary, b. ; single in 1736; m. Zachariah Sears of Yarmouth, as 2nd wife, Dec. 14, 1768 (Chat. Rec.) 4 Joseph, b. about 1708; m. Priscilla Harding, dau. of Joseph, Feb. 2, 1726-7 (Chat. Rec.). 5 Thankful, b. ; prob. m. Paul Ryder, son of of Yarmouth (Int. Oct. 1, 1742, Yar. Rec.). 6 Thomas, b. about 1712; m. 1st Rebecca Sears, dau. of Daniel, about 1730. She died of smallpox Dec. 10, 1765, and he m. 2nd Hope (Sears) Doane, widow of Nehemiah. 7 Hannah, b. ; prob. m. Joseph Harding, son of Maziah, Sept. 17, 1747 (Chat. Rec.).

LUMBERT.

‘Caleb Lumbert, son of Caleb and Lumbert of Barnstable and Monomoit, born ; married Sept. 1, 1704, Elizabeth Small, daughter of Edward and Mary (Woodman) Small. By deed dated Feb. 22, 1709-10, he purchased of Joseph and Ephraim Covell all their interest in the Common lands at Red River Neck and was the first to settle there.⁵³ In the division of the Common lands in 1713, a considerable tract in this neck was laid out to him, on which he had, no doubt, previously settled. He had trouble with the adjoining owners. In 1722 he was sued by Robert Nickerson, son of William, for cutting wood over the line, but successfully defended himself

on appeal.⁵⁴ In or about 1733 he was attorney for Katherine, widow of Nathaniel Nickerson, having charge of her property in the town in her absence.⁵⁴ By deed dated Feb. 14, 1739, he conveyed to Shubael Gorham, Jr., his rights in Narragansett Township No. 7, (Gorham, Me.) derived from his father.⁵⁵ In 1741 he brought suit against Ebenezer and Barnabas Eldredge on account of the adjoining meadow land of said Eldredge.⁵⁶ He appears to have moved from town or to have died soon after this date, there being no further mention of him.

NOTES.

(52) “All that our right & Interest in & to a neck of land called the Red River Neck in said Manamoy, that is, our right in & to the upland in said neck, being two fifths parts of one third of sd neck, the whole of sd neck is bounded viz: at the Northeasterly corner where a spring Issues out into the pond thence running on a straight line to the cartway to a little swamp neer adjoining to said Cart way to the Easterly side of said Swamp, thence running Westerly by said Cartway as [it] runs to the head of the Red River hollow.” Old Barnstable Deeds, book 5, page 563. Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 8,005.

(53) Records, Superior Court of Judicature, vol. 5, page 171; files of said Court, No. 19,259.

(54) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, Nos. 37,166 and 38,588.

(55) York, Me., Deeds, book 27, page 78.

(56) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 55,602.

(57) Children of Caleb and Elizabeth (Small) Lumbert (Chat. Rec.): 1 Mary, b. June 4, 1705. 2 Deliverance, b. April 4, 1710; m. probably Elnathan Eldredge, son of Jehoshaphat. 3 Elizabeth, b. April 1, 1714; m. Seth Hammond of Dartmouth Aug. 23, 1738 (Chat. Rec.), and lived there. 4 Caleb, b. Sept. 20, 1717; m. . 5 Edward, b. March 11, 1721-2; m. . One of these sons m. Nelly Eldredge, dau. of Nathaniel.

NICKERSON.

William Nickerson, son of John and Sarah (Williams) Nickerson, married Hannah . He settled on the Great Neck (Stage Neck) probably on the lot conveyed to his father Nickerson in 1674 (see note 83, page 124, Smith, History of Chatham). His house stood on the west side of the road to the wharf near the present Davis place and his land extended west along the south side of Cedar street to and beyond the Cedar Swamp.⁵⁸ He also had land on the east side of the road near the Joseph Atwood place. He was selectman two years and treasurer one year. He and some of his children signed their names Nicholson, doubtless through the influence of Rev. Mr. Lord, who evidently considered it the proper spelling. His will, written by Mr. Lord, was dated August 6, 1735, and proved Oct. 19, 1738. His wife Hannah survived him and was living as late as 1755. He gave the land on the east side of the road to his son David, that on the west side, with the dwelling house and outbuildings, to his son William. He had land at Seaquan-

set, which he gave to Thomas Bea, son of his daughter Martha, deceased, also meadow land bought of David Melvil at a place called Melvil's flats.⁵⁹

John Nickerson, son of John and Sarah (Williams) Nickerson, married Mary July 11, 1706. He lived on his father's farm between the White pond and Emery's pond near the centre of the town at that time. He was selectman three years and held other offices. His will, dated May 27, 1762, was proved Sept. 7, 1762. His only son Elisha having removed to Nova Scotia, he gave his farm and other property to his maiden daughters, Mary and Elizabeth. He had meadow bought of David Melvil and land and meadow adjoining John Buck's.⁶⁰

Lieut. Thomas Nickerson, eldest son of William and Mercy (Williams) Nickerson, born at Monomoit about 1670, married Mary, daughter of Jonathan Bangs ✓ of Harwich. She was born April 14, 1671. He settled at Cotehpincut Neck (Old Harbor) on land lying just west of his father's farm there. He was selectman two years, town clerk twice for short periods and held other offices. His wife joined the Harwich church Nov. 14, 1708, and he and his children were all baptized Oct. 9, 1709. His wife was dismissed to the church in Chatham July 7, 1728.⁶¹ He was lieutenant of the military company as early as 1708. By deed dated July 11, 1706, he acquired the interest which his mother had by foreclosure in the land adjoining him on the west and in the possession of Dogamus, Stephen and Morti-

quit, Indians. They disputed his title and successfully defended themselves in the courts.⁶² There were about 100 acres in this tract, which bordered on Ryder's cove and Pleasant bay.⁶³ His will, dated August 4, 1735, was proved August 3, 1736. He devised his dwelling house and land connected with it and one-half of Ram Island to his nephew, Samuel Hinckley, who lived with him. His son Nathaniel received the other half of the island. His other sons had already received their portions.⁶⁴

Ensign William Nickerson, second son of William and Mercy (Williams) Nickerson, born about 1675, married first Deliverance, probably daughter of Caleb Lumbert, Sen., of Monomoit. She died probably about 1716 and he married second Anna Atwood, daughter of Eldad Atwood of Eastham, October 24, 1717.⁶⁵ By deed dated March 25, 1697, he purchased of John Quason a lot of land at Cotehpinicut, on which he probably lived.⁶⁶ His father, by deed dated October 13, 1702, conveyed to him the land at Monomesset Neck.⁶⁷ He was plaintiff for the "proprieters" in the dispute over the division of the Common lands. He is styled Ensign as early as 1706. He was selectman two years and for many years carried on the business of tanning hides. There was a demand for leather in those days not only for shoes but for making the leathern trousers which nearly everyone wore at his work. About 1740 he bought of the heirs of his brother Nathaniel a part of the real estate of the latter. He took pew ground

in the church in 1742. He died between October 19, 1742, date of the codicil to his will, and November 15, 1742, date of its probate. His wife Anna survived him and married August 25, 1747, Benjamin Bearse, Sen., of Barnstable, who died the following year. He gave the tan house and tanning business to his sons Caleb, Nathaniel and Eldad.⁶⁸

Nathaniel Nickerson, son of William and Mercy (Williams) Nickerson, born about 1680, married Katherine Stewart, daughter of Hugh, May 13, 1702. He settled at Chathamport on the west side of Frostfish creek. His homestead is described in 1728 as bounded "by Capt. Thomas Howes' land on ye South side and by Elisha Mayou's land on ye west and north side and by a salt creek on ye East side."⁶⁹ He was town treasurer in 1723 and 1724. Administration on his estate was granted to his widow Katherine, May 20, 1725. He left, beside the homestead held by deed from his father, a parcel of upland, meadow and woodland held by deed from Ebenezer Stewart, upland at "the Stage" by deed from William Mitchell, and land at Cotehpinicut by deed from his father. Elisha Mayo was appointed guardian of his daughter Mercy Sept. 8, 1726. His widow leased the homestead in 1728 to Samuel Godfrey⁷⁰ and probably removed with most of the family to Falmouth, where her daughter Experience had married. She appointed Caleb Lumbert an attorney for her, who had trouble with Godfrey, and in 1733 leased the property to Elisha Hopkins.⁷¹ The widow Katherine died

about 1740. There is no list of the children.⁷²

Robert Nickerson, youngest son of William and Mercy (Williams) Nickerson, born about 1684, married Rebecca Jones, daughter of Jeremiah of Yarmouth, March 28, 1706-7. He lived on his father's farm and came into full possession of it on the death of his father in 1719, subject to the life estate of the widow. By deed dated May 15, 1729, he conveyed all his property to his sons James, Robert, Sylvanus and Elkanah, reserving the use and improvement to himself and wife.⁷³ Soon after this his creditors became more pressing. Richard Knowles, Thomas Doane, Samuel Godfrey, Benjamin Ashton and others secured judgments against him about 1730.⁷⁴ His will, dated January 16, 1755, and proved February 4, 1755, mentions no other son but Elkanah. His widow died about 1765.⁷⁵

NOTES.

(58) A deed dated March 16, 1767, from William Nicholson to Joseph Atwood gives the following description of this land: Thirty acres bounded "Easterly by the Road to Stage Harbour Northerly by the land of John and Jeremiah Eldredge, Westerly by land of Solomon Eldredge as the fence stands and by other land of the grantor and in ye Swamp, Southerly by land of Seth Eldredge's heirs." Joseph Atwood papers.

(59) Children of William and Hannah () Nickerson (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Martha, b. ; m. John Bea of Eastham March 30, 1729 (East. Rec.).

2 Hannah, b. ; single in 1735. 3 David, b. ; m. Elizabeth Mayo, dau. of Nathaniel, of Eastham, Aug. 7, 1731 (East. Rec.). 4 Elizabeth, b. ; single in 1735. 5 Sarah, b. ; m. Thomas Ash before 1735. 6 William, b. ; m. Hannah Baker, dau. of Jonathan(?) of Yarmouth (Int. Jan. 28, 1738-9, Yar. Rec.). 7 Ruth, b. ; single in 1735. 8 Zilpha, b. ; m. Thomas Baxter, son of Thomas, of Yarmouth (Int. Nov. 8, 1740, Yar. Rec.).

(60) Children of John and Mary () Nickerson (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Elisha, b. March 7, 1706-7 (Chat. Rec.); m. Desire ; moved to Harwich and about 1761 to Liverpool, N. S., thence to Argyle, N. S. 2 Mary, b. ; single in 1762. 3 Elizabeth, b. ; single in 1762. 4 Bethiah, b. about 1715; died Aug. 7, 1759, aged 44 (Hdstn.). 5 ; m. Prince Young, son of John, and died leaving a dau. Patience.

(61) Harwich Church Records; IV Mayflower Descendant, 247; VI ib. 155.

(62) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, Nos. 7,043 and 13,779; Records, Superior Court of Judicature.

(63) Page 99, note, Smith, History of Chatham.

(64) Children of Thomas and Mary (Bangs) Nickerson (all baptized at Harwich Oct. 9, 1709, by Rev. Nathaniel Stone, who records their names in the following order, doubtless according to age): 1 Jonathan, b. ; m. 1st Jane Covell, dau. of Nathaniel, about 1718. She died about 1728, and he m. 2nd Sarah Collins, dau. of

Jonathan of Chatham and Truro; moved to Harwich about 1735 and to Provincetown about 1742. 2 Mercy, b. ; m. Seth Crowell, son of Thomas of Yarmouth, March 23, 1714 (note 45, page 188, Smith, History of Chatham). 3 Thomas, b. Dec. 24, 1696 (Chat. Rec.); m. 1st Lydia Covell, dau. of Joseph, May 16, 1716 (Chat. Rec.). She died Oct. 18, 1750 (Chat. Rec.), and he m. 2nd Mrs. Sarah Crowell, widow of John (Int. July 5, 1751) (Chat. Rec.); m. 3rd Mrs. Bethiah Harding, widow of Maziah, Dec. 26, 1763 (Chat. Rec.). 4 William, b. ; m. 1st Bethiah Harding, dau. of Joseph, before Oct. 1725; m. 2nd Sarah Bassett; moved to Ridgefield, Conn., in 1747. 5 Ebenezer, b. ; m. Constant, prob. a dau. of Joseph Covell. 6 Edward, -b. ; m. Thankful Covell, dau. of Ephraim of Harwich, Feb. 24, 1724-5 (Har. Rec.); lived in Harwich. 7 Nathaniel, b. ; m. Hannah ; moved to Ridgefield, Conn., in 1747, thence to Putnam Co., N. Y. 8 Mary, b. ; m. Edward El-dredge, son of Jehoshaphat. 9 Thankful, b. ; prob. m. Nathaniel Nickerson, son of William, about 1738.

(65) "William Nickerson and hannah Elis ann atwood were joyned in marriage on the 24th day of october 1717 at Chatham by Peter Thacher jus. of peace." (Yar. Rec.) This entry probably means "Hannah alias Ann Atwood," "alis" and possibly "elis" being a common spelling for "alias." The marriage to Deliverance appears from Osborn Nickerson papers.

(66) Note 13, page 137, Smith, History of Chatham.

(67) Osborn Nickerson papers.

(68) Children of William Nickerson (from the will, order uncertain). By wife Deliverance: 1 William, b. May 15, 1701 (O. Nickerson papers); m. Sarah Covell, dau. of Joseph, about 1723. 2 Deliveranse, b. ; m. Abraham Chase of Harwich; moved to Tisbury before 1744. 3 Mercy, b. ; m. Seth Paddock, son of Robert, April 13, 1727 (Chat. Rec.); died before her father, leaving two children. 4 Elizabeth, b. ; m. Thomas Atkins, son of Thomas, about 1726; died before her father. 5 Caleb, b. ; m. Mary Godfrey, dau. of Moses, about 1732. 6 James, b. ; m. Dorcas , prob. dau. of Joseph Covell; moved to Ridgefield, Conn., about 1747. 7 Joshua, b. (of age in 1734) living in 1739. 8 Nathaniel, b. (under age in 1734); m. prob. Thankful Nickerson, dau. of Thomas, about 1738. By wife Anna: 9 Anna, b. ; m. Jonathan Crowell, son of Isaac of Yarmouth, July 13, 1738 (Chat. Rec.); moved to Barrington, N. S., about 1762. (Their children, according to Barrington records, were David, Joanna, Deborah, Azubah, Mary, Jonathan, Ruth, Sylvanus and Freeman. They did not have a son Samuel, who went to Connecticut, and other children, as given in Freeman's History of Cape Cod, II, 598, in Crowell Genealogy, etc. These latter were children of Jonathan Crowell (son of Paul) and Anna (Collins) Crowell, who moved about 1762 from Chatham to Liverpool, N. S.) 10 Deborah, b. ; m. William Padishall between Sept. 1739, and Oct. 1742. 11 El-

dad, b. about 1723; m. Mary Cahoon, dau. of James of Eastham, Oct. 31, 1744 (East. Rec.); moved to Barrington, N. S., about 1762.

(69) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 21,870.

(70) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 21,870.

(71) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 37,166.

(72) Children of Nathaniel and Katherine (Stewart) Nickerson (order uncertain): 1 Experience, b.

; m. Thomas Parker of Falmouth Feb. 12, 1726-7 (Chat. Rec.). 2 Mercy, b. about 1709; m. Abraham Chase in Falmouth March 5, 1732 (Falmouth Rec.), and lived in Tisbury. (Their children according to Tisbury records were Valentine, Zaccheus, David, Waitstill Mercy, and Margaret.) 3 Nathaniel, b. about 1718; m. Ruth Young of Falmouth (Int. Jan. 21, 1742, Fal. Rec.). 4 Samuel (probably) b. ; m. Jane Hunt, dau. of William of Chilmark, July 5, 1744 (Chil. Rec.). (They had children: Jane, Beriah and Nathaniel.) 5 Shubael, b. ; m. Mary Hamilton, dau. of Samuel of Chatham, Dec. 23, 1748 (Chat. Rec.), and removed to Tisbury. He, his wife and children, Katherine, Samuel and Job, were warned from Boston July, 1753 (Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 71,573). 6 Other children, if any, not known.

(73) M. L. Luce papers.

(74) Records, Superior Court of Judicature.

(75) Children of Robert and Rebecca (Jones) Nickerson (order uncertain): 1 James, b. ; grandjurymen 1732. 2 Mercy, b. ; m. prob. 1st Jonathan Godfrey,

son of Moses, Sept. 2, 1725 (Chat. Rec.). He died in 1730 and she m. 2nd Stephen Kidder. 3 Robert, b. ; m. Mercy Cole, dau. of Daniel of Eastham, Sept. 17, 1728 (East. Rec.). 4 Fear, b. ; m. Elisha Eldredge, son of Jehoshaphat. 5 Sylvanus, b. ; (taxes abated 1742). 6 Elizabeth, b. ; m. 1st, Sept. 19, 1733, Peter Ray, son of Peter of Edgartown, and had children Joseph, Peter, Elizabeth. He died before 1741 and she m. 2nd Alexander (?) Cunningham and died before 1755. 7 Elkanah, b. Feb. 14, 1721-2 (Chat. Rec.); m. Bathsheba Snow, dau. of Eastham, Oct. 18, 1741 (East. Rec.); moved to Liverpool, N. S., about 1762. 8 Rebecca, b. ; m. John Hopkins, son of Elisha, about 1741; moved to Dartmouth, Mass., about 1750, and to Liverpool, N. S., about 1762.

PADDOCK.

Serg. Robert Paddock, son of Zachariah and Deborah (Sears) Paddock of Yarmouth, born January 17, 1670-1, married Martha Hall, daughter of John and Priscilla (Bearse) Hall of Yarmouth, March 6, 1701-2. He moved to Monomoit soon after the birth of his second child in 1705 and settled on a farm in the north part of the town near Great Hill. He was selectman in 1720 and 1721, and was living at Chatham as late as 1730, but removed soon after to Mansfield, Conn., where Joseph, William and Benjamin Hall of Yarmouth and other relatives of his wife had settled. He probably died there before 1750 and his children or most of them removed

to the "Oblong." (Putnam Co., N. Y.)⁷⁹

of Coventry, Conn., Nov. 5, 1747 (Mansfield Rec.)

NOTES.

(76) Children of Robert and Martha (Hall) Paddock (order after third child uncertain): 1 son, unnamed, b. Feb. 2, 1702-3; d. seven weeks later. 2 Seth, b. March 13, 1704-5 (Yar. Rec.); m. 1st Mersey Nickerson, dau. of William, April 13, 1727 (Chat. Rec.). She died leaving children Deliverance and Zachariah, and he m. 2nd Zeruiah Storrs, dau. of Capt. Thomas Storrs of Mansfield, Conn., Oct. 10, 1735. She died Jan. 3, 1737-8, and he m. 3rd Ruth Arnold, dau. of Lieut. Robert Arnold of Mansfield, Feb. 17, 1744-5 (Mansfield Rec.). 3 Deborah, b. about 1706; m. Joseph Doane, Jr., of Eastham, Sept. 30, 1725 (Chat. Rec.). He died in 1745 and she moved to Middletown, Conn., where she died of small pox Aug. 27, 1752. 4 Zachariah, b. ; m. prob. in Chatham, moved to Mansfield, Conn. 5 Bethiah, b. ; m. Nehemiah Easterbrook, son of Rev Samuel of Mansfield, Sept. 2, 1736 (Mansfield Rec.). She died about 1743. 6 Martha, b. ; m. Elnathan Doane, son of Israel of Eastham, Feb. 25, 1737 (East. Rec.); moved to the "Oblong" about 1754. 7 Robert, b. ; m. Ruth Fletcher, dau. of John of Mansfield, June 19, 1740 (Mansfield Rec.). 8 Priscilla, b. ; m. Elisha Eldredge, son of Elisha of Mansfield, Jan. 1743 (Mansfield Rec.). 9 Eunice, b. ; m. Thomas Storrs, Jr., of Mansfield, Feb. 27, 1742-3 (Mansfield Rec.). 10 Silas, b. ; m. Abial Russ, dau. of Nathaniel

PHILLIPS.

Benjamin Phillips, probably son of Thomas Phelps or Phillips of Yarmouth, whose estate was settled in 1674 by Hugh Stewart, (who may have brought Benjamin with him to Monomoit) married about 1696 , daughter of Nathaniel and Sarah Covell. He received from his mother-in-law a lot of land near and east of the head of Muddy Cove, whereon he erected a house.⁷⁷ It is supposed that his wife died in a few years and that he married second Temperance Stewart, daughter of Hugh of Chatham,⁷⁸ and removed to Harwich. He sold his place at Monomoit to Ebenezer Hawes between 1706 and 1713. He was of Harwich as early as 1712, having located at East Harwich near the house lately of James T. Smalley. In deeds of land in 1713 Briggs pond, East Harwich, is described as "the pond southward of Benjamin Phillips." He was living as late as 1744.⁷⁹ His widow Temperance married Beriah Broadbrooks in 1747. There is no settlement of his estate and no record of his children.⁸⁰

NOTES.

(77) See note 23, page 84, Smith, History of Chatham.

(78) Temperance and her sister Joanna were unmarried in March, 1711, the date of their father's will, but it is believed that they married soon after, Joanna becoming the wife of one Oaker. The widow Joanna Oaker is mentioned in the Chatham records. Note that

two of the children of Benjamin Phillips are named Joanna and Oaker.

(79) 8 Mayflower Descendant, 119.

(80) Children of Benjamin Phillips (order uncertain): By 1st wife probably: 1 Anna, b. ; m. Samuel Atkins, son of Isaac of Harwich, Feb. 23, 1720-1 (Har. Rec.). 2 Henry, b. ; estate settled in 1725. 3 Micah, b. ; m. Joanna Baker of Yarmouth, dau. of William, Aug. 25, 1726 (Yar. Rec.). 4 Jane, b. ; m. Gowell Chase, son of Isaac of Yarmouth, Nov. 1727 (Har. Rec.). Probably by wife Temperance: 5 Benjamin, b. ; m. Maria Broadbrooks, daughter of Beriah of Harwich, Aug. 23, 1735 (Har. Rec.). 6 Joanna, b. ; m. Ebenezer Berry of Yarmouth as 2nd wife Dec. 20, 1738 (Har. Rec.). 7 Oaker, b. about 1720; m. Mary Small or Smalley Dec. 4, 1741 (Har. Rec.). 8 Joseph, b. about 1724; m. Mercy Small or Smalley Nov. 8, 1744 (Har. Rec.). 9 Hannah, b. ; m. Samuel Nickerson, Jr., of Harwich Dec. 6, 1745 (Har. Rec.).

SEARS.

Richard Sears, son of Paul and Deborah (Willard) Sears of Yarmouth, born in 1680 or 1681, married May 15, 1706, Hope, daughter of Samuel and Rebecca Howes of Yarmouth. By deed dated March 3, 1707-8, he bought of Samuel Sprague of Marshfield all the lands and rights of the latter at Monomoit. This included a farm, formerly of Joseph Quason, Indian, extending from the head of the Oyster pond east to the bay or salt water, and from the Black

pond south to the head of the Mill pond, also one-third interest in the undivided lands.⁸¹ He settled at Monomoit soon after this purchase. He was treasurer in 1713, constable in 1714-5 and selectman in 1717. He died May 24, 1718, at the early age of 37 years. His gravestone is the oldest in the old cemetery. His widow married, second, Dea. John Rich of Eastham (Int. Aug. 2, 1723) and his children were brought up in that place, but Paul, the son, returned to Chatham, and settled upon the real estate assigned to him out of his father's estate.⁸²

Capt. Daniel Sears, brother of Richard, born 1682 or 1683, married Feb. 12, 1708-9, Sarah Howes of Yarmouth, sister of his brother's wife. He became interested in the farm at Monomoit bought by his brother and removed thither. The purchase was doubtless made on their joint account. After the death of Richard, the management of the whole farm doubtless fell upon Daniel. During his long career he was one of the leading citizens of the town, being town clerk 24 years between 1715 and 1753, selectman 8 years, and holding other offices. He was ensign as early as 1722, lieutenant as early as 1733 and later captain of the local military company. He died August 10, 1756, aged 73, leaving a will dated January 30, 1753. His wife died November 9, 1748, aged 62. He gave all his real estate to his son Daniel. His descendants have probably attained more wealth and distinction than those of any other Chatham family. His grandson, David Sears, long a prominent merchant and

financier of Boston, director of the first Bank of the United States, was accounted at his death the richest man of that city and founded a family long and prominently known. His grandson Richard of this town also attained a local prominence, which the family maintained till its extinction here about 50 years ago.⁸³

NOTES.

(81) "All those my land and rights of land I now have or of right I ought to have within the precinct or Village of Monomoy in the County of Barnstable aforesaid, that is to say more particularly all that my farm or tract of land which I lately purchased of Joseph Quason, Indian of Monomoy aforesaid. The said farm being bounded towards the east by the Bay or Salt Water & towards the north by certain boundaries that that is to say ptly by the ditch called Indian Nicks ditch so extending westerly over a pond w—oak tree marked so continuing the same range westerly till it comes to a tall pine tree marked which is the corner boundary of the farm and bounded towards the South by the land lately John Cussens, Indian, as an old fence & dry ditch directs to a pine tree near the house of Joseph Eldridges & is bounded towards the West partly by the Oyster pond & ptly by the lands of particular persons, That is to say all my lands pertaining to said farm & not formerly sold or passed away by the said Joseph Quason before the 12th day of October A. D. 1702 as in & by one instrument or deed of feofment of

the date aforesaid given me under the hand and seal of said Quason may appear at large, reference thereto be had for the westerly bounds of the said farm—And also my two parcels of meadow land, The one called Stumpy Marsh esteemed at eight acres more or less environed with upland and meadow of the heirs of Samuel Smith deceased. The other being a small piece of marsh esteemed at one acre more or less bounded westward by a creek southward by a pine tree standing on the upland which tree is the Northerly bounds of the meadow of the heirs of the said Samuel Smith, Eastward by the upland till it comes to point thereof near ye creek, together also with my one third part of all the common or undivided land within the limits of Monomoy aforesaid, excepting such privileges of herbage or feeding for cattle & firewood as hath been formerly granted to any person or persons in or on the said Commons or undivided land by Mr. William Nickerson deceased or by his son William Nickerson, Sarah Covell & her children or myself or any one of us." March 3, 1707-8, Samuel Sprague acknowledged before Elikem Brett, Justice Peace. Witnesses, Abraham Samson and John Murdo. Recorded July 6, 1708, William Bassett Reg. (Josiah Paine papers.)

(82) Children of Richard and Hope (Howes) Sears: 1 Thankful, b. at Yarmouth March 18, 1706-7; m. April 13, 1727, John Rich, Jr., of Eastham (East. Rec.). 2 Paul, b. at Chatham about 1710, m. Anna Atkins, dau. of Joseph of

Eastham (Int. Jan. 31, 1729-30, East. Rec.). 3 Samuel, b. at Chatham about 1712; d. Dec. 21, 1738, aged 26 (Hdstn.). 4 Hannah, b. at Chatham about 1717; m. Feb. 23, 1737-8, Zoheth Smith of Eastham (East. Rec.).

(83) Children of Daniel and Sarah (Howes) Sears (Chat. Rec.): 1 Rebecca, b. March 19, 1701-11; m. Thomas Howes, son of Thomas, about 1730. 2 Daniel, b. June 1, 1712; m. Fear Freeman, dau. of Benjamin of Harwich, Oct. 31, 1745 (Har. Rec.). 3 Sarah, b. April 11, 1714; m. Joshua Atkins, son of Thomas, Aug. 1, 1734 (Chat. Rec.). 4 Mercy, b. July 17, 1716; m. Stephen Ryder, son of John, about 1738. 5 Richard, b. April 26, 1718; died unmarried in 1746. 6 David, b. April 21, 1720; died unmarried in 1746. 7 Deborah, b. Oct. 13, 1722; m. Joseph Atwood, son of Joseph of Eastham (Int. April 14, 1742, East. Rec.).

SMITH.

John Smith, son of Samuel and Mary (Hopkins) Smith of Eastham, was born May 26, 1673, and married Bethiah Snow, daughter of Stephen and Susanna (Dean) Snow, May 14, 1694. He resided at Eastham till after the birth of his second child. Having received by the will of his father one-half of two farms at Tom's Neck, Monomoit, he removed thither and became one of the substantial citizens of the place. The boundaries of the two farms are described in the note on page 99, Smith, History of Chatham. He was selectman one year and held other offices in the town. In 1716 he testified against Rev. Mr. Adams

in the suit of Adams vs Hawes.⁸⁴ He was a large owner in the Great Beach. He died in middle life, administration on his estate being granted to his son Samuel, Feb. 25, 1717. His widow was living as late as 1734,⁸⁵ when his estate was finally settled among the children.

NOTES.

(84) Page 183, Smith's Chatham.

(85) Children of John and Bethiah (Snow) Smith (from Probate and Eastham Rec.): 1 James, b. Feb. 13, 1694-5; died May 27, 1696. 2 Samuel, b. May 25, 1696; m. Mercy Higgins, dau. of Isaac of Eastham (Int. July 19, 1718, East. Rec.). (He did not m. 2nd Sarah Snow of Eastham, Sept. 25, 1736, and have children born in Eastham, as frequently stated. See N. E. Hist. Gen. Reg. [1897] 204, "Wellington Smith and his Family" etc. He lived at Chatham, was selectman there in 1736 and 1743, member of the church, and so far as known, had but one wife and ch.: Samuel, Eleanor and Bethiah, all baptized at Chatham May 25, 1742. N. E. Hist. Gen. Reg. [19]). 3 Deane, b. about 1698; m. Esther Ryder, dau. of John of Yarmouth, Oct. 17, 1720 (Yar. Rec.). 4 Mercy, b. betw. 1698 and 1702; m. Nathan Kenney of Chatham, Sept. 24, 1729 (Chat. Rec.). 5 Mary, b. about 1702; m. m. Obediah Chase, son of Isaac of Yarmouth, about 1732; died about 1767. 6 John, b. April 7, 1703 (old Bible rec.); m. 1st Elizabeth Brown, dau. of George of Eastham, Sept. 21, 1727 (East. Rec.); m. 2nd Lydia Snow, wid. of Ebenezer of Eastham, April 7, 1763 (Chat. Rec.); moved to Eastham after second marriage. 7

Stephen, b. about 1706; m. 1st Hannah Collins, dau. of John, about 1727; m. 2nd: Bathsheba Brown, dau. of George of Eastham, April 9, 1729 (East. Rec.). 8 Bethiah, b. about 1708; m. Elisha Young, Jr., Dec. 15, 1731 (Chat. Rec.). 9 David, b. about 1711; living in 1734. 10 Seth, b. about 1713, acc. to Probate Rec. (Nov. 13 or 14, 1711, old Bible rec.); m. 1st Elizabeth , March 15, 1737 (old Bible rec.). She was b. March 15, 1718 (old Bible rec.), and died April 12, 1756 (Hdstn.). He m. 2nd Mary (Godfrey) Nickerson, wid. of Caleb, Nov. 18, 1756 (Chat. Rec.).

STEWART.

Michael Stewart, eldest son of Hugh and Wait Stewart, born in Yarmouth probably about 1670, married Mary . He was a mariner. By deed dated October 12, 1702, he bought of the then proprietors of Monomoit, viz: William Nickerson, Sen., Nathaniel Covell, William Covell, Joseph Covell, Ephraim Covell and Samuel Sprague, a large irregular tract at what is now West Chatham, on both sides of the highway, lying between the ponds there and Ragged Neck and extending from the present Doane neighborhood westerly to the present George Buck neighborhood.⁸⁶ The easterly end of this tract at Ockpeset he sold in part by deed dated March 31, 1703, to William Eldredge, receiving in exchange a parcel of meadow near his own land "at or near a place commonly called Nick's place," and in part by deed dated May 22, 1708, to James Eldredge.⁸⁷ That part

on the south side of the highway between it and Ragged Neck appears to have been sold to Samuel Taylor, son of John, before 1711.⁸⁸ He died in middle life. Administration was granted on his estate to his brother Samuel September 26, 1716. His widow married Joseph Harding, Jr., before 1720.⁸⁹

John Stewart, probably son of Hugh and Wait Stewart, married Elizabeth . He was tithing man in 1702, but appears later to have moved away, returning to the town again about 1715.⁹⁰ Administration on his estate was granted to his widow July 11, 1722. He left an estate valued at £360, of which £290 was in real estate. His widow was left with several small children, among whom was probably a son John, who married Jenny, daughter of Joseph Harding, Jr., and was a resident of the town as late as 1744, and perhaps Elizabeth, who married Seth Smith.

NOTES.

(86) This tract is described as follows: "Beginning at ye North-erly Corner of ye land of Hugh Stewart thence ranging Easterly to a fresh pond, so ranging further Easterly by ye sd pond on thwart a neck of land to a Run or flow of water that runs into a pond Called ye white pond & bounded westerly by ye lands of ye sd Hugh Stewart & Southerly partly by ye meadow sometime of Robert Eldredge deceased & partly by ye upland of George Godfree & partly by ye land formerly reputed to be ye land of John Downing deceased & Easterly by

ye reputed lands of ye sd Robert Eldredge & Northerly by ye reputed lands of Teague Jones deceased x x reserving a Convenient highway through sd land & a way Issuing out of ye sd highway to ye six acre lots so called & another way to ye neck of land called ye Ragged Neck." Recorded Book 4, folio 86, Old Barnstable Deeds. (M. L. Luce papers.)

(87) M. L. Luce papers.

(88) See "A Proprietor's Book for Chatham" and deed from Samuel Eldredge to Seth Taylor of Yarmouth dated May 15, 1711. (M. L. Luce papers.)

(89) Children of Michael and Mary Stewart (Chat. Rec.): 1 Bethiah, b. Sept. 21, 1704; m. Samuel Hamilton, son of Daniel, May 25, 1727 (Chat. Rec.). 2 Patience, b. Aug. 27, 1713; prob. m. at Liverpool, N. S., Dec. 25, 1760, George Winslow (Liverpool Rec.).

(90) See page 190, Smith, History of Chatham.

receiving an annual stipend from the town "for his panes of swepen the meten hous." He was often chosen tithingman and in 1750 was the town schoolmaster. He died about 1765, leaving no estate. His wife died a few years before him.⁹³

NOTES.

(91) 14 Mayflower Decendant, 117; 6 ib. 95.

(92) Harwich Ch. Rec.; 4 Mayflower Decendant, 248, 249; 5 ib. 17.

(93) Children of Samuel and Hannah (Mayo) Tucker (Chat. Rec.): 1 Keziah, b. Nov. 1707; m. Nathaniel Covell, son of Nathaniel, April 14, 1727 (Chat. Rec.). 2 John, b. Sept. 1709; died Sept. 1709. 3 Thankful, b. Sept. 1710. 4 Elizabeth, b. Sept. 1712. 5 Hannah, b. Sept. 1714; prob. m. Isaac Hawes, Jr., and moved to the Oblong about 1747. 6 John, b. March 20, 1715-6. 7 Samuel, b. March 16, 1719-20. 8 Eunice, b. June 12, 1722.

TUCKER.

Samuel Tucker, probably son of John and Susanna Tucker of Tisbury and brother of John Tucker of Harwich, married Hannah Mayo, daughter of William and Elizabeth (Ring) Mayo of Eastham, about 1706 and settled at Monomoit soon after.⁹¹ On May 17, 1713, he joined the church at Harwich and his children, Keziah, Elizabeth and Thankful, were baptized there July 3, 1715, and his daughter Hannah, July 29, 1716.⁹² Later he doubtless joined the Chatham church under Mr. Lord. He had the care of the church building for many years,

COLLINS.

The foregoing families all settled in or became connected with the village between 1690 and the emigration of 1711. After that emigration the following new families came in, completing the settlement of the town. By 1725 the period of settlement may be said to have ended. Very few new families came in after that date.

John Collins, son of Joseph and Ruth (Knowles) Collins of Eastham, born December 18, 1674, married Hannah Doane, daughter of John of Eastham, February 12, 1701-2. He lived for some time at Eastham, selling his farm there by deed dated Sept. 5, 1715, to Ichabod

bod Higgins.⁹⁴ The same year he purchased land at Tom's Neck, Chatham, of John Smith or Daniel Hamilton or both and settled there. He was interested in the church and was one of the earliest pew owners. He was a man of energy and ability and accumulated considerable property. Although not the richest man in the place, he and his children together formed by far the wealthiest family in the place in the period before the Revolution. His oldest son, Solomon, became in time the largest taxpayer, and several of his other sons had large properties for the time. From him, through his son Joseph, who went to Nova Scotia, descended Hon. Enos Collins, a distinguished merchant of Liverpool, N. S., who married a daughter of Chief Justice Brenton Haliburton of that colony. From him, through his daughter Anna, who married Jonathan Crowell, descended Hon. John Crowell of Ohio, member of Congress in 1846, and prominent in Ohio in his time. Although he lived to be very old, he left a large estate for his time. He died March 24, 1765, at the age of 91. His widow died June 6, 1765, aged 85. His will dated March 12, 1749, with codicil of later date, was proved June 28, 1765. It divides the real estate among his sons and shows that he lived in the easterly part of 'Tom's Neck.'⁹⁵

NOTES.

(94) Stanley W. Smith papers.

(95) Children of John and Hannah (Doane) Collins (all born in Eastham except the last two): 1 Solomon, b. Feb. 6, 1703-4; m.

Eunice Atkins, dau. of Samuel, about 1726. 2 Samuel, b. Nov. 26, 1705; m. 1st ; m. 2nd Patience (Howes) Eldredge, widow of Jonathan and of Seth Eldredge, Oct. 19, 1758 (Chat. Rec.). 3 Martha, b. Jan. 26, 1707-8; m. Moses Godfrey, son of Moses, about 1726. 4 John, b. Nov. 2, 1709; m. Thankful Taylor, dau. of Samuel, about 1740. 5 Hannah, b. Nov. 2, 1711; m. Stephen Smith, son of John, about 1727; died young leaving child Stephen. 6 Joseph, b. Aug. 14, 1713; m. Abigail Crowell, dau. of Paul, about 1737; moved to Liverpool, N. S., about 1760. 7 David, b. April 20, 1715; m. Desire . 8 Jane, b. at Chatham about 1717; m. 1st Prince Snow, Jr., of Harwich (Int. Sept. 10, 1737, Har. Rec.); m. 2nd Benjamin Bearse of Chatham, son of Benjamin of Barnstable, about 1743; m. 3rd George Godfrey, son of Moses, Nov. 9, 1758 (Chat. Rec.). 9 Anna, b. at Chatham; m. Jonathan Crowell, son of Paul, about 1740; moved to Liverpool, N. S., about 1760. (The list of the children of John Collins born in Chatham given by Dean Dudley in his Genealogy of the Bangs Family, p. 39, is wholly erroneous.)

CROWELL.

John Crowell, son of John and Hannah Crowell of Yarmouth, born December 5, 1689, married Alice Gross, daughter of Simeon and Mary (Bond) Gross of Hingham (published Aug. 21, 1714). He was a carpenter by trade. He lived at Hingham a year or two, removing to Eastham about 1716 and to Chatham two or three years later. His house was at the head of

Muddy Cove, near the Harwich line and opposite the Indian meeting house.⁹⁰ Administration on his estate was granted to his son Jabez July 9, 1746. In the inventory of his estate appears the following item: "Cash being the dec'ds wages at Cape Breton £44-06-04." His widow, whose name was Sarah, a second wife, married second Thomas Nickerson, Sen., July 5, 1751.⁹⁷

Col. and Dea. Paul Crowell, second child of John and Bethiah (Sears) Crowell of Yarmouth, born April 20, 1687, married first Elizabeth, daughter of Jonathan Hallett of Yarmouth, October 21, 1714. She died November 17, 1723, aged 34 years, and he married second Margery Hall, daughter of Dea. Joseph Hall of Yarmouth, February 15, 1724-5. He settled at Chatham in 1717 on the farm at Chathamport purchased for him by his father of William Covell.⁹⁸ The house of the late Osborn Nickerson, Esq., stands on this farm, which bordered on Pleasant Bay. He soon became an active and highly respected citizen. He was town treasurer seven years and selectman six years. He became a deacon of the church as early as 1738. He was first a lieutenant (1739) and then captain (1744) of the local military company, then major (1749) and finally colonel of the county regiment of soldiers. From him, through his son Jonathan, is descended Hon. John Crowell, member of Congress from Ohio in 1846.⁹⁹ Col Crowell died October 11, 1765, aged 78 years. He left a large estate, most of which was divided by his will

among his three sons. The homestead was given to his son David. The widow, Margery Crowell, died May 26, 1773, aged 78.¹⁰⁰

NOTES.

(96) Town Records—renewals of boundary with Harwich.

(97) Children of John and Alice (Gross) Crowell: 1 Abigail, b. at Hingham June 3, 1715 (Hing. and East. Rec.); m. Hincks Gross, son of Thomas of Eastham, July 25, 1734 (Chat. Rec.). 2 Jabez, b. at Eastham June 4, 1717 (East. Rec.); m. Lydia . 3 Jonah, b. ; mentioned in the list of his father's creditors; perhaps d. young. 4 John (?) (a John Crowell removed from town or died in 1763).

(98) See account of William Covell, Smith, History of Chatham.

(99) Hon. John Crowell, member of the Ohio state Senate and elected to Congress in the fall of 1846, was born at East Haddam, Conn., Sept. 15, 1801, son of William and Ruth (Peck) Crowell of East Haddam. His grandparents were Samuel and Jerusha (Tracy) Crowell, of whom Samuel was born at Chatham, Mass., March 16, 1742-3, removed with his parents about 1760 to Liverpool, N. S., and thence removed to East Haddam, Conn., where he was married about 1770. (For evidence of this removal see land records of Queens Co., N. S.) The parents of Samuel were Jonathan and Anna (Collins) Crowell of Chatham and Liverpool, N. S.

(100) Children of Paul Crowell (from family Bible): by wife Elizabeth: 1 Abigail, b. Sept. 13, 1715; m. Joseph Collins, son of

John, about 1737; removed to Liverpool, N. S., about 1760. 2 Paul, b. April 4, 1717; m. 1st Rebecca Paine, dau. of Ebenezer, about 1738. She died Dec. 30, 1746, and he m. 2nd Reliance Cobb, dau. of Eleazer of Barnstable, April 27, 1747 (Barn. Rec.). She died Nov. 9, 1774, and he m. 3rd Mehitable (Snow) Ryder, widow of Samuel Hopkins of Harwich and of Reuben Ryder of Chatham. 3 Jonathan, b. Feb. 25, 1718; m. Anna Collins, dau. of John, about 1740 (not Anna Nickerson, as stated II Freeman, Hist. of Cape Cod, 598); removed to Liverpool, N. S., about 1760. By wife Margery: 4 Elizabeth, b. April 7, 1726; m. Hezekiah Doane, son of of Eastham, Oct. 25, 1750 (Chat. Rec.). 5 David, b. Aug. 3, 1730; m. Thankful Atwood, dau. of James of Eastham, Dec. 6, 1759 (East. Rec.).

DOANE.

Thomas Doane, son of Ephraim and Mercy (Knowles) Doane of Eastham, born September 4, 1674, married Patience Mulford, daughter of Thomas and Hannah of Eastham, February 28, 1700-1. He learned the trade of a blacksmith, but early engaged in whaling. He removed his family to Chatham in or before 1719, where he purchased by deed dated March 20, 1718-9, of Seth Taylor of Yarmouth, a large farm of about 300 acres at West Chatham lying between the Oyster pond river and the White pond.¹⁰¹ He was for many years one of the leading citizens and the largest land owner and tax payer of the town. He was selectman ten years between 1725 and 1745, frequently

moderator of town meetings and often chosen to serve the town in other capacities. He was one of the first to take pew ground in the church in 1742. He was often engaged in litigation. His deeds and papers (herein referred to as the M. L. Luce papers) have come down to us and throw a flood of light on the early history of the town. His wife died February 8, 1744, aged 70, and his death occurred May 3, 1756, at the age of 82 years. His will, dated March 17, 1756, was proved September 21, 1756. His three sons had died before him and his real estate went to his grandsons. His youngest child, Anna, married Dr. John Osborn, son of the minister at Eastham, a graduate of Harvard college, a poet, physician and man of talent, and lived at Middletown, Conn., where there was a colony of Cape settlers.¹⁰²

NOTES.

(101) "All that my Messuag, Tenement, Dwelling House and house lot of land situate in Chatham x x with all my Lands and Meadows lying in sd Chatham, Together with all the Right and Interest that I have Devided & undevided in the bounds of Harwich, being all my Housing, Lands & Meadows, Rights & Interest, according as they are expressed In & by one Deed Pole of Conveyance from William Eldred of Manemoy now Chatham, Planter, bearing date the 18th day of December 1711 Recorded in the Registry of sd County in the sixth book of Evidences of Lands, folio 300, to me given & Granted, signed sealed & delivered: sd Granted premises

Containing by estimation two hundred acres more or less. Together with all my Rights in & to the Lands lately Divided or to be Divided in sd Chatham so far as my Right extends by virtue of what I bought of Capt Ebenezer Hawes of sd Chatham. Together with all that my parcel & parcels of Land & Meadow lying in Chatham above sd, being by estimation forty acres more or less, which is all the Lands that I have in sd Chatham & all the Meadows there that I have & hold by Deed from Samuel Eldredg of Manamoy formerly so called & is buted & bounded as by one Deed Pole under the hand & seal of sd Samuel Eldrege to me signed, sealed & Delivered may appear baring date the 15th of May 1711 Recorded in the Registry of sd County in the sixth book of Evidences of Lands in folio 49 & 50 & 51: Together with all that my parcel of Land Messuage or Tenement lying in sd Chatham which I have & hold by one Deed Pole from under the hand & seal of Robert Nickerson of Harwich in the County abovesd son of Robert Nickerson Deceased baring Date the 22nd Day of July 1743 Recorded in Seventh book of Evidences of Lands page 97 buted & bounded as in & by sd Deed is expresst: Together with all that my parcel of meadow & sedge ground lying in sd Chatham which I have & hold by one Deed Pole from under the hand & seal of John Eldredg of sd Chatham, Labourer, baring Date the 7th day of June 1746 Recorded in the Eighth Book of Evidences of Lands folio 195 buted & bounded as in &

by sd Deed is exprest." M. L. Luce papers.

(102) Children of Thomas and Patience (Mulford) Doane (all born at Eastham): 1 Thomas, b. Jan. 10, 1704; m. in 1729, Sarah Barnes, dau. of Jonathan of Plymouth. 2 Elizabeth, b. Feb. 5, 1703-4; m. Daniel Howes, son of Thomas, about 1723. 3 Reuben, b. March 21, 1705; m. Sarah Haugh, dau. of Samuel of Boston, (Doane Gen.) about 1730. 4 Abigail, b. March 28, 1708; m. John Hawes, son of Isaac, about 1735. 5 Ruhama, b. about 1709; m. John Eldredge, son of Joseph, Sept. 26, 1728 (Chat. Rec.). Benjamin, b. Dec. 26, 1710; m. Mary Freeman, dau. of Nathaniel of Harwich, Nov. 7, 1734 (Har. Rec.). 7 Anna, b.

; m. Dr. John Osborn, son of Rev. Samuel of Eastham. He died May 31, 1753, and she m. 2nd Thomas Smith of East Haddam, Conn., May 27, 1756.

ELDREDGE.

James Eldredge, eldest son of Lieut. Nicholas and Elizabeth Eldredge, married Ruth . He lived at West Chatham on the John Downing farm set off to him in the division of his father's estate in 1708. By deed dated May 22, 1708, he bought of Michael Stewart, a tract of 10 acres between the highway and the White pond.¹⁰³ This he sold, together with six acres more inherited from his father, to Thomas Howes by deed dated April 6, 1743.¹⁰⁴ He died July 19, 1757. He gave his homestead by will to his sons James and Abner. His widow Ruth removed with several of her children in 1762 to Liverpool, N.

S., but returned in a few years.¹⁰⁵

NOTES.

(103) Described as follows: "Bounded Southerly by ye land of ye sd James Eldredge, & at ye Easterly end is bounded by ye land of William Eldredge & is bounded Northerly by ye land of Nicholas Eldredge [deceased] & is bounded westerly by ye Rellict of an old fence called ye General fence near a little pond runing into ye white pond or adjoining to ye white pond, containing ten acres more or less." M. L. Luce papers.

(104) See note 50, *supra*, for description.

(105) Children of James and Ruth () Eldredge: 1 Seth, b. ; m. ; lived in R. I. 2 Mary, b. ; single in 1757. 3 Zephaniah, b. Dec. 2, 1733; m. Phebe Eldredge Nov. 29, 1752 (Chat. Rec.). 4 Rebecca, b. Nov. 16, 1735; m. Cyrenus Collins, son of Solomon, July 13, 1756 (Chat. Rec.). 5 Ruth, b. Feb. 16, 1737; m. Jonathan Bearse May 19, 1755 (Chat. Rec.). 6 Abner, b. Oct. 11, 1738; m. Sarah Eldredge, April 19, 1762 (Chat. Rec.). 7 James, b. April 8, 1742; m. Hannah Collins, dau. of , March 2, 1771 (Chat. Rec.).

FARRIS.

Morris Farris, whose origin and parentage is unknown, married at Nantucket June 18, 1708, Mrs. Orange (Rogers) Cartwright, widow of Nicholas of Nantucket. He was a resident of Chatham as early as 1715,¹⁰⁶ living first on Quituesset (Morris) Island¹⁰⁷ and later keep-

ing tavern on Monomoit Beach. This tavern he sold to Joseph Stewart about 1728.¹⁰⁸ It is supposed that he died not long after, leaving a son William, who was of Chatham in 1736, a sea faring man, and gave bond on that date to Sylvanus Bourne of Barnstable.¹⁰⁹ In 1745 William Farris was one of the creditors of the estate of Elisha Hopkins.¹¹⁰ It is supposed that this William (or a son William) removed to Falmouth, where he was living as late as 1790.¹¹¹

NOTES.

(106) See page 190, Smith, History of Chatham. His stepson, Nicholas Cartwright, came with him.

(107) See page 92, note 38, Smith, History of Chatham.

(108) See page 209, note 29, Smith, History of Chatham.

(109) Bourne Mss. Harvard Coll. Library.

(110) Barnstable Probate Rec., est. of Elisha Hopkins.

(111) See U. S. census, 1790. In Dec. 1784, William Farris and others, described as of Falmouth, signed an inquest on the body of Elizabeth Cator of Mashpee. Files, Superior Court of Judicature, No. 144,470.

HAWES.

Lieut. Isaac Hawes, son of Captain John and Desire (Gorham) Hawes of Yarmouth, born March 9, 1679-80, married January 8, 1700-1, Bethiah Howes, daughter of Jeremiah of Yarmouth, and lived there till about 1712, when he removed to Chatham. He purchased a part of the interest of the

Covells in the common land and received in the division of 1713 a tract on each side of the road which runs from the late Samuel D. Clifford's to the late Rufus Smith's. His house was in or near this tract. In the latter part of his life he lived in or near the place late of Ephraim Steele.¹¹² He was sergeant of the military company as early as 1720 and later lieutenant. Administration on his estate was granted to his widow Bethiah March 18, 1730-1. She married second John Smith of Eastham, son of John (Int. April 11, 1741). He died in 1742 and she married third November 16, 1743, Rev. Joseph Lord of Chatham. She died between March 7, 1746-7, when she is named as one of the executors of Mr. Lord's will, and June 30, 1748, when the will was proved and she was not appointed with the others.¹¹³

NOTES.

(112) See a deed dated July 30, 1750, from John Hawes, administrator of Isaac, to Ebenezer Paine of a tract of land "where the dwellinghouse of the late Isaac Hawes last stood, containing six acres more or less, bounded Westerly on the said Ebenezer Paine, Southerly on the way untill it comes to the land that James Covell bought of Simeon Covell, then Northerly to the pond and Westerly by the pond to James Covells land where the fence stands and by the fence and James Covells land to said Paine's land." Josiah Paine papers.

(113) Children of Isaac and Bethiah (Howes) Hawes: 1 Bethiah, b. July, 1701; m. 1st Maziah

Harding, son of Joseph, about 1721; m. 2nd Thomas Nickerson, Sen., Dec. 26, 1763 (Chat. Rec.). 2 Isaac, b. April, 1703; m. Hannah, prob. dau. of Samuel Tucker; removed to the "Oblong," N. Y., about 1747, and thence to Kent, Conn. 3 Thankful, b. March, 1705; m. Moses Young, son of Henry of Eastham (Int. March 6, 1724-5, East. Rec.). 4 John, b. Jan. 22, 1706-7; m. Abigail Doane, dau. of Thomas, about 1735. 5 Desire, b. Jan. 14, 1708-9. 6 Jeremiah, b. April 5, 1711; m. Phebe Young of Eastham, prob. dau. of Jonathan, Aug. 8, 1734 (East. Rec.), lived at Eastham. (The foregoing children were born in Yarmouth). 7 Hannah, b. at Chatham; m. 1st John Slater, Feb. 21, 1749-50 (Chat. Rec.). 8 Sarah, b. May 31, 1719 (Bible record); m. Cornelius Higgins, son of Ebenezer of Eastham, Sept. 29, 1743 (Bible record), int. of m. Feb. 19, 1742-3 (East. Rec.); removed to Haddam, Conn., about 1747.

KNOWLES.

Lieut. Richard Knowles, son of Samuel and Mercy (Freeman) Knowles of Eastham, born July, 1688, married Martha Cobb, daughter of James and Sarah Cobb of Barnstable, about 1712.¹¹⁴ He came to Chatham about 1719 and succeeded Capt. Ebenezer Hawes as the tavern-keeper of the place. He undoubtedly bought of Hawes the tavern and land adjoining owned by the latter, and carried on the business for many years. He was selectman three years and treasurer two years. He was active in local affairs, but appears

to have lost his property in his old age. His wife died October 31, 1763, aged 81. He died about 1769, leaving no estate.¹¹⁵

NOTES.

(114) See Barnstable Probate Rec., estate of Jane Snow.

(115) Children of Richard and Martha (Cobb) Knowles (Chat. Rec.): 1 Martha, b. Jan. 28, 1713-4; m. John Shaw of Eastham (Int. Nov. 10, 1729, East. Rec.). 2 Richard, b. March 26, 1715; died Aug. 20, 1736, aged 21 (Hdstn.). 3 Mercy, b. Aug. 9, 1717; m. George Godfrey, son of Moses, Nov. 1, 1733 (Chat. Rec.). 4 James, b. Nov. 11, 1719; m. 1st Sarah Doane of Eastham, dau. of Joseph, Nov. 25, 1742 (East. Rec.). She died Dec. 26, 1748, aged 28 (Hdstn.), and he m. 2nd Ruth Mayo, dau. of Theophilus of Eastham, July 20, 1749 (East. Rec.). She died Sept. 17, 1766, aged 45 (Hdstn.), and he m. 3rd Sarah (Linnell) Mayo, widow of Gideon of Eastham, Nov. 19, 1767 (East. Rec.). She died about 1774 and he m. 4th Alice Paine, dau. of John of Eastham, Dec. 12, 1775 (East. Rec.). She died April 18, 1777, and he m. 5th Hannah , who survived him. 5 Cornelius, b. April 10, 1722; m. Mary, prob. dau. of Elisha Hopkins; removed to Liverpool, N. S., about 1760. 6 Rebecca, b. March 2, 1723-4; died unmarried about 1784.

MAYO.

Elisha Mayo, son of Nathaniel and Elizabeth (Wixon) Mayo of Eastham, born April 28, 1695, married Hannah Linnell, daughter of Jonathan of Eastham, Feb. 20, 1717, and settled in Chatham soon af-

ter. He was one of the seven first members of the Chatham church, which was organized in 1720, but with Moses Godfrey soon got into a controversy with Rev. Mr. Lord, who excommunicated them.¹¹⁶ They were at once received into the church at Orleans. His wife died about 1727 and he soon after removed with his family to Provinctown, a more convenient place for the fishing industry, selling out to Elisha Hopkins of Eastham. His second wife was Martha

¹¹⁷ Judah Mayo, son of Thomas and Barbara (Knowles) Mayo of Eastham, born November 25, 1691; married Mary Hamilton of Chatham, daughter of Daniel by his first wife, Mary Smith (Int. Jan. 27, 1721-2). He settled at Chatham on a farm lying between the farm of Menekish, the Indian sachem, and that of Samuel Atkins and probably bounding east on the salt water.¹¹⁸ His will, dated December 5, 1758, was proved October 6, 1761. He gave all his real estate to his surviving son Judah.¹¹⁹

NOTES.

(116) See chapter xiii, Smith, History of Chatham.

(117) Children of Elisha Mayo: by wife Hannah: Elizabeth, b. at Chatham. By wife Martha (Prov. Rec.): Lemuel, b. Sept. 11, 1729; Jerusha, b. Oct. 21, 1733; Sarah, b. July 11, 1736; Elisha, b. July 3, 1738; Martha, b. July 31, 1743, baptized at Truro Sept. 4, 1743.

(118) See will of Menekish, Barnstable Probate Rec.

(119) Children of Judah and Mary (Hamilton) Mayo (from the will, order uncertain): 1 Lydia, b.

Jan. 23, 1722-3 (East. Rec.); m. Prince Young, son of John, as second wife. 2 Mary, b. about 1725; m. 1st Joseph Doane, son of Hezekiah of Truro, about 1744; m. 2nd Freeman, before 1758; removed to Liverpool, N. S., about 1762. 3 Richard, b. ; m. Mary Ann Hale of Boston, June 14, 1750; died before 1758, leaving child Augustine. 4 Barbara, b. ; m. George Smith, son of Stephen, Oct. 16, 1755 (Chat. Rec.). 5 Ruth, b. ; m. Benjamin Gardner of Nantucket Nov. 3, 1756 (Chat. Rec.). 6 Elizabeth, b. ; m. Caleb Nickerson, son of Caleb, May 4, 1758 (Chat. Rec.). 7 Judah, b. about 1736; m. 1st Mary Rogers, dau. of of Harwich Dec. 21, 1758 (Har. Rec.). She died about 1776 and he m. 2nd Mrs. Sarah Fuller in 1779; removed to Rutland, Mass., about 1780 and to Woodstock, Vt., about 1797. 8 Hannah, b. ; m. William Mitchell, son of William, at Liverpool, N. S., Sept. 11, 1761 (Liverpool Rec.). 9 Sarah, b. about 1742; m. Benjamin Godfrey, son of George, April 26, 1764 (Chat. Rec.). 10 Priscilla, b. ; m. Eleazer Simmons of Northfield at Chatham April 2, 1767 (Liverpool Rec.); removed to Liverpool, N. S.

MITCHELL.

William Mitchell, only child of William and Mercy (Nickerson) Mitchell, born about 1691, married first Tabitha Eldredge, daughter of Joseph, March 19, 1712-3. She died in a few years, probably without children, and he married second Sarah Higgins of Eastham,

probably daughter of Isaac, April 10, 1717. He inherited his father's farm on the west side of Mitchell's river, but sold it in part to Nathaniel Nickerson before 1725 and in part to Richard Knowles before 1740.¹²⁰ Nothing more is known about him.¹²¹

NOTES.

(120) See page 153, note 66, Smith, History of Chatham.

(121) Children of William and Sarah (Higgins) Mitchell (Chat. Rec.): 1 James, b. Nov. 4, 1718. 2 Tabitha, b. July 19, 1720. 3 Mercy, b. May 4, 1722. 4 William, b. June 31, 1725; m. Hannah Mayo, dau. of Judah, at Liverpool, N. S., Sept. 11, 1761 (Liverpool Rec.).

RYDER.

John Ryder,¹²² son of John and Esther (Hall?) Ryder of Yarmouth, born May 28, 1692, married Mehitable Crowell, daughter of John and Bethiah Crowell of Yarmouth, May 20, 1713. He settled at Chatham as early as 1715 on land formerly the homestead of William Nickerson, Sen. This farm appears to have extended from Muddy Cove across to Herring river (later called Ryder's Cove) and to have bounded north on land of Paul Crowell and of Jehoshaphat Eldredge. He and his wife both died in the great small pox epidemic of 1766, which fell upon this family with unexampled severity. Not only did the father and mother succumb to this disease, but a daughter Bethiah, a son Zenas and his wife, a son Stephen, his wife and nine of his ten children, and the wife of a son Reuben—making in all seven—

teen people out of this one family.¹²³ Mr. Ryder died January 10, 1766, and his wife March 26, 1766, aged 76. His will dated March 30, 1762, was proved March 11, 1766, the son Reuben being the only surviving executor. He gave the homestead to his son Zenas and equivalent property to his other two sons in Chatham. Two other of his sons had removed to the "Oblong," nearly twenty years before.¹²⁴

, March 30, 1749 (Yar. Rec.). 7 Bethiah, b. Sept. 11, 1728; d. unmarried Jan. 17, 1766, of small-pox. 8 Zeruiah, b. Jan. 12, 1733-4; m. 1st Reuben Collins, son of Solomon, July 11, 1751 (Chat. Rec.). He d. Feb. 4, 1762 (Hdstn.), and she m. 2nd Joseph Harding, son of Maziah, Oct. 2, 1766 (Chat. Rec.). 9 Esther, b. March 4, 1734-5; m. Joshua Nickerson, son of Caleb, Dec. 15, 1754 (Chat. Rec.), removed to Barrington, N. S., about 1763.

NOTES.

(122) He is not styled "Col." in the town or probate records or elsewhere, and is not entitled to that designation, given him by some writers.

(123) See account of this epidemic, chapter xiv, Smith, History of Chatham.

(124) Children of John and Mehitable (Crowell) Ryder: 1 John, b. about 1715; m. Mary Paine, dau. of Ebenezer of Chatham, and removed to the Oblong about 1747. 2 Reuben, b. about 1717; m. 1st Susanna Atkins, prob. dau. of Thomas, Oct. 26, 1740 (Chat. Rec.). She died Aug. 9, 1743, aged 26, and he m. 2nd Hannah Paine, dau. of Ebenezer. She died of small-pox Jan. 11, 1766, aged 42, and he m. 3rd Mehitable (Snow) Hopkins, wid. of Samuel of Harwich, Oct. 16, 1766 (Har. Rec.). 3 Stephen, b. about 1718; m. Mercy Sears, dau. of Daniel, about 1739. 4 Simeon, b. April 4, 1720; m. , and removed to the Oblong about 1747. 5 Mehitable, b. Jan. 27, 1724-5; m. Samuel Taylor, son of Samuel, about 1743. 6 Zenas, b. April 27, 1726; m. Elizabeth Howes of Yarmouth, dau. of

SMITH.

David Smith, son of Thomas and Mary Smith of Eastham, born in the last part of March, 1691, married Sarah Higgins of Eastham, daughter of Jonathan (Int. Feb. 26, 1717-8.). It is believed that he is the David Smith who was of Chatham in 1716 and again in 1723,¹²⁵ and that he had the children given below. Very little is known about him.¹²⁶

NOTES.

(125) See page 190, Smith, History of Chatham.

(126) Children of David and Sarah (Higgins) Smith: 1 David, b. ; m. 1st Sarah , who died March 20, 1750, aged 28 (Chat. Rec.). He m. 2nd Thankful (Godfrey) Reynolds, widow of John Reynolds and dau. of Samuel Godfrey, and removed to Barrington, N. S., about 1762 (B. Bangs Diary). 2 Solomon, b. ; m. Rebecca Hamilton, dau. of Thomas and Rebecca, removed to Barrington, N. S., about 1762. 3 Jonathan, b. ; m. Jane Hamilton, dau. of Thomas and Rebecca, Nov. 9, 1752 (Chat. Rec.), removed to Barrington, N. S., about 1762. 4 Elkanah, b. about 1734; m. Elizabeth

Kendrick, dau. of Solomon and Elizabeth (Int. Nov. 17, 1753, Har. Rec.), and removed to Barrington, N. S., about 1762. 5 Daughters not known. According to the notes of Mr. Arnold Doane, late of Barrington, N. S., these four Smiths were brothers.

STEWART.

Joseph Stewart, son of Hugh and Wait Stewart, born , married Mary about 1712. He kept a tavern on Monomoit Beach near Wreck Cove for about 25 years, beginning about 1725.¹²⁷ The starving immigrants of Charles Clinton landed at his tavern in October, 1729, and were saved, as also were many shipwrecked sailors, cast ashore on the beach from time to time. In or about 1753 his house there, which he had left some time before, was either blown down or torn down by maliciously disposed persons.¹²⁸ At that time he appears to have been living in Harwich or Yarmouth, but later returned to Chatham, where he and his wife were living as late as 1763. He left no estate.¹²⁹

NOTES.

(127) See page 209, note 29, Smith, History of Chatham.

(128) Files, Superior Court of Judicature, Nos. 70,958, 27,319 and 71,055.

(129) Children of Joseph and Mary () Stewart (Chat. Rec.): 1 Temperance, b. March 15, 1713-4; m. William Penney, prob. son of John of Harwich (Int. March 15, 1734-5, Har. Rec.). 2 Prob. Lydia, b. ; m. Shubael Baker of Yarmouth, son of Sam-

uel, June 19, 1733 (Chat. Rec.). 3 Prob. Hugh, b. ; tax abated 1741 and 1745. 4 Prob. Michael, b. ; tax abated 1740 and 1741. 5 James, b. May 9, 1722. 6 Mary, b. March 26, 1724; m. Hezekiah Baker of Yarmouth, son of Samuel, Sept. 2, 1744 (Yar. Rec.). 7 Abigail, b. March 15, 1726. 8 Samuel, b. Oct. 25, 1727. 9 Alice, b. Feb. 19, 1729. 10 Mercy, b. July 17, 1735; m. Thomas Crowell, son of John of Yarmouth, June 25, 1753 (Yar. Rec.)

TAYLOR.

John Taylor, son of Richard and Ruth (Whelden) Taylor of Yarmouth, born about 1652, married Sarah Matthews, daughter of James of Yarmouth, December 15, 1674. He was a soldier in King Philip's war, going out on several expeditions.¹³⁰ He lived most of his life at Yarmouth. There is no evidence of his removal to Monomoit till the year 1711. As he owned land adjoining Tumbler's or Tomlin's Cove and came to Monomoit about the time the Tomlons appear to have moved away, it is supposed that he bought the farm of Nathaniel Tomlon, which was doubtless located on the east side of Taylor's pond, now so called, formerly known as Tomlin's Cove.¹³¹ He also had an interest in the common lands both at Yarmouth and at Monomoit. His will, dated June 23, 1718, was proved January 18, 1721-2. He devised his real estate to his son Seth.¹³²

NOTES.

(130) Freeman, Hist. of Cape Cod II, 193; deed from Samuel

Taylor to Shubael Gorham, Jr., York (Me.) Deeds, XXVII, 75.

(131) The exact location of this farm appears to a deed from Seth Taylor, grandson of John, to Sears Atwood, David Atwood, John Taylor and Elizabeth Howes, dated June 30, 1821, as follows: "All my real estate situate in the south west quarter of the town of Chatham, consisting of upland and meadow ground with the buildings thereon standing, bounded, Beginning at the Northeast corner of the premises at a drain of water near the old Bridge so called in the range of Mathis Taylor and Stephen Smith, thence Westerly in said Mathis range to a corner of fence near my dwelling house, thence Northwesterly by said Mathis to another corner of fence, thence Northerly by said Mathis Taylor, as the fence stands to the Public Road, thence Westerly by the said Road to Enoch Bassett his land, thence Southerly by said Bassett to Taylor's Pond so called, thence Southeasterly in a straight line to Nathaniel Bassett and Ebenezer Barse's range at the Pond, then Easterly a short distance by said Bassett and Barse to a fence, thence Southerly and Southwesterly by said Bassett and Barse as the fence now stands to the Eldredge meadow so called, thence Southerly and Westerly by the meadow round points of land and nooks of meadow into Chatham Bay at the Southwesterly part of Taylors Neck so called, thence Easterly by said Bay to a Harbor or Neck near Fox hill so called, then Northerly through the middle of the main Creek to Edward Kendrick his meadow, then Westerly

by said Kendrick to the upland or fence, thence Northerly by said Kendrick and Barse's meadow to an old Watering place and the main Creek near by, thence Northerly and Easterly by said Creek which parts my meadow from Stephen Smith and others to the first mentioned bounds." Joseph Atwood papers.

Dea. Samuel Taylor, eldest son of John Taylor above, born December 14, 1675, at Yarmouth, married Elizabeth . . . His farm was at West Chatham between the highway and Buck's Creek, bounding west on Hugh Stewart's farm and east on the cartway to Ragged Neck.¹³³ He is styled Deacon as early as 1734. He was selectman seven years and frequently moderator of town meeting. He received an interest in the Narragansett lands on account of his father's service in King Philip's war. He was living in 1756, but died before 1761, when his son is no longer called Samuel Jr. in the town records. There is no settlement of his estate.¹³⁴

NOTES.

(132) Children of John and Sarah (Matthews) Taylor (all born at Yarmouth, order uncertain): 1 Samuel, b. Dec. 14, 1675; m. Elizabeth . . . about 1713. 2 John, b. June 15, 1678; m. Hannah . . . ; d. 1734. 3 Hannah, b. . . ; m. William Eldredge, son of Joseph, Oct. 1, 1713 (page 188, note 45, Smith, History of Chatham). 4 Elizabeth, b. . . ; single in 1722; perhaps m. Daniel Hamilton as fourth wife. 5 Mary, b. . . ; m. Ephraim Covell of Har. (Int. Sept. 20, 1746, Har. Rec.) 6 Seth,

b. ; m. Elizabeth, dau. of Daniel Hamilton, about 1730. and thence to Kent, Conn. 2 Thankful, b. ; m. John Collins, son of John, about 1740. 3

(133) See "A Proprietor's Book for Chatham," and a deed from Samuel Eldredge to Seth Taylor dated May 15, 1711. (M. L. Luce papers.) Samuel, b. about 1722; m. Mehitable Ryder, dau. of John, about 1743. 4 Matthews, (commonly written "Matthes") b. May 15, 1724 (Chat. Rec.); m. Desire Harding, dau. of Maziah, Aug. 3, 1747 (Chat. Rec.). 5 James, b. about 1732; died May 19, 1758, aged 26 (Hdstn.).

(134) Children of Samuel and Elizabeth () Taylor: 1 Joseph, b. Jan. 22, 1713-4 (Chat. Rec.); m. Hannah ; removed about 1747 to the "Oblong," N. Y.,

44431.210

No. 37

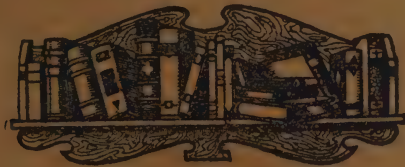
No. 37.

LIBRARY *of*
C a p e C o d
HISTORY & GENEALOGY

STEPHEN¹ *and* GILES² HOPKINS

Mayflower Passengers
and Some of Their Descendants
INCLUDING AN ELDREDGE LINE

By James W. Hawes



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
1915.

Joseph H. Benton Ed.
Aug. 7, 1939
cont.

*4431.210
No. 37

STEPHEN¹ and GILES² HOPKINS

Mayflower Passengers

and Some of Their Descendants

INCLUDING AN ELDREDGE LINE

By James W. Hawes

Copyright, 1915, by Charles W. Swift.

FIRST GENERATION.*

Stephen¹ Hopkins, born in England, came over in the Mayflower in 1620, bringing with him Giles and Constanta (Constance), children by a first wife whose name is not known, a second wife Elizabeth whose maiden name is not known,(a) two children by her, Damaris and Oceanus (born on the passage), and two servants, Edward Doty and Edward Litster. He d. between June 6, 1644 (date of his will), and July 17, 1644 (date of

his inventory).(a1) His 2d wife d. in Plymouth between 1640 and 1644.(a2)

In 1651 Mr. Hopkins and his wife were dead. They had had a son and four daughters born in Plymouth. The son became a seaman and had died in Barbados, one daughter had died in Plymouth, two daughters were married, one of them having two children, and one was unmarried. His son Giles was married and had four children. His daughter Constanta was also married and had 12 children, one of them being married.(b)

*Acknowledgment must be made for valuable aid rendered by the writer's nephew, William C. Smith, Esq., author of "History of Chatham."

(a) She was not the daughter of Francis¹ Cooke (2 Mf. 63).

(a1) 2 Mf. 12-17.
(a2) 2 ib. 117.
(b) Bradford's History of Ply-

"All that we know of Stephen Hopkins and his family before they arrived at Cape Cod is contained in these brief statements from Mourt's Relation and Bradford's History. He came from London, had been married twice, had two children by each wife and brought two servants. These meagre facts are the only ones yet discovered which are supported by absolutely trustworthy contemporary evidence. Much speculation regarding his early life has been indulged in by various writers, but all have failed to produce from contemporary sources conclusive evidence of the soundness of their claims." (c)

His bringing two servants shows that he was one of the well-to-do of the pilgrims. The facts hereinafter given from contemporary records will show that he was a man of energy, courage and ability and one of the most prominent and useful men in the colony. He was one of the earliest freemen of Plymouth(c1) and was one of the assistants to the governor from 1633 to 1637. He was engaged in trade, selling liquors and various other articles. He was charged at times with abuse of his traffic in liquors and with selling liquors and other articles at excessive rates, according to the views of the period, but he never lost the confidence of the leading men. He was not without kindness of heart, as appears from his petitioning for the release of his servants from cruel punishment.(c2)

mouth Plantation, Davis's edition, 408, 411, 412; 1 Mayflower Descendant (hereinafter cited as *Mf.*), 10, 13, 14, 163; 3 *ib.* 46; 5 *ib.* 47-53. Gov. Bradford's account of the Mayflower passengers and their issue was written between Feb. 24 and March 24, 1650-51 (1 *Mf.* 161-163). See also 2 *ib.* 114-119, for Stephen¹ Hopkins and some of his children. Mourt's Relation (Dexter's ed., 1865), 44; 3 *Mf.* 46; 5 *ib.* 47.

(c) 5 *ib.* 47.

(c1) 8 *Plym. Col. Recs.* 173.

(c2) June 18, 1621, Doty and Litster fought a duel with sword and dagger. Both were wounded, one in the hand and the other in

He apparently boarded the Mayflower in London with his family about the end of June, 1620, for on the arrival of the Speedwell at Southampton from Holland about July 2 she found the Mayflower there, having arrived with her passengers from London. They sailed from Southampton August 5, but by reason of the claimed unsafety of the Speedwell, they put into Dartmouth. After some repairs, they put to sea again, but after they had got "above 100 leagues without the Lands End", the master of the Speedwell complained that his ship was very

the thigh. They were sentenced by the whole company to have their heads and feet tied together and so to lie for 24 hours without meat or drink, "but within an hour, because of their great pains, at their own & their master's humble request, upon promise of better carriage, they are released by the governor." (Chronological History of New England, by Thomas Prince, ed. of 1826, 190, 191.) Doty d. at Plymouth Aug. 23, 1655, leaving issue. (3 Mf. 87.) Litster, after the termination of his service, went to Virginia and d. there before 1651. (Bradford, 414.)

leaky, and after consultation, both ships put into Plymouth. Here it was decided that the Speedwell should not proceed. Some of the passengers returned to London, and the rest sailed on the Mayflower on the 6th of September, reaching what is now Provincetown harbor on the 11th of November.(d) On that day he signed the compact of government on board the Mayflower, his name being 14th on the list of signers.(e)

Nov. 15, 1620, 16 armed men were set ashore, "under the conduct of Captaine Miles Standish, unto whom was adjoined for counsell and advise, William Bradford, Stephen Hopkins, and Edward Tilley." They made a voyage of discovery, saw some Indians who fled from them, obtained some corn that had been buried in the earth, and found a

(d) New England's Memorial (Lord's ed., 1903) 5, 6, 10, 11. Mourt's Rel. 1, 3; Bradford, 78-80, 87, 88; 1 Mf. 86.

(e) Mourt's Rel. 6-8; 1 Mf. 79.

trap for deer, as Stephen Hopkins were sent
kins informed them, in which towards them, but the Indians
William Bradford was caught. disappeared.(i)
They returned to the ship on
the 17th.(f)

On the 6th of December Stephen
Hopkins (described as of London)
in the company of 17 other men,
Capt. Standish at the head, started
on a second voyage of discovery,
with the shallop, which lasted five
or six days, during which they
had an encounter with the Indi-
ans. They entered Plymouth bay
and landed on the 11th of Decem-
ber.(g)

The Mayflower went to Ply-
mouth on December 16, and
shortly thereafter the work
of erecting buildings and landing
the passengers and goods was
started.(h)

February 17, 1620-21, two Indians
appeared on the top of a hill and
signalled for the settlers to come
to them. Capt. Standish and

March 16, 1620-21, Samoset came
into Plymouth and that night was
lodged and watched in Stephen
Hopkins's house.(j)

July 2, 1621, Stephen Hopkins
and Edward Winslow were sent
by Gov. Carver on a mission to
Massasoit, with whom the gov-
ernor had made a treaty. They
visited the chief at his residence
within the ancient territory of
Swansea, Mass., and in the pres-
ent town of Warren, R. I., and
had a satisfactory interview. They
had the assistance of Tisquantum
(Squanto). On their return, after
considerable hardships, they ar-
rived at Plymouth on the 7th of
July.(k)

In 1623 Stephen Hopkins re-
ceived 6 acres in the division of
lands, his allotment lying on "the

(f) Mourt's Rel., 13-27.

(g) Ib. 43-59.

(h) Mourt's Rel. 60, et. seq.

(i) Mourt's Rel. 81.

(j) Ib. 82-85.

(k) Ib. 98-111; New England's
Memorial, 31; Bradford, 117.

South side of the brook to the woodward opposite to the" lots "on the South side of the brooke to the baywards." Between him and John Howland were the lands of "Hobamak," an Indian.(l)

May 22, 1627, it was decided that the cows and goats belonging to the company should be divided and kept for 10 years at the care and expense of those to whom they were allotted, and that the old stock and half the increase should remain for common use to be divided at the end of the term "or otherwise as ocation falleth out." The other half of the increase was to belong to the allottees.(m)

The 7th lot fell to Stephen Hopkins and his company, which besides himself consisted of his wife Elizabeth, his children Giles, Caleb and Deborah, Nicholas and Constance Snow, William and

Frances Palmer, William Palmer, Jr., John Billington, Sr., Helen Billington and Francis Billington. To this lot fell a black weaning calf and the calf "of this yeare to come of the black Cow, weh fell to John Shaw & his Companie." The company was to have no interest in these two calves, but only half their increase. This lot also received two she goats, "which goats they posses on the like terms which others doe their cattell."(n)

Damaris Hopkins was the 13th in Samuel Fuller's or the 8th company. This company received a red heifer and two she goats.(o)

Mr. Edward Winslow, who had returned to England on business of the colony, came back on the Charity in 1624, bringing three heifers and a bull, the first cattle in the colony.(p)

Gov. Bradford speaks of this division of the cattle as follows:

(l) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 4; 1 Mf. 227-230; New England's Memorial, 31.

(m) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 9; 1 Mf. 148-154.

(n) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 11.

(o) Ib. 11, 12.

(p) Bradford, 117, 166.

"And first accordingly the few catle which they had were devided, which arose to this proportion; a cowe to 6. persons or shars, and 2. goats to the same, which were first equalised for age and goodnes, and then lotted for; single persons consorting with others, as they thought good, and smaler familys likewise; and swine though more in number, yet by the same rule."(q)

In 1627, before the division of the cattle, an agreement was made by which William Bradford, Capt. Miles Standish and Isaac Allerton and such as they should join with them were among other things to discharge the colony of all debts due by it and to have for six years the trade of the colony. Among 27 who signed this agreement on the part of the colonists, the name of Stephen Hopkins stands second, following that of William Brewster.(r)

Jan. 2, 1631-2, he was appointed one of the assessors of taxes.(r1)

In 1633 Stephen Hopkins is named in a list of the freemen of Plymouth.(s)

Jan. 1, 1632-3, he was chosen one of the council for the ensuing year, Edward Winslow being chosen governor.(t) Jan. 10 of the same year he was a member of a court that tried a servant who had run away. The servant was privately whipped before the court.(u)

In 1633 he was assessed to pay a tax of £1 7s., only five persons being assessed at a greater sum, of whom Isaac Allerton was to pay £3 11s. and Gov. Edward Winslow, £2 5s.(v)

July 1, 1633, it was ordered that at or before the last of the next August Stephen Hopkins divide with six others "the meadow ground in the bay equally, ac-

(q) Bradford, 217.

(r) 6 Mf. 145, 146; Gov. Bradford's Letter Book, Colls. of the Mass. Hist. Soc., 1st ser., vol. 3, pp. 59-61; 5 Mf. 5-7.

(r1) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 9.

(s) Ib. 3.

(t) Ib. 5.

(u) Ib. 7.

(v) Ib. 9.

cording to the proporcon of shares er, which included about thirty formerly devided to the pur- books.(b)

chasers." It was also provided In 1634 he was one of the asses- that he mow where he did the sors of taxes and was to pay £1 last year.(w) 10s., only two persons being as-

Oct. 24, 1633, Mr. Stephen sessed to a higher sum, viz. Ed- Hopkins with Mr. John Doane ward Winslow and Mr. William Collier £2 5s. each.(c)

kins was appointed with Mr. John Oct. 1, 1634, he was appointed Doane to take an inventory of the the first of a committee to treat goods and chattels of Godbert with the existing partners as to Godbertson and Zarah, his wife, the future management of the deceased.(x) trade.(d)

Nov. 25, 1633, with Capt. Miles Oct. 2, 1634, he and Robert Standish he was made admin- Hicks took the inventory of the istrator of the estate of John goods of Stephen Deans.(e)

Thorp of Duxbury,(y) who owed Jan. 1, 1634-5, he was chosen an him £5 7s. for various particu- assistant, and entered upon his lars.(z) office the 3d of March.(f)

Jan. 1, 1633-4, he was chosen Jan. 5, 1635-6, he was chosen assistant to the governor.(a) assistant, and took the oath March 1.(g)

Jan. 2, 1633-4, he and John Jen- ny were the appraisers of the estate of Samuel Fuller, the eld-

(b) 2 Mf. 8; 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 22.

(c) 1 Plym. Col. Rees. 26, 27.

(d) Ib. 31.

(e) 2 Mf. 87; 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 26.

(f) 1 Plym. Col. Rees. 32, 33.

(g) Ib. 36, 37.

(w) 1 Plym. Col. Rees. 14, 15.

(x) Ib. 19; 1 Mf. 154.

(y) Ib. 20.

(z) 1 Mf. 160.

(a) 1 Plym. Col. Rees. 21.

March 14, 1635-6, he was authorized to mow the marsh between Thomas Clarke and George Sowle, and it was ordered that he and Clarke have the marsh up the river as formerly.(h)

June 7, 1636, John Tisdale, yeoman, brought an action of battery against Mr. Hopkins, assistant to the government, by whom he alleged he was dangerously wounded. Hopkins was fined £5 sterling to the use of the King, "whose peace he had broken, wch he ought after a special manner to have kept," and was adjudged to pay 40s. to the plaintiff.(i)

Nov. 7, 1636, a way between his land and that of Thomas Pope, Richard Clough and Richard Wright, "at the fishing point, neer Slowly Field," is mentioned.(j)

In a list of freemen, dated March 7, 1636-7, he is styled gentleman.(k)

Stephen Hopkins was an assistant Jan. 3, 1636-7. On the same date he was made one of a committee to arrange an agreement with "those that have the trade in their hands" and report to the court.(l)

March 7, 1636-7, it was ordered that those who then had the trade of beaver, corn and beads, etc., with the Indians should hold it until the beginning of June, and in the meantime a committee was appointed, of which Mr. Hopkins was one, to consider propositions and ways "so as the said trade may be still continued to the benefit of the collony'."(m)

March 20, 1636-7, action was taken as to the use of the hay grounds and Mr. Hopkins was made one of a committee to view those grounds between the Eel river and the town of Plymouth, that each man might be assigned a proper portion. He and Thomas

(h) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 41.

(i) Ib. 41,42.

(j) Ib. 46.

(k) Ib. 52.

(l) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 25, 26.

(m) Ib. 54.

Clark were given the hay ground they had the past year.(n)

May 10, 1637, a jury impanelled for the purpose rendered a verdict (which was delivered to the General Court July 7, 1637) laying out highways to the Eel river from Plymouth, which mentions Mr. Hopkins's house, one of the ways passing it on the west.(o)

June 7, 1637, he with the governor and assistants and other persons formed a committee to consider how the trade in beaver, etc., (which was likely to go into decay) might be upheld.(p)

On the same date the committee of which Mr. Hopkins was a member reported that the expenses of the Pequot service would amount to £200, of which £100 was to be paid by Plymouth and £50 each by Duxbury and Scituate.(q)

Among the names of those entered June 7, 1637, who willing-

ly offered themselves to assist the people of Massachusetts Bay and Connecticut "in their warrs against the Pequins(q1) Indians, in reveng of the innocent blood of the English wch the sd Pequins have barbarously shed, and refuse to give satisfaccon for," were Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his two sons Caleb and Giles.(r) The soldiers who volunteered for the Pequot war were, however, not required to take the field.

On the same date Mr. Hopkins for the town of Plymouth was one of two men who, together with the governor and assistants, were to form a board to assess the inhabitants for the expenses of that war.(r)

July 17, 1637, Stephen Hopkins sold for £60 lawful money of England, to be paid one half on May 1, 1638, and one half Sept. 29, 1638, to George Boare of Scituate his messuage, houses, tenements

(n) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 55, 57.

(o) Ib. 59, 60.

(p) Ib. 62.

(q) Ib.

(q1) Pequot.

(r) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 61.

and outhouses at the Broken wharf towards the Eel river, together with the six shares of land thereunto belonging, containing 120 acres.(s)

October 2, 1637, he was appointed one of a committee for the town of Plymouth to act with the governor and assistants and a committee from Eel river, Jones river and Duxbury in agreeing upon an equal course in the division of about 500 acres of meadow between the Eel river and South river.(t)

On the same date he was on a jury.(u)

Oct. 2, 1637, he was charged with suffering men to drink in his house on the Lord's day before the meeting was ended, and also on the Lord's day, both before and after the meetings, servants and others to drink more than for ordinary refreshing. This complaint was adjourned to the next court and was subsequently withdrawn. On the same day he was fined 40s. for suffering servants and others to sit drinking in his house contrary to the orders of the court and to play at "shovell" board, and to commit similar misdemeanors. This fine was subsequently released.(v) Nov. 13, 1637, the estate of William Palmer owed him £1 12s.(w) Jan. 2, 1637-8, he was presented by the grand jury for suffering ex-

cessive drinking in his house and was acquitted.(x)

Feb. 5, 1637-8, he requested a grant of lands towards the Six Mile brook.(y)

June 5, 1638, he was presented and fined for selling beer for 2d. a quart not worth one penny a quart, and also for selling wine "at such excessive rates, to the oppressing & impoverishing of the colony."(z)

August 7, 1638, the following entry appears:

"Liberty is granted to Mr. Steephen Hopkins to erect a house at Mattacheese, and cutt hey there this yeare to winter his cattle, pvided that it be not to withdraw him from the towne of Plymouth."(a) Mattacheese was afterwards called Yarmouth.

Sept. 4, 1638, he was fined £5 upon two presentments against him the last court and three this court, for selling wine, beer strong waters and nutmegs at excessive rates.(b)

Nov. 30, 1638, for £6 sterling he sold to Josias Cooke his 6 acres of land "lying on the South side of the Towne brooke of Plymouth to the woodward."(c)

Feb. 4, 1638-9, it was ordered concerning Mr. Stephen Hopkins and his servant Dorothy Temple that as by her indenture she had about two years to serve him, he

(c) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 39.

(s) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 21.

(t) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 67.

(u) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 7.

(v) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 68.

(w) 2 Mf. 148, 151; 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 29.

(x) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 75.

(y) Ib. 76.

(z) Ib. 87.

(a) Ib. 93.

(b) Ib. 97.

should keep her and her child, or provide that she should be kept with food and raiment, during said term. If he refused to do so, the colony was to provide for her and Mr. Hopkins was to pay it. He evidently refused, for the same day he was committed to ward for contempt of the court, to remain committed until he should either receive his servant Dorothy Temple or provide for her elsewhere at his own charge during the term she had yet to serve him.(d)

It appears that the father of Dorothy Temple's child was Arthur Peach, who had been executed for murder and highway robbery before its birth, and that Feb. 8, 1638-9, John Holmes of Plymouth agreed with Mr. Hopkins to hold him and the colony harmless from the said Dorothy Temple and her child, she to serve with him the residue of her time as provided in her indenture with Mr. Hopkins. Mr. Hopkins seems to have paid Mr. Holmes three pounds sterling and other considerations for the agreement.(d1)

Dec. 3, 1639, he was presented for selling a looking glass for 16d., which could be bought in Massachusetts for 9d., and the matter was held over for further information. On the same date he was fined £3 for selling strong water without license.(e)

June 1, 1640, he appears to have received a grant of land.(f)

Nov. 2, 1640, he was granted 12 acres of meadow in the North meadow by Jones river.(g)

March 3, 1639-40, the General Court had granted to the "purchasers or old comers" the privilege of making choice of two or three plantations for themselves and their heirs, and on Dec. 4, 1640, the said "purchasers or old comers" announced that they had chosen three tracts, one of which stretched across Cape Cod from Yarmouth to 3 miles east of Namskaket. Among the 53 purchasers or old comers of Plymouth Colony was Stephen Hopkins.(g1)

Dec. 7, 1641, he had a suit against James Luxford for £12 10s.(h)

Jan. 4, 1641-2, he is mentioned as one of the contributors (a sixteenth part) to the "building of a Bark of 40 or 50 Tunn, estimated at the Charge of 200li."(i)

April 5, 1642, this entry appears: "Jonathan Hatch, by the consent of the Court, is appoynted to dwell wth Mr. Steephen Hopkins, & the said Mr. Hopkins to have a speciall care of him."(j)

June 8, 1642, William Chase mortgaged to him his house and 8 acres of upland in Yarmouth "and six acres more lying at the Stony Cove," to secure the pay-

(g) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 166.

(g1) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 4, 177;

11 ib. 34, 35.

(h) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 27.

(i) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 31.

(j) Ib. 38.

(d) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 111, 112.

(d1) Ib. 113.

(e) Ib. 137.

(f) Ib. 154.

ment to Hopkins of £5 Nov. 1, 1642.(k)

Nov. 7, 1643, Mr. Stephen Hopkins was the foreman of a jury.(l)

August 20, 1644, Capt. Miles Standish and Mr. William Bradford deposed to his will, and his son Caleb Hopkins, appointed executor, produced an inventory on oath of his goods and chattels.(m)

Nov. 21, 1644, Caleb Hopkins as executor received the mortgage of a black cow from Francis Billington to secure the payment of £3 sterling on or before Dec. 1, 1645, which Billington owed the estate of Stephen Hopkins.(n)

Sept. 26, 1645, Josias Cooke sold six acres of land which he had lately bought of Mr. Stephen Hopkins.(n1)

June 29, 1652, provision was made for the public use of the house that was Mr. Hopkins's.(o)

Land that Mr. Stephen Hopkins had owned in Plymouth is referred to in a deed dated June 24, 1685.(p)

His will was proved August 20, 1644.(q) In his will he mentions his deceased wife and requests to be buried near her. He mentions his son Giles Hopkins, who he says is in Yarmouth, and the latter's son

Stephen, his daughters Constance, wife of Nicholas Snow, Deborah, Damaris, Ruth, Elizabeth, and his son Caleb, whom he makes his heir.

He gives Giles his great bull then in the hands of Mrs. Warren(r) and to his grandson Stephen 20s. due from Mrs. Warren for its hire, to Constance his mare, to Deborah a cow and her calf and half of another cow, to Damaris a cow and a calf and half of another cow with Deborah, to Ruth a cow and her calf, a bull and half of another cow and to Elizabeth a cow and her calf, the other half of the cow with Ruth, and a yearling heifer. To his four unmarried daughters he gave equally all the movable goods in his house, including a silver spoon to each, and provided that if any one of them should die unmarried, her share should go to the survivors. To Caleb he gave all his right, title and interest in and to his house and lands in Plymouth and in and to any lands that might come to him or he might have the right to by reason of being one of the first comers. He also gave Caleb a yoke of oxen then in the hands of Richard Church and their hire, and all the debts due him. He provided that his said four daughters should have the right to remain in his house in Plymouth till married. He made his son Caleb his executor and Caleb and Capt. Miles Standish jointly supervisors.

(k) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 83.
 (l) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 36.
 (m) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 75.
 (n) Ib. 78, 79.
 (n1) 12 ib. 114.
 (o) 3 Plym. Col. Recs. 14.
 (p) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 162, 163.
 (q) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 61-63;
 2 Mf. 12-17.

(r) Widow of Richard Warren, a Mayflower passenger (2 Mf. 12; 3 ib. 48, 49).

The will also provides:

"It is also my will that my Exe-
cutr & Supervisor shall advise
devise and dispose by the best
wayes & meanes they cann for the
disposeing in marriage or other
wise for the best advancnt of the
estate of the forenamed Deborah
Damaris Ruth and Elizabeth Hop-
kins."

The witnesses were Capt. Miles
Standish and Gov. William Brad-
ford.

The inventory of his goods and
chattels, taken by Capt. Miles
Standish, Mr. Thomas Willet and
Mr. John Doane, amounted to £128
16s. 7 d., and included a mare,
household goods, wearing apparel,
cattle, two pigs, some poultry,
6d. in money, "Divers bookes" val-
ued at 12s., debts due him
amounting to £17 6s., &c.

His will and inventory are
printed in full in *The Mayflower
Descendant* (vol. 2, pp. 12-17).

The movable estate of Mr.
Stephen Hopkins was apportioned
to his four daughters by Capt.
Miles Standish and Caleb Hopkins
in 1644. Deborah, Damaris and
Ruth's shares, consisting of various
articles, are set out.(s)

Children.

By his first wife, born in England:
Giles,(t) b.

Constanta (Constance), b. ;
m. at Plymouth between 1623
and June 1, 1627, Nicholas Snow,
who came over in the *Anne* in the
latter part of July, 1623,(u) and

(s) 1 *Plym. Col. Wills*, 65; 4
Mf. 115, 116.

(t) Also written Gyles.

(u) 1 Mf. 229, 230; 2 ib. 179. His

who d. in Eastham Nov. 15, 1676.
She d. in Eastham about the mid-
dle of October, 1677.(v)

By his second wife:

Damaris, b. in England ;
d. in Plymouth before her father
and after the division of cattle,
May 22, 1627, when she was in
Samuel Fuller's company, which
drew the 8th lot.(w)

Oceanus, b. on board the *May-
flower* between Sept. 6 and Nov.
11, 1620; d. before the division of
cattle, May 22, 1627.(x)

Caleb, b. in Plymouth prob-
ably before June 6, 1623; became
a seaman and died at Barbados
before 1651.(y) He was made
the residuary devisee and legatee
and executor by his father's will
in 1644. Caleb Hopkins was one
of those in Plymouth between 16
and 60 able to bear arms in
August, 1643.(z) In 1637 he volun-
teered in the Pequot war, as above
stated. In 1644 he conveyed a
part of his father's lands to his
brother Giles, as seen below.

Deborah, b. in Plymouth, pos-
sibly before Caleb; m. Andrew
Ring, April 23, 1646.(a) She con-
sented to a conveyance of land by
her husband Feb. 13, 1659-60.(a1)

will and inventory are in 3 Mf.
167-174.

(v) 3 ib. 167.

(w) 1 Mf. 152; 5 Mf. 47-52.

(x) 5 Mf. 48, 50.

(y) Bradford, 411, 412; 1 Mf. 13,
161-163; 4 ib. 114; 5 ib. 50, 51.

(z) 8 *Plym. Col. Recs.* 187, 188.

(a) 2 *Plym. Col. Recs.* 98. See
4 Mf. 193-198; 6 ib. 95-97; 13 Mf.
86.

(a1) 14 Mf. 142.

Damaris, b. in Plymouth ;
m. there Jacob² (Francis¹)
Cooke after June 10, 1646,
date of his marriage set-
tlement;(b) d. before Nov. 18,
1669, when Jacob Cooke married
again.(c)

Ruth, b. in Plymouth ;
d. unmarried before Oct. 1, 1659,
the date of the settlement of her

(b) June 10, 1646, the settlement of Jacob Cooke, in view of his intended marriage to Damaris Hopkins, was made by his parents, Francis Cooke and Hester, his wife. They gave their son upon his marriage about 100 acres of land with meadow lying at the North river, $\frac{1}{2}$ of the land that shall fall to Francis by any division of the Purchase Land or that shall be due him as one of the first comers, one ox, one cow, one calf and the foal of Francis's mare. It was also provided that Jacob might build a house on Francis's land at Rockynook and if he should think it convenient or should be compelled to remove, the said Jacob "at the Judgment of honest and Judicial men shall have satisfaction for any building or buildings fence or fences which otherwise might prove Damage to the said Jacob." It was also provided that upon the decease of the longer survivor of Francis and his wife "the said Jacob or his heires shall have the teame with all the furniture belonging thereunto." Witnesses: Miles Standish, James Hurst and John Howland. (2 Plym. Col. Deeds, 35; 2 Mf. 27, 28; 5 ib. 51.)

(c) 3 Mf. 101, 105.

sister Elizabeth's estate, and before Gov. Bradford wrote in 1651.(d) Oct. 15, 1644, Richard Sparrow acknowledged that he had received one-half of a cow from Capt. Standish which belonged to Ruth Hopkins and agreed at the expiration of three years or sooner to pay Capt. Standish for Ruth Hopkins two year-old heifers or two year-old steers. On May 19, 1647, Capt. Standish acknowledged that he had received two young steers in full settlement.(e, f)

Elizabeth, b. in Plymouth ;
d. presumably before Sept. 29, 1659, when her cattle were valued by John Freeman and Edward Bangs.(f1) It was agreed Nov. 30, 1644, between Capt. Standish and Caleb Hopkins of the one part and Richard Sparrow of Plymouth of the other part that Sparrow should have her until she should marry or reach the age of 19 years. This provision was included in the agreement: "2ly. In consideracon of the weaknes of the child and her inabillytie to prforme such service as may acquite their charges in bringing of her up and that shee bee not too much oppressed now in her childhood wth hard labour It is agreed that Richard Sparrow shall have putt into his hands her whole estate and to have the use of yt for the tyme of her continuance wth him. Onely one heiffer reserved wch is

(d) 5 Mf. 52.

(e, f) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 66; 4 Mf. 117.

(f1) 4 Mf. 119.

now in the hands of Gyles Hopkins of Yarmouth.”(g)

It was further provided that if “Goodwyfe Sparrow” should die, then Elizabeth Hopkins and her estate should be free to be disposed of as Capt. Standish and Caleb Hopkins should think best, but if Mrs. Sparrow’s death should occur within three years, then Sparrow was to have 12 months within which to return the estate, and if after three years, then 9 months. It was further agreed that if Elizabeth should die, her estate was to return to Capt. Standish and Caleb Hopkins to be disposed of among the rest of her sisters according to the will of Mr. Hopkins, provided that Sparrow should have 12 months to return it if her death occurred within three years, and nine months if it occurred after three years.

The estate to be returned was £15 1s. 2d. and was to be returned in the following form: a milch cow, a feather bed and things belonging thereto, of the same value as they were delivered, and the rest, one half in wheat and one half in Indian corn. The agreement was witnessed by William Paddy and Thomas Willett.

Oct. 5, 1656, Capt. Myles Standish complained against Richard Sparrow of Eastham in behalf of Elizabeth Hopkins, demanding £20

damages for breach of an agreement made with Sparrow concerning said Elizabeth Hopkins. The parties settled the suit by an agreement in writing.(i)

On Oct. 10, 1657, Elizabeth Hopkins sold to Jacob Cooke of Plymouth “in consideration of a valuable sune to her alreddy satisfied and fully paid” “all that her portion or pcell of meddow that shee hath in the great meddow att Joanses river viz ten acres of ffresh meddow bee it more or lesse lying betwixt the meddow of Capt: Thomas Willett and Mr. John Done runing from woodside to woodside.”(j)

An inventory of her estate in the hands of Jacob Cooke and Andrew Ring was taken Oct. 6, 1659, and verified by them, amounting to £26 14s. There was a small matter in the hands of Mrs. Standish.(k) Sept. 29, 1659, John Freeman and Edward Bangs appraised in the hands of Giles Hopkins, belonging to Elizabeth, one half of three steers, a poor calf, one very small poor cow and an old defective cow at £14 5s.(k1)

On Oct. 5, 1659, it was agreed by Andrew Ring, Jacob Cooke and Giles Hopkins and ordered by the court “that in case Elizabeth Hopkins Doe Come Noe more”, the above mentioned cattle at their valuation should be the portion of Giles Hopkins in the estate of

(g) On the margin of the page is this note: “the tearmes of this agreement are fully prformed by Richard Sparrow.”

(h) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 65; 4 Mf. 116, 117.

(i) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 80.

(j) 2 Plym. Col. Deeds, pt. 1, p. 196; 4 Mf. 118.

(k) The last known mention of Barbara Standish.

(k1) 4 Mf. 119.

Elizabeth and that Andrew Ring and Jacob Cooke should remain in peaceable possession of what they had of her estate.(l)

SECOND GENERATION.

Giles² (Stephen¹) Hopkins, b. in England ; came over in the Mayflower in 1620; m. Oct. 9, 1639, Catherine(m) Whelden, probably daughter of Gabriel Whelden;(n) d. in Eastham between March 5, 1688-9 (date of the codicil to his will), and April 16, 1690 (date of probate). His wife d. after the date of his codicil. He lived at first in Plymouth. In the latter part of 1638 or very early in 1639 he removed to Yarmouth, where his father had erected a house and pastured cattle.(o) This house was the first one known to have been built by a white man in Yarmouth.(p)

His house in Yarmouth was in the extreme N. W. of the town (now Yarmouthport) not far from the Barnstable line. Going E. from that line, it was the third house on the N. side of the road.(q) He took the oath of fidelity in Yarmouth.(r) He was

of Yarmouth Oct. 28, 1644, when his brother Caleb conveyed land to him.(s) He later and probably shortly after removed to Nauset (later Eastham). He settled in the part of Eastham which is now Orleans.(t)

June 7, 1637, while in Plymouth, he with his father and brother volunteered to serve in the Pequot war, but his services were not required.(u)

Giles Hopkins Feb. 9, 1638-9, was one of the witnesses of the will of Peter Worden, Sr., of Yarmouth, with Nicholas Simpkins and Hugh Tilly, and swore to it March 5, 1638-9, at Plymouth.(v)

May 3, 1642, Walter Devell of Plymouth owed Giles Hopkins of Yarmouth 9 bushels of corn, for which suit was brought and execution taken out for £3 17s. 2d., which included 14 bushels due Mr. Hedge of Yarmouth and the costs of the suit.(w)

May 12, 1642, Giles Hopkins of Yarmouth, planter, sold to Andrew Hallett, Jr., 10 acres of upland in the west field between the land of Nicholas Simpkins on the N. E. and the land of Robert Dennis on the S. W., with two acres of meadow adjoining at the N. W. end, "for and in consideration of two acres of upland and four acres

(w) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 29, 30.
of meddow . . . lying and being in the prime feild in a furlong there called by the Name of

(l) 2 Plym. Col. Wills, pt. 1, pp. 90, 91; 4 Mf. 118, 119.

(m) Also written Katherine and Catorne.

(n) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 134; 13 Mf. 85. See "Early Wheldens of Yarmouth," by the compiler.

(o) Aug. 7, 1638, Stephen Hopkins obtained the right to do so.

(p) Swift's Old Yarmouth, 51.

(q) 1 Otis's Barn. Families, 484, 486.

(r) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 185.

(s) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 104.

(t) Josiah Paine, Esq.

(u) 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 61.

(v) 1 Plym. Col. Wills, 33; 3 Mf. 75, 76; 1 Plym. Col. Recs. 117.

Jack Daw furlong late in the tenure and possession of yelverton Crow of yarmouth aforesaid and two steer calves to mee in hand paied att the sealling of these prsents and eighteen bushells of good and marchantable Indian Corne to bee paied, ten bushels therof att in or upon the last Day of November now next enswewing the Day of the Date heerof and the other eigh bushells att in or upon the last Day of November thence next enswing."(x)

March 7, 1642-3, Giles Hopkins is named as one of the surveyors of highways for Yarmouth.(y)

Oct. 28, 1644, Caleb Hopkins, son and heir of Mr. Stephen Hopkins, conveyed to Giles Hopkins of Yarmouth, planter, 100 acres of those lands taken up for the purchasers of "Satuckquett,"(z) which lands accrued to said Stephen as a purchaser.(a)

June 4, 1650, he is named as one of the surveyors of highways for Nauset (later Eastham).(b)

Oct. 3, 1654, Giles Hopkins in an action of defamation against William Leverich obtained judgment for £20 and 10s. 6d. costs of the suit.(c)

He had owned about three acres of marsh meadow lying next to Green Harbor (Duxbury), which

he had sold to Thomas Clarke before Feb. 13, 1659-60.(d)

June 3, 1662, and June 5, 1671, he is named as one of the surveyors of highways for Eastham.(e)

In 1662 with Lt. Joseph Rogers and Josiah Cooke he had liberty to look out for land between Bridgewater and the bay line.(f)

June 5, 1666, the court granted to Giles Hopkins, the Widow Mayo and Jonathan Sparrow a parcel of land near Eastham, being a small neck called Sampson's Neck, and the waste land lying between the head of the fresh water pond and the westerly bounds of the Widow Mayo's land and so down to the cove.(g) June 5, 1667, the court ordered Lt. Freeman to purchase this land, or hire it for the grantees.(h)

He had the 8th lot in a tract in what is now West Brewster, east of Quivet, which he owned as early as 1653 and which he sold Nov. 9, 1666, to John Wing, of Yarmouth in consideration of a mare, colt and other land.(i)

Jan. 1, 1667-8, Giles Hopkins was on a jury of inquest upon the death of a child in Eastham and signed the verdict.(j)

(x) 2 Plym. Col. Deeds, pt. 1, p. 171; 10 Mf. 140.

(y) 2 Plym. Col. Recs. 53.

(z) Later in what is now Brewster.

(a) 12 Plym. Col. Recs. 104.

(b) 2 Ib. 155.

(c) 7 Plym. Col. Recs. 71, 72.

(d) 14 Mf. 143; 2 Plym. Col. Deeds, pt. 2, 31.

(e) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 15; 5 Ib. 58.

(f) Josiah Paine.

(g) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 129.

(h) Ib. 152.

(i) 3 Plym. Col. Deeds, 91; Deyo, 893, 894.

(j) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 177.

Aug. 24, 1672, he conveyed land in Eastham.(k)

He owned at his death 1-3 of meadow or sedge ground in Eastham "on Pochey sedge flats or low medows near Hog Iland." Lt. Joseph Rogers and James Rogers owned the other 2-3.(l)

His will was dated Jan. 19, 1682-3. Both the will and codicil are signed with a mark. They are recorded in the Barnstable County Probate records,(m) and are printed in full in the Mayflower Descendant.(n)

He mentions his wife Catorne, his sons Stephen, William, Caleb and Joshua. His will gave to Stephen all his upland and meadow lying within what was later Harwich and half his cattle, on condition that he should after his (testator's) decease "take ye care and oversight and maintaine my son William Hopkins during his natural Life in a comfortable decent manner."

Lands N. and E. of those given to Stephen he gave to his sons Caleb and Joshua equally, but if either died without issue, his share was to go to the survivor.

He gave to his wife and his son William the improvement of two acres of meadow lying at the head of Rock Harbor during the life of his wife and after her decease, he gave one half of it to his son William for his life, and after the death of his wife and his son William, he gave the

two acres to his son Joshua and his heirs.

He also gave to his son Joshua a parcel of meadow lying at the mouth of Rock Harbor and to his son Caleb a parcel of meadow lying at Little Namskaket.

He gave one half of his land and orchard by his house to his son Joshua and the other half and his dwelling house to his wife for her life and after her death to Joshua.

He gave a pair of plow irons to his son Caleb and another pair and his cart and wheels to his son Joshua.

The will also contained the following provision:

"I give unto my wife ye other half of my stock and moveables I say to my wife and my son William or what part of ye moveables my wife shall see cause to bestow on my son William Hopkins."

He made his son Stephen executor.

His codicil declared that whereas by the Providence of God his life had been prolonged and by reason of age and disability of body he was incapacitated from providing for the support of himself and wife, "my son Stephen Hopkins from this time and forward shall possess and Injoy all my stock and moveable estate provided he take effectual care of mine and my wifes Comfortable Support during our natural Lives."

The witnesses to the will were Jonathan Sparrow and Samuel Knowles and to the codicil, Mark Snow and Jonathan Sparrow.

(k) 5 Plym. Col. Deeds, 252.

(l) 11 Mf. 5.

(m) Vol. 1, p. 32.

(n) Vol. 1, pp. 110-113.

Children,(o) born no doubt the first four in Yarmouth and the rest in Eastham:

Mary, b. in November, 1640; m.(p) Jan. 3, 1665-6, Samuel² (Ralph¹) Smith; d. July 2, 1700.(q) d. July 2, 1700.(q)

Stephen, b. in September, 1642.

John, b. in 1643; d. being 3 months old.

Abigail, b. in October, 1644; m. William Merriek (Myrick) in Eastham May 23, 1667.(r) *J. Sparrow*

Deborah, b. in June, 1648; m. Josiah Cooke in Eastham, July 27, 1668.(s) He was not the son of Francis Cooke of the Mayflower.(t)

Caleb, b. in January, 1650-1; m. Mary Williams, daughter of Thomas Williams of Eastham; d. before May 22, 1728, at Truro, leaving issue.(u)

Oct. 28, 1684, Caleb Hopkins was fined 20s. and the costs of prosecution for breaking the King's peace by striking John Smith in his own house on a Sabbath evening.(v)

June 12, 1685, the Colonial treasurer was debtor to the colony for a fine of £1 from Caleb Hopkins of Eastham.(w)

At the July Court, 1685, Caleb Hopkins of Eastham, being ac-

cused of supplying the Indians with strong liquor and "refusing to give his oath for his cleareing according to law," was fined £5 silver money, to be committed to prison until the same should be paid. Afterward he requested to put in "security to traverse his conviction of said fact the next Court, & bee tryed by a jury," whereupon he was permitted to give bond in the sum of £10 with the security of William Ring of Plymouth in the sum of £5, conditioned that he would appear on the last Tuesday of the next October. He was then found guilty, and paid his fine of £4 10s. in money.(x)

Ruth, b. in June, 1653; perhaps m. Job Winslow.(y)

Joshua, b. in June, 1657; m. May 26, 1681, Mary Cole, who d. March 1, 1733-4.(z) He d. about 1738. He was admitted a freeman June 3, 1690.(a) His son Elisha, b. in 1688, lived in Chatham.(b)

William, b. Jan. 9, 1660-1.(c)

Elizabeth, b. in November, 1664, and d. being a month old.

THIRD GENERATION.

Stephen³ (Giles², Stephen¹) Hopkins, b. in September, 1642; m.(d)

(o) Eastham Recs.; 7 Mf. 236, 237.

(p) 8 Mf. 17, 18.

(q) 12 Mf. 116. See also Ib. 112-117, 236-239.

(r) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 56.

(s) 5 Mf. 185, 186; Eastham Recs.; 8 Mf. 88.

(t) 3 Mf. 97, 103.

(u) 8 Mf. 240-243.

(v) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 145.

(w) 8 ib. 164, 165.

(x) 6 ib. 171, 172, 175.

(y) 45 N. Y. Genealogical and Biog. Record, 8.

(z) 6 Mf. 204; 7 ib. 15.

(a) 6 Plym. Col. Recs. 239.

(b) 21 N. E. Reg. 213; 7 Mf. 15; 16 ib. 35-39, 105. See 15 ib. 175.

(c) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 28.

(d) Eastham Recs.; 7 Mf. 16; 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 58.

1st in Eastham Mary (dau. of Wm.) Myrick, May 23, 1667; d. in Harwich Oct. 10, 1718.(e) He married 2d Bethiah Atkins April 7 or 9, 1701.(f) She d. in Harwich March 25, 1726.(f1) He is styled Mr. in the town records.

Nov. 28, 1664, Stephen Hopkins brought into Eastham two pounds of powder and one gallon of liquor.(g)

In 1675 Stephen Hopkins, Sr., was a freeman of Eastham admitted since 1655.(h)

Stephen Hopkins was a freeman in Eastham in 1683-4.(i) In 1695 he was an inhabitant of Eastham.(j) His wife was admitted to the Harwich church Sept. 14, 1701.(k) He was admitted Dec. 26, 1708, and baptized Jan. 2, 1708-9.(l)

After the death of his father and before 1701 he moved to land left by his father in Harwich, now the eastern part of Brewster.(m) In 1713 he was a lot owner in "Sipsons Land" in East Brewster.(n) May 18, 1711, he was among the purchasers from John Quason and other Indians of a large tract of land in Harwich and Brewster and on Monomoy

(Chatham) Great Beach, which purchase also included Strong Island in Pleasant Bay, now within the jurisdiction of Chatham. March 24, 1713-14, he was named as one of a committee to lay out the Harwich tract into lots and to pass on the rights of those who claimed prior title to lots therein. April 19, 1714, they met at the house of Nicholas Snow in Brewster and drew lots. In the region N. of the road from Chatham to Yarmouth Stephen Hopkins obtained the 5th and 10th lots and S. of that road the 10th and 13th lots.(o) In 1703 he was one of a committee to determine the boundaries of Harwich and Monomoyick (now Chatham) and he signed the report dated May 28, 1703.(p)

Children,(q) born in Eastham:

Elizabeth, b. the last week in June, 1668.

Stephen, b. July 15, 1670; m. May 19, 1692, Sarah Howes.(q1) They had issue.(q2) He d. April 9, 1733,(q3) and she m. 2d Joseph Hawes of Yarmouth.(q4)

↓ Ruth, b. about the beginning of November, 1674. Nov. 2

Judah, b. about the middle of January, 1677-8.

(e) Har. Recs.; 6 Mf. 56.

(f) Eastham Recs.; 7 Mf. 16; 9 ib. 9.

(f1) Har. Recs.; 8 Mf. 35.

(g) 4 Plym. Col. Recs. 100.

(h) 2 Freeman's Cape Cod, 367.

(i) 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 202, 208.

(j) 2 Freeman, 374.

(k) 4 Mf. 245.

(l) Ib. 247.

(m) Deyo's Barnstable County, 895, 898, 909.

(n) Ib. 834, 835.

(o) Deyo, 832-834; Records of Old Superior Court, No. 63,888.

(p) 2 Freeman, 496.

(q) Eastham Recs.; 7 Mf. 16; 8 Plym. Col. Recs. 58.

(q1) Eastham Recs.; 8 Mf. 16.

(q2) Har. Recs.; 6 Mf. 82.

(q3) Brewster Gravestone Records, 63.

(q4) Har. Recs. Int. June 14, 1746.

Samuel, b. the middle of March, 1682-3. Theophilus was made executor.(v)

Nathaniel, b. about the middle of March, 1684-5.

Joseph, b. in 1688.

Benjamin, b. the middle of February, 1690-1.

Mary, b. April 15, 1692.

FOURTH GENERATION.

Nathaniel⁴ (Stephen³, Giles², Stephen¹) Hopkins, b. about the middle of March, 1684-5, in East-ham;(r) m. Mercy, daughter of John and Hannah (Fregman) Mayo, May 26, 1707;(s) d. Sept. 13, 1766, in his 82d year. She was born April 23, 1688.(t)

In 1725 he resided east of the meeting house in the part of Harwich now Brewster.(u) In 1732 he was one of the selectmen of Harwich.(u1)

His will, dated March 25, 1765, and proved Oct. 21, 1766, mentions his wife Mercy, his daughters Elizabeth Crosby and Mercy White, his son Nathaniel, the two children, James and Mercy, of his son Samuel, deceased, and his sons David, Reuben and Theophilus.

(r) 7 Mf. 16. John³ Mayo was son of Capt. Samuel² and grandson of Rev. John¹ Mayo. Hannah Freeman was the daughter of John³ (Edmund¹) Freeman. Her mother was a daughter of Gov. Thomas Prenee and granddaughter of Elder William Brewster.

(s) Har. Recs.; 4 Mf. 178, 179.

(t) Brewster Gravestone Recs. 62.

(u) 2 Freeman, 506.

(u1) Deyo, 845.

Children:(w)

David, b. July 13, 1707.

Jeremiah, b. March 14, 1708-9.

Elizabeth, b. April 21, 1711.

Nathaniel, b. Sept. 1, 1713.

Bethiah, b. Aug. 19, 1715.

Nathaniel, b. Sept. 15, 1717.

Mercy, b. Feb. 21, 1719-20.

Reuben, b. April 4, 1722.

Samuel, b. Aug. 30, 1724.

James, b. March 20, 1726-7.

Theophilus, b. March 13, 1728-9.(x)

Will of Nathaniel Hopkins.

In the Name of God Amen this 25th Day of March Anno Domini 1765 I Nathaniel Hopkins of Harwich in the County of Barnstable within the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England yeoman being in an advanced age but of perfect mind and memory. Thanks be to God therefore but calling to mind the mortality of my body and knowing that it is appointed for all men once to Dye Do make and Ordain this my last will and Testament, That is to say, principally and first of all I give and Recommend my soul into the hands of God that Gave it and my body I Recommend to the Earth to be Buried in decent Christian manner att the discretion of my Executor nothing Doubting but att the General Resurrection I shall Receive the same again by the mighty Power of God and as touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this Life I Give

(v) 13 Barn. Prob. Recs. 246.

(w) Har. Recs.; 4 Mf. 178, 179.

(x) Har. Recs.; 13 Mf. 56.

Demise and Dispose of the same in the following manner and form.

Imprimis, I will that all my Just debts and funeral Charges be well & truly paid out of my moveables or personal estate and then I Give and Bequeath unto Mercy my well beloved wife one good feather bed & suitable Furniture for the same and other household stuff sufficient to keep house withall and all the provision that shall be in my house att my decease and two coves and my horse or mare and the Improvement of all my Real Estate so long as she shall Remain my widow

Item. I Give to each of my Daughters and to their heirs and assigns forever The sum of forty shillings viz to my daughter Elizabeth Crosby forty shillings Lawfull money of New England and to my Daughter Mercy White forty shillings to be paid to each of them by my Exeer six months after my Decease.

Item I Give and bequeath to my son Nathaniel and to his heirs & assigns forever one shilling he having received sufficient for his portion already by his own choice and the remainder of my moveables or personal estate after the payment of my Just Debts and Funeral charges and the above mentioned Legacies I give and bequeath to my other three sons and to my Grandchildren viz the two children of my son Samuel Deceased to be equally Divided among them all as followeth viz to my son David and to his heirs and assigns forever one quarter to my son Reuben one quarter and

to his heirs and assigns forever, to my son Theophilus and to his heirs and assigns forever one quarter, and the other quarter to my two grandchildren above named as followeth viz my grandson James to have two thirds of said quarter to him his heirs & assigns forever and the other third of sd quarter I Give and bequeath to my granddaughter Mercy and to her heirs and assigns forever and I also Give and bequeath unto my three sons above mentioned and to my two grandchildren above named and to their heirs and assigns forever all the rest of my estate att my wives decease or marriage to be divided in proportion as above written.

And I do hereby constitute make and ordain my son Theophilus aforenamed to be my whole and sole executor to this my last will and Testament and I Do hereby utterly disallow revoke and disannull all and every other former Testaments Wills Legacies and Bequests and Executors by me in any wise before named willed and bequeathed Ratifying and confirming this and no other to be my Last will and Testament

In witness whereof I have hereunto sett my hand and seal the day and year above written

Nathaniel Hopkins (L S)

Signed sealed Published Pronounced & Declared by the said Nathaniel Hopkins to be his Last Will and Testament in presence of us

Eleazer Crosby
Mercy Hinkley
Phillip Selew

FIFTH GENERATION.

Samuel^s (Nathaniel⁴, Stephen^s, Giles^s, Stephen¹) Hopkins, b. in Harwich (the part now Brewster) Aug. 30, 1724; m.(y) there Aug. 23, 1753, Mehitable^s(y1) (Jabez^s, Lt. Prentiss^s, Mark^s, Nicholas¹) Snow; d. there Nov. 15, 1761, in his 38th year.(z) He was received into full communion in the church June 7, 1761, and June 21 the same year he was baptized.(a)

Children:

James, b. April 24, 1755.(b)

Huldah, bap. July 3, 1757;(c) d. before March 25, 1765, the date of her grandfather's will.

Mercy, bap. June 3, 1759;(c) m. John Hawes of Chatham, Jan. 5, 1777;(d) d. Jan. 27, 1834, leaving issue.(e)

Eunice, bap. June 21, 1761;(a)

(y) Harwich Records. The declaration of intention was Aug. 4, 1753.

(y1) She was b. in Harwich (Brewster) April 22, 1731 (8 Mf. 162), and baptized April 25, 1731 (6 Mf. 217). There was a Mehitable, daughter of John Snow, b. in Harwich Jan. 16, 1733-4 (8 Mf. 163), but she d. in May, 1755 (10 Mf. 124).

(z) Brewster Gravestone Records, 57. According to the Bangs Diary, he died of consumption.

(a) Brewster Church Recs.; 12 Mf. 53.

(b) Har. Recs.

(c) Brewster Church Recs.; 10 Mf. 251, 253.

(d) Chat. Recs.

(e) Chat. Recs. See Hawes genealogy by the compiler.

d. before March 25, 1765, the date of her grandfather's will.

His will dated Feb. 25, 1761, and proved March 16, 1762, makes his wife Mehitable executrix and leaves her his estate, but provides that if she should marry, then what is left shall go to his children.(f)

Nov. 11, 1766, Reuben Ryder of Chatham was appointed guardian of his children, James Hopkins and Mercy Hopkins.(g)

Samuel^s Hopkins's widow Mehitable m. 2d. Reuben Ryder of Chatham Oct. 16, 1766.(h) By him she had two daughters, Susannah, who m. Isaac Smith of Chatham, and Mehitable, who m. Nathaniel Snow of Chatham.(i) These daughters left issue. Nov. 11, 1766, Reuben Ryder was appointed guardian of her children, James and Mercy Hopkins.(j)

Reuben Ryder died before April 30, 1773, when letters of administration on his estate were granted to his widow Mehitable.(k) Nov. 29, 1774, she was appointed guar-

(f) 12 Barn. Prob. Recs. 279.

(g) 14 Barn. Prob. Recs. 166, 167.

(h) Har. Recs. The record of the marriage calls her Mehitable Snow, but the declaration of intention Sept. 27, 1766, both in Harwich and Chatham gives her name as Mehitable Hopkins.

(i) Information from the compiler's Aunt Patia (Hawes) Howes in 1877.

(j) 14 Barn. Prob. Recs. 166, 167.

(k) 16 Barn. Prob. Recs. 40.

dian of Susannah and Mehitable.(l)

April 11, 1785, division of his lands was made to his widow, then Mehitable Crowell, and to his two daughters Susannah and Mehitable.(m)

The widow Mehitable Ryder mar. 3d Deacon Paul Crowell of Chatham May 4, 1775,(n) by whom she had one daughter, Betsey, who mar. Solomon Smith of Barnstable.(o)

Deacon Paul Crowell died Nov. 10, 1808, in his 92d year.(o1) His will mentions his wife Mehitable, his sons Hallett, Thomas, Joseph, Ezra and Paul, his daughters Patience Ryder, Reliance Hopkins and Betsey Smith, and his grandchildren Betsey Knowles, Paul Sears and Betsey Sears.(p)

His widow Mehitable died before June 29, 1813, when the division was made of her thirds as widow of Reuben Ryder to Mehitable, wife of Nathaniel Snow, and to Ryder Smith, James Smith, Priscilla Smith, Hannah Smith, Susannah Smith, Freeman Smith and Molly Smith, children of Susannah, late wife of Isaac Smith.(q)

(l) 15 Barn. Prob. Recs. 200, 201.

(m) 26 ib. 24.

(n) Chat. Recs.

(o) Information from the compiler's Aunt Patia (Hawes) Howes in 1877.

(o1) Gravestone; 8 Mf. 237.

(p) 32 Barn. Prob. Recs. 237; 33 ib. 83; 35 ib. 71, 246.

(q) 37 Barn. Prob. Recs. 458-460.

Will of Samuel Hopkins.

In the Name of God Amen February 25th 1761 I Samuel Hopkins of Harwich in the County of Barnstable in the Province of the Massachusetts Bay in New England being weak in body but of Perfect mind and memory Thanks be Given to God therefore Calling to mind the mortality of my Body Do make and ordain this my Last will and Testament that is to say Principally and first of all I Give and Recommend my soul Into the Hands of God that gave it and my Body I Recommend to the earth to be buried in Decent Christian Burial at ye Discretion of my Executor hereinafter named; and as Touching such worldly estate wherewith it hath pleased God to bless me in this life I Give demise dispose of the same in the following manner and form.

I will That my Just Debts and funeral charge be well and truly paid out of my Estate Real or Personal as my Executor hereafter Named shall think proper then I Give and bequeath unto Mehitable my well beloved wife all my Real and Personal or Moveable Estate to be at her own Dispose as she shall think proper to Enable her to pay my Just Debts as abovesaid and to bring up our Children but if she should marry again and any of said estate should — My Will is that it be equally divided amongst all my children and I Do hereby Constitute make appoint and ordain my above named wife Mehitable to be my whole and sole Executor of this my Last Will and Testament

and I Do hereby utterly Revoke and disannull all and every other or former Testament Will Legacies and Bequests and Executors by me in any wise before named Willed or Bequeathed Ratifying and Confirming this and no other to be my Last Will & Testament

In witness whereof I have hereunto set my hand and seal the Day and year above written Signd Seald Published and Declared by sd Samll Hopkins to be his Last Will and Testament in presence of us the subscribers

his

Samuell X Hopkins (L S.)

mark

Nathaniel Hopkins

Theophilus Hopkins

Jabez Snow.

SIXTH GENERATION.

James^a (Samuel^s, Nathaniel^t, Stephen^s, Giles^s, Stephen^t) Hopkins, b. April 24, 1755, in Harwich (the part now Brewster);(r) m. in Chatham Reliance, daughter of Deacon Paul Crowell, March 7, 1776;(s) d. before March 20, 1820, when letters of administration were granted on his estate to his brother-in-law Ezra Crowell.(t)

The inventory of his estate amounted to \$499.00 in real estate and \$93.08 in personal property. The estate appears to have been insolvent.(u)

He served in the Revolutionary war. "Massachusetts Soldiers and Sailors of the Revolutionary War"

(vol. 8, p. 238) contains the following:

"Hopkins, James, Chatham. Private, Capt. Thomas Hamilton's Co.; enlisted July 10, 1775; service to Dec. 31, 1775, 6 mos. 7 days; company stationed on the sea-coast in Barnstable Co.; also, Capt. Benjamin Godfrey's Co., Col. John Cushing's regt.; service from Sept. 23, 1776, 60 days, at Rhode Island; roll dated Newport and sworn to in Barnstable Co.; also, Capt. Benjamin Godfrey's Co., Col. Josiah Whitney's regt.; arrived at destination May 10, 1777; discharged July 10, 1777; service, 2 mos. 12 days, at Rhode Island, travel (12 days) included; 108 miles reported as distance from Chatham to place of destination; enlistment, 2 months; roll dated Boston Neck, South Kingston."

According to the U. S. census of 1790 for Massachusetts (p. 13.) his family consisted of one adult male, two males under 16 and three females.

Children, born in Chatham:(v)

Huldah, b. April 22, 1778; m. Oct. 4, 1808, William Bea.

Samuel, b. July 18, 1780; m. Abigail Crowell Feb. 17, 1806. They lived in Chatham and had Sept. 23, 1807, Lucinda, and July 9, 1810, Huldah.

Rebecca, b. May 21, 1785; m. 1st Nov. 23, 1806, John Howes, and 2d(w) Hamilton; lived in Chatham.(w)

James, b. June 1, 1787; m.

(r) Har. Recs.

(s) Chat. Recs.

(t) 36 Barn. Prob. Recs. 450.

(u) 43 Barn. Prob. Recs. 106, 288.

(v) Chat. Recs.

(w) Information from the compiler's oldest sister (b. 1826), Mrs. Sally T. Smith.

March 8, 1808, Cynthia Snow.

Eunice, b. Oct. 6, 1790; m.

Lendal Nickerson March 12, 1807.(x)

Nathaniel, b. Sept. 24, 1792.

Mercy, b. Nov. 18, 1794; m.
Dec. 2, 1819, James Eldredge,
Jr.(y)

Reliance, b. Nov. 2, 1796; m.
Nov. 4, 1819, James Eldredge, Sr.

Mehitable, b. Nov. 8, 1798; m.
1st Abijah Eldredge and 2d Christopher Smith.(w) the 2d wife of both husbands.

Betsey, b. Feb. 2, 1800.

The compiler's Aunt Patia (Hawes) Howes informed him in 1877 that James⁹ Hopkins's sons left no male issue.

SEVENTH GENERATION.

Reliance⁷ (James⁶, Samuel⁵, Nathaniel⁴, Stephen³, Giles², Stephen¹) Hopkins, b. in Chatham Nov. 2, 1796; m. there Nov. 4, 1819, James Eldredge; d. Oct. 18, 1860, aged 63 years and 11 months. He d. March 12, 1858, aged 63 years and 5 months.(z) They lived in West Chatham.

Children, born in Chatham:(a)

Elisha, d. young.

Elisha, b. Jan. 31, 1822.

Lucina, d. young.

(x) Mrs. Smith thought her husband was Leonard Nickerson and that they lived in Dedham.

(y) Mrs. Smith, who said that they lived in North Chatham and that two sisters, Mercy and Reliance, married men of the same name.

(z) Gravestones in Baptist cemetery in Chatham.

(a) Information as to these and

Daniel Webster, b. Nov. 5, 1835.

EIGHTH GENERATION.

Elisha⁸ Eldredge, son of James and (Reliance⁷ Hopkins) Eldredge; b. Jan. 31, 1822; m. 1st in 1849 Betsey Ann, daughter of Zenas Eldredge of South Chatham, 2d in 1855 Elizabeth, daughter of Ephraim Eldredge of South Chatham, and 3d in March, 1863, Marion W. Lothrop, widow of James D. Lothrop (son of Rev. Davis Lothrop) and daughter of Nehemiah D. Kelley of West Harwich; d. Oct. 31, 1878.

Children, by 3d wife, born in South Chatham:

a. Nehemiah D., b. Sept. 4, 1864; m. April 25, 1888, Sadie Brooks of Boston; d. in April, 1907, leaving two children, Charles, b. March 16, 1894, and Josephine D., 15 years old in 1915, who live with their mother at 316 Newbury St., Boston, who married 2d Charles W. Warner.

b. Mary Doane, b. Aug. 12, 1869; m. William E. Howes of Dennisport, who live in Malden and have Victor E., 19 years old, and Emily M., 8 years old.

c. Victoria, b. in March, 1874; d. in 1888.

Daniel⁸ Webster Eldredge, son of James and (Reliance⁷ Hopkins) Eldredge; b. Nov. 5, 1835; m. Oct. 12, 1858, Eliza Ann, daughter of Captain Hiram Small of Harwich; d. May 26, 1870.

their descendants from the widows of Elisha and Daniel W. Eldredge.

His widow m. Luther Eldredge, now deceased.

Children, born in South Harwich:

a. Hiram J., b. November, 1859; d. young.

b. Effie Mabel, b. January, 1864; m. Eugene C. Ellis, who is postmaster in East Wareham. They have three children: Harold Merwin, Eugene Webster and Doris Amelia.

c. Hiram Webster, b. October, 1866; m. Jan. 24, 1889, in Harwich, Rebecca Mayo Snow. They have three children: Henry Burr, b. in Barnstable; Cranston Daniel and Mabel b. in Antrim, N. H., where he is the editor and publisher of The Antrim Reporter.

ELDRIDGE LINE.

The Eldredge line is as follows: (b)

Robert¹, first mentioned in the Colonial record in 1639, lived some 10 years in Plymouth and then removed to Yarmouth, where in 1649 he married Elizabeth, daughter of William¹ Nickerson. About 1666 he followed his father-in-law to Chatham, where he died about the beginning of 1683. He left among other children

Lt. Nicholas², b. in Yarmouth Aug. 18, 1650. He came with his father to Chatham, where he died

(b) See "Eldred, Eldredge" by the compiler, published by C. W. Swift, Yarmouthport, Mass.

April 30, 1702. He left among other children

James³, who died July 19, 1757, leaving among other children

Abner⁴, who m. Sarah Eldredge April 19, 1762; (c) d. before May 12, 1772. (d) His children Dorcas, Abner⁵, Daniel⁵ and Desire had their uncle, Zephaniah⁴ Eldredge, termed a mariner, appointed their guardian April 11, 1774. (e)

Daniel⁵ (Abner⁴, James³, Nicholas², Robert¹) Eldredge, m. in Chatham Tabitha Howes (intention Oct. 6, 1787). (f)

Children, born in Chatham: (g)

Elisha⁶, b. Sept. 23, 1788; killed by lightning while at sea. He m. Patience Young and had one child, Mary, who m. Philip Small, of Harwichport, and has a son, Frank Small, living there. (h)

Abner⁶, b. Jan. 22, 1791. He was a sea captain in his early life, married and had issue. (h)

James⁶, b. Oct. 4, 1794; m. Reliance Hopkins, as above stated.

Sarah, b. April 14, 1798. She m. Jeremiah Kelly, of Centerville; no children. (h)

Tabitha, b. Feb. 22, 1807; m. Jabez Crowell of East Harwich. (h)

(c) Chatham Recs. See 15 Mf. 133.

(d) 16 Barn. Prob. Recs. 26.

(e) 15 ib. 188-191.

(f) 2 Chat. Recs. 314.

(g) 3 Chat. Recs. 267.

(h) Family information.

No. 38.

LIBRARY of
C a p e C o d
HISTORY & GENEALOGY

OLD QUAKER VILLAGE

South Yarmouth, Massachusetts

Reminiscences Gathered and Edited by

E. Lawrence Jenkins

1915



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
1915.

OLD QUAKER VILLAGE

South Yarmouth, Massachusetts

No land of beauty art thou, Old Cape,
But a prouder name we crave,
The home of the purest, bravest hearts,
That traverse the dark blue wave.
Then cherished for aye shall thy mem'ry be,
For where'er through life I roam,
My heart will turn, like a wearied bird,
To my own, my Cape Cod home.

—E. J. Dudley.

Reminiscences Gathered and Edited by

E. Lawrence Jenkins

1915

Copyright, 1915, By Charles Warner Swift.
--

Josiah H. Benton Ed.
Aug 7, 1939

*4431.210
No. 38

C
cont

BASS RIVER.

There's a gently flowing river,
Bordered by whispering trees,
That ebbs and flows in Nobscussett,
And winds through Mattacheese.

Surely the Indians loved it,
In the ages so dim and gray,
River beloved of the pale-face,
Who dwell near its banks today!

They pass on,—the generations—
Thou stayest, while men depart;
They go with thy lovely changes
Shrined in each failing heart.

Beautiful old Bass river!
Girt round with thy murmuring trees;
Long wilt thou flow through Nobscussett,
And wander through Mattacheese.
—Arethusa, South Dennis.

BASS RIVER.

At the sound of thy name, what fond mem'ries arise
Of the scenes of my childhood, 'neath soft summer skies!
At each sail on thy surface, or walk on thy shore,
Thy quaint beauty impressed me as never before.

Of the Afton and Tiber the poets have sung;
For the Avon and Danube their harps they have strung.
May the the singer be blest, whosoe'er he may be,
Who shall sing the just praises, dear river, of thee!
—Daniel Wing.

The idea of putting upon paper various items of information and interest that might be gathered of South Yarmouth, formerly known as "Quaker Village," was suggested by a former resident of the place who had been greatly interested in a conversation with the late Orlando F. Wood, then one of its oldest residents. Recognizing the fact that our old men are one by one passing away and much interesting and valuable information is being lost, I suggested to Mr. Wood that he describe the village as it was when he was a boy and I would write it down. So, seated in his big chair in the cozy quarters which he liked to designate as the "O. B. S. club," and surrounded by a few congenial listeners and good friends, he took each street and described its appearance at that early period.

I wish to state at this point, however, that I have not relied entirely upon Mr. Wood's account, but have had valuable assistance from Mr. Daniel Wing, who has for years made a study of the history of South Yarmouth.

One is apt to think that these country villages change but little, but he has only to let his mind wander back even so short a time as twenty-five years to see that many changes have taken place, and that the Quaker Village of that period was a far different place than that of today; fifty or seventy-five years have brought about great changes.

There is one thing that I cannot but remark, and that is the "youngness" of the present day residents. Even when I was a boy, a man or woman who had reached the age of fifty years was considered "old;" now, he or she is simply in the prime of life and best able to enjoy it. And still more strange, none of those whom I considered old in my boyhood days ever seemed to grow any older! In those days, a man who had reached the age of fifty no longer thought of mingling with the young in society. It was his duty to set the example of sedateness and propriety, as if it were a sin to grow young in heart as he grew older in years. My father was fifty years old when I was born, and he was considered so old a man that his friends told him he would never live to see me grown up. And yet he did live to see me pass my thirtieth birthday. I remember that he was a much younger man at heart when he was eighty than he was at sixty, and grew far more liberal in his views during the last twenty years of his life. In these days it is rarely we find a man under seventy-five who cares to be thought "old."

Before taking up the appearance of the village, street by street,

as described by Mr. Wood, it would be well to give a bit of the history of South Yarmouth, gathered from various sources, particularly from a series of articles by Mr. Daniel Wing, a former resident, which were published in the Yarmouth Register.

According to Mr. Wing, the town of Yarmouth, in 1713, set off a tract of land "for ye Indian inhabitants to live upon," which included the land from Long pond to Bass river, and from the old Yarmouth road to the lands now owned by Joseph Chase; in fact, what is now the most populous section of the village. The Indians having been killed off by small pox, the town authorized the selectmen in 1778 to sell these lands, reserving a tract for Thomas Greenough, one of the survivors. Greenough afterwards sold more or less of this land, the first of which was to David Kelley, great-grandfather of the present David D. Kelley, in 1790, and was about two acres; on the southwesterly corner of which the structure now known as the "cellar house" was erected.

In 1713, when the town of Yarmouth reserved for the native Indians 160 acres, the Indians, according to Mr. Alden in his "Memorabilia of Yarmouth," equalled the whites in population, but disease thinned their ranks and in 1767 there were but six wigwams inhabited in the whole township. In 1787 but one wigwam was inhabited and that was on the grounds now owned by the Owl club.

Speaking of Indians reminds me that "Nauhaught, the Deacon," the subject of Whittier's poem of that title, lived in South Yarmouth on the south side of Long pond, near the Yarmouth road, and the swamp on the opposite side is today known as "Sarah's swamp," being named for the Deacon's daughter. All are familiar with the story of how he was attacked by several black snakes that began to twine about his legs. One of them reaching his head, Nauhaught opened his mouth, and the snake putting his head inside, the Indian bit it off, whereupon the blood streaming down from the decapitated snake alarmed the rest and they fled. Even to this day traces of an old trail may be seen in the vicinity of Swan pond, where an Indian meeting house once stood. "It is probable," says a writer, "that it was on this path that Nauhaught had his encounter with the snakes." Mr. Alden visited him in his last days and asked him if he was resigned. "Oh yes, Mr. Alden," he replied, "I have always had a pretty good notion of death."

Upon the records of the town of Yarmouth may be found under date of November 17, 1778, "Voted, that the charge made by the

Indians having the small pox, be paid out of the town treasury.

"5th. Then voted that all their effects be sold to pay their charge of having the small pox, and the land formerly belonging to the Indians to live upon be sold or leased.

"6th. Concerning the Indian land—Voted that the town empower the selectmen to lease or sell the Indian land or reserve a piece for Thomas Greenough as they shall think proper."

Some of the Indians of South Yarmouth were first buried on land afterwards owned by Robert Homer, but when it was proposed to use the land for salt works, it so grieved Cato, a negro, whose wife Lucy was an Indian, who occupied the last wigwam in South Yarmouth, that the bodies were disinterred and buried with the others on a hillside near Long pond, which spot is now marked by a monument of boulders bearing the inscription:

"On this slope lie buried
the last native Indians
of Yarmouth."

When the bank back of the monument was dug away for the purpose of making a cranberry bog, several skeletons were found, together with pieces of coffins, showing that the burial place was comparatively modern, although the general idea remains that it was also an ancient burial place as well. Certainly it must have been a part of their old hunting grounds, those old woods, bordering upon the largest pond in the vicinity, which was full of fish and the resort of water fowl, and we can well imagine that it would be an ideal spot for the last resting place of the members of the tribe that once held possession of all these lands.

At the time of Orlando Wood's first recollections, there were but few trees in the village excepting wild cherry trees that bordered the streets, and here and there an apple orchard, evidences of which may now be seen in the yard of Captain Joseph Allen, which trees, although at least one hundred years old, still bear fruit of excellent quality. The cherry trees in front of what is known as the "Katy Kelley house" on Bridge street, I am informed by Seth Kelley, were old trees when his father was a boy, which would be very nearly if not quite a hundred years ago. Trees for ornamentation evidently were thought to be too worldly for those old Friends; to them, there was no place for a tree unless it bore fruit, and the idea of ornamenting streets or grounds with trees was something not to be thought of.

Beginning at Bridge street, Mr. Wood says there was no dwelling beyond it. The "rope-walk" extended to the Friends meeting

house on the main road, but all below it, to the river, was given over to fields and gardens, large portions being used for corn-fields. The present street leading to the David Kelley house was not opened, nor were any of the present houses on that street built. The "toll-house" of course was not built, nor even thought of, and the first house on the street, from the river, was the house in which Mr. Wood was born, on the spot where now stands the paint shop of Manton H. Crowell. The garden of this house was the spot where the bank building now stands. This house was undoubtedly the residence of the first David Kelley, who died in 1816, an enterprising man who bought several acres of the Indian lands. It was a one-story house, with a large unfinished chamber on the second floor, in which were several beds, as was the custom in those days. Mr. Wood remembers that a storm blew out one side of the house and he saw some of the neighborly women standing in the breech admiring the view of the river.

Mr. Wood's father was Zenas Wood and his mother was Mercy Hawes of Yarmouth. He tells a story of his grandmother Lydia, or "Liddy" as she was called, that shows that even in those early days "love laughed at locksmiths." It seems that her parents were strict Quakers, and Liddy, against their objections, had met and fallen in love with a young man of West Barnstable. There was evidently no objection to the young man except that he was not a Friend, and Liddy's parents could not be reconciled to her marrying "out of the meeting." But love will find a way, and when the old folks went to monthly meeting one day, Liddy quietly packed up some of her belongings in a bundle, mounted a horse and rode away to West Barnstable, hiding there in an old grist mill—which was standing up to a few years ago—where the young man met her and took her to the parson's. Her father refused for a long time to forgive her, but the mother finally brought about a reconciliation and Liddy went back to her meeting. This old grist mill was the same that received a grant from the town of Barnstable in 1689 of eight or ten acres at Goodspeed's river and the benefit of the stream forever on condition that the parties interested "should set up a fulling mill on the river and maintain the same for twenty years and full and dress the town's cloth on reasonable terms."—(D. Wing.) The story is told that Aunt Liddy dreamed one night, during her last years, that she saw the vessel on which had sailed a favorite grandson, coming up Boston harbor with the flag at half mast and that the boy was dead. A few days later brought tidings that her dream was but the forerunner of sad news.

I remember, rather vaguely, Zenas Wood as a man of whom the school boys stood in awe, because they imagined that he possessed certain authority and power to arrest them for any misdemeanors of which they might be guilty. I also remember that he had a tall flag pole in his garden and a flag which he used to raise upon patriotic occasions, even as Mr. Wood delighted to do later. Mr. Wood informed me that he, Orlando, was born upon a day of general muster, and that upon that eventful occasion, Uncle George Baker shot off one of his arms by a careless handling of his musket. I can just remember the old man myself. The stump of his arm was a great curiosity to me, and the deft way in which he managed to saw wood, which he used to do for my father. In this old house on Bridge street the late David Kelley lived after he was first married, and later Zeno Baker and others. At the foot of Bridge street was a wharf, to which large vessels were often moored.

The next house on Bridge street was that owned by the late Thomas Collins, then belonging to Abiel Akin, blacksmith, grandfather of the late Peleg P. Akin, who came from New Bedford previous to 1800. He had formerly owned the "cellar house," where the late David K. Akin was born. Previously it was occupied by a potter named Purrington, and the second story was used as a sail-loft. After Abiel built the Collins house and moved into it, the "cellar house" was occupied by one of his children, and during a storm the good woman of the house used to take her children and go to her father's to stay, for fear that the house would blow over! However, the old house has weathered many a storm since those days and still stands as probably one of the most substantial dwellings in the village. Certainly it is one of the most interesting old landmarks of the place. The Collins house was also known as the "Amos Kelley house."

The only other house standing at that time on Bridge street, according to Mr. Wood, was that known as the "Kate Kelley house." It was built by the father of the late David Kelley, and afterwards became the home of his daughter Catherine, of whom the older portion of the community have many pleasant memories.

As has been said, back of these houses, on the right hand side coming from the river, was nothing but open fields excepting upon the road leading to the Friends meeting house, where stood the "rope-walk," which extended from the head of Bridge street to the meeting house grounds. For a description of this old business enterprise I am indebted to the late Stephen Sears and to Mr. Wing,

although Mr. Wood recalled the old building because he worked there when he was a boy. It was built in 1802 by David Kelley the first and Sylvanus Crowell, and the business of making rope was carried on for a number of years,—more than twenty-five at least. At that time there was a large fleet of coasting and fishing vessels that sailed from Bass river, and there was a great demand for the product of the rope-walk. The “walk” was, perhaps, twelve feet wide and seven feet high, with port holes that could be closed by inside shutters. At the north end was the power house, operated by horses to do the heavy work, such as the making of cables and standing rigging. At the opposite or south end was the store house for manufactured goods, etc. Mr. Sears recalled a visit to the place when a lad, and seeing two men and a boy spinning. The men had large wisps of hemp about their waists which they attached to the twisting machine, kept in motion by the boy, and walking with their backs to the machine, paid out the material for some two or three hundred feet, and then returned to the wheel, hanging the newly spun thread to hooks. Mr. Sears thought that the men received two cents a thread for spinning and the boy forty cents a day. The farring plant was outside the main building. When the business of rope making became no longer profitable, the building was occupied for the making of oil cloth, a man by the name of Jacob Vining being the manager, and Stephen Wing the designer and pattern maker. He (Wing) had always a taste for artistic work of a like nature, which showed itself in the painting of signs, lettering and designing. When this business was given up the structure was taken down and the land gradually sold for building purposes, and on the site of the old rope-walk stand today the dwellings built or occupied by Morris Cole, James F. Kelley, William Haffards, Joseph Crowell, Bartlett White, Charles Farris, Nelson Crowell, the dry goods store of E. D. Kelley and the grocery store of David D. Kelley. In those early days the rope-walk was a convenient passageway to the meeting house in stormy weather and as the owners were themselves Friends, they allowed the worshippers to pass through it, a favor I fear no one of the present day would offer if the building still stood and was owned by other parties.

In looking back to those days I am struck with the fact that there were many opportunities offered to keep the young men at work and at home. The Quakers were not a sea-going people as a rule, but they were full of business ideas and promoters

of many industries. In addition to rope making, there was the salt industry, the fishing business was excellent on our coast, shoe making establishments employed many young men, as did a tailoring shop, a magnesia factory, a tannery, and other opportunities were not wanting; while on the other hand, today there is hardly anything for a young man to do who wishes to live in his native place.

On the opposite side of the road from the rope-walk was a "stretch" of pine woods; tall large trees such as one rarely sees now. These woods extended down to the "flatiron" in front of the house known as the "David Chubbs house."

When the old David Kelley house on Bridge street was torn down a portion of it was used in building that now owned by Frank Crosby, and about the same time the house of Charles Baxter was built, and here he lived and died as did his wife, Aunt Betsey. At present it is occupied by Mrs. Hathaway. Next to it was the house in which Mr. Tripp, one of the earlier school teachers lived, now occupied by Mrs. Crowell, the mother of our postmaster, who at this date is ninety-four years old, and in excellent health.

And now, while we are in the vicinity, it is well to speak of the Friends meeting house, which was then the principal place of worship, and to within a few years of the birth of Mr. Wood, the only place of worship in South Yarmouth. It was built in 1809. Nearly one hundred years before, the society built a meeting house in what is now South Dennis, on a hill overlooking the river. Dennis then being a part of Yarmouth, the old meeting house was that of the Yarmouth Quakers, and more particularly those of South Yarmouth. All the Quakers from the country round, says Mr. Wing, used to attend services there, those from Harwich coming on what is still known as "Quaker path," while those from the vicinity of "Indian town," now known as "Friends village," came on the road leading by "Dinah's pond" and crossing at the "second narrows" in a boat kept there for the purpose. When the present structure was built the old meeting house was sold and floated down the river to its mouth and converted into a dwelling house. It is now standing and is known as the "Waterman Baker house." Its age of nearly two hundred years makes it an object of interest to all.

In those early days the Friends meeting was largely attended, both sides of the house being filled at every service, on Sundays and Thursdays, for it was considered an inexcusable neglect of

duty not to be present. On Fifth day, or Thursday, the children in the schools were excused for the purpose of attending meeting, and the young men left their work to attend.

It is told of the late David Kelley, that when a young man and working in the rope-walk, one Fifth day he did not attend meeting as usual. There was much whispering and smiling among the others, and it turned out that on that particular day his proposed marriage to Phoebe Dudley was announced. She was a niece of Robert and Daniel Wing, senior, and came from Maine to teach school in South Yarmouth, and it was here he first met her. If I am not mistaken, the last marriage ceremony performed in the old meeting house was that of the oldest daughter of the late Henry G. Crowell. A visitor to the old cemetery is struck with the simplicity and neatness of the enclosure, the care taken of the grounds and graves, and above all with the fact that there all are equal; there are no costly monuments proclaiming to the world the wealth of him who sleeps beneath, no carved eulogies reciting the worldly deeds of the sleeper; only a simple stone with the name and date of birth and death, and each stone is like every other in size; the richest man in the place—when he was living—having no more costly stone than his neighbor who had to toil early and late to support his family. I think there are few more impressive resting places for the dead than this little cemetery of the South Yarmouth Quakers.

My own memories of Quaker meeting are very tender. My father did not belong to the meeting, although he always attended, and in his later years sat upon the second seat facing the congregation, an honor accorded him because of his life-long attendance and because of the great respect with which he was held by the members of that meeting. As a boy, I was required to attend on First day, and I remember well how long that hour of quiet seemed to me, and how the sighing of the pines back of the meeting house would often lull me to an inclination to sleep, and with what interest I watched Uncle David Akin and Aunt Ruth Baker to see if they showed any signs of shaking hands, which was the closing ceremony.

The old meeting house is closed; all the old Friends are sleeping in the little cemetery. Only a few of the younger members of the meeting remain, and they are so few that to hold services could only cause feelings of sadness as they sit there in solemn silence while their minds harken back to the years that are not, and to the faces of those who once filled the seats.

Facing the "gridiron" was the house of David Chubb, a portion of which was the tailor shop of Alexander Hillman, attached to the house now occupied by Frank Collins, of which I shall have more to say later on. The house has been added to from time to time until it reminds one now of the "house of the seven gables," although how many more gables than seven it has I am still at a loss to say. A large barn is near it, and when I was a boy there used to be a stencilled notice facing the door bearing this information:

"My will is good,
My word is just,
I would if I could,
But I cannot trust."

David Chubb drove the stage coach for many years and was a well-known personage in the vicinity. And speaking of the stage coach, reminds me that within my recollection the stage coaches ran down the Cape from Hyannis on the south side, and from Yarmouth on the north, and I can see them now, lumbering through the village. I used to envy the driver holding the reins of his four horses and snapping his long whip as he dashed around the corner, with almost invariably a boy clinging to the trunk rack, while some less fortunate urchin sang out, "Whip behind!" To me it seemed like a bit of the circus outside the tent. There are men living in the village who can remember going all the way to Boston in the stage coach, a journey which consumed a whole day. Sometimes passengers went by vessel from Yarmouth, a ball on the top of a flag pole on one of the hills, which could be seen from the village, announcing the departure of such a vessel.

✓ Daniel Wing in a recent article to the Register speaks of the great severity of the weather in those days and of hearing older people tell of walking to the roof of the rope-walk upon frozen snow drifts on the way to the schoolhouse, which stood on the left hand side of the road near the village of Georgetown. I remember hearing similar stories of big snow drifts; one of which was near the foot of Bridge street, so high that an arch was cut into it, through which the stage coach passed. Even within my own recollection the winters were much more severe than those of the present time.

Going back to Bridge street, we come to the street that runs past the house of Thomas Collins to that of the late Peleg P. Akin. There was no building opposite the Collins house, nothing but an open field; but on the corner of the next street leading to the river and to the "cellar house," or near the corner, stood the grocery store of Thomas Akin and the postoffice. There were but two mails a week and these came by the way of Yarmouth and were brought over by carrier. Postage was higher in those days and I have in my possession letters, without envelopes, with postage marked twelve and a half cents. Mr. Wing writes me, "I remember very well the Thomas Akin store when it was on the site here described. The stone wall was very much the same as now, except in front of the store it was removed so as to allow of passage under the store piazza and into the basement. I used to think, when a boy, that the incline leading up to the store on the other side, together with the stone wall and the stairs, was a very grand combination and looked upon it with greater wonderment than I experience now in viewing structures twenty times as high."

Next to Thomas Akin's store, this side of it I think, nearer the corner, was David Akin's jewelry store, one part of which was used by Alexander Hillman as a tailor's shop until he moved across the street to the house now occupied by Frank Collins. Later this little building of David Akin's was moved to Bridge street and used as a postoffice. It is now the dwelling house of Uriah Sears. Thomas Akin was succeeded as postmaster by David Akin, who in turn gave way to John Larkin. Peleg P. Akin was postmaster when the postoffice was in the grocery store, now used as a library room, and he in turn gave place to Bernard L. Baker, who held the office for many years. In the meanwhile, however, the little building had become the postoffice again and continued so until the appointment of the present postmaster, J. W. Crowell, who moved into new quarters.

Down this street, leading to the "cellar house," at the wharf, was the blacksmith shop of Charles and Timothy Akin, the village blacksmiths.

"Uncle Timothy," said Mr. Wood, "was a very keen and witty old Quaker, and very fond of a joke. One day he came to my grandmother's house and said, 'Liddy, I want thee to get thy potatoes and dumplings all ready tomorrow and I will bring thee a goose.' My grandmother thanked him for his kindness, and the next day Uncle Timothy appeared and said, 'Liddy, here is thy goose; it is rather tough and will need a deal of cooking.' And

he pulled out from under his coat a tailor's iron goose! I don't know what my grandmother said, but she kept the goose and it was in the family for many years."

Uncle Timothy was a practical joker and many were the pranks he played upon one and another of the villagers. Although some of his jokes resulted in a sacrifice of material, he was always ready to make good the loss, and seemed to count himself the gainer though the fun cost him several hours of labor. "On a certain occasion he partly filled a gun barrel with water, securely closing the muzzle and inserting a plug in the tube so slightly as to allow of its removal by a slight pressure from within. One day Uncle Robert, a boat builder and intimate friend and frequent visitor of Uncle Timothy, called at the smithy and entertained himself, while engaged in conversation, by blowing the huge bellows at the forge. Just then it occurred to the smith that it was a favorable opportunity to try that gun barrel, so, with other irons, he carefully laid it on the fire, and going out of the shop he took a position where he could watch the development of events within; Uncle Robert, meanwhile, ignorant of the preparations, blowing away as if great results depended upon his diligence. As the heat increased, the water in the gun barrel began to boil and the pressure of steam became so great that the plug was forced from the tube, and the issuing steam, after the manner of Hero's engine, caused the gun barrel to leave the fire, sending it in the air in so zig-zag a course as to defy all attempts at predicting where or when it would finally alight. Uncle Robert, who was somewhat corpulent, was entirely taken by surprise, and not knowing what the infernal machine might do next in its mad career about the shop, crawled under the bellows to get out of the way, in which awkward position he was found by the blacksmith, who just then happened(?) to come in to see what on earth was to pay!" (Cape Cod News, 1887.)

Across the street from Thomas Akin's store was the house of Alexander Hillman, (now occupied by Frank Collins) and attached to it was his tailor's shop in which he employed a dozen or more women and boys, the latter being apprentices who were learning the trade, among them being Mr. Wood. Asking Mr. Wood who worked there at that time, I found that many of the women I knew as wives of prominent men in the village were among the number, and others came from Yarmouth, Dennis and Brewster. Evidently some of them were not satisfied with their boarding

places, as the following prayers were written by two of the tailor-esses, who possessed a streak of humor in their make-up:

“Lord of love, look down from above
And pity us poor creatures;
Give us some meat that is fit to eat,
And take away the fish and potatoes!”

“Lord make us able
To eat all that is on the table,
Except the dish cloth and ladle!”

Alexander Hillman afterwards removed to New Bedford, where he continued the tailoring business.

Next to this house was that of Cyrenus Kelley, grandfather of William R. Farris, a former resident of this place. It later on became the property of William White, and is now occupied by his son, Edwin M. White. Cyrenus Kelley was a carpenter by trade, and had a shop back of his house. William White was one of a large family that descended in direct line from Peregrine White, the first white child born in New England, and one of the sons, I think Captain Osborn White, has in his possession the cane that belonged to the said Peregrine. William White's direct line from the “Mayflower” is as follows:

- 1 William White with his wife Anna came over in the Mayflower.
- 2 Peregrine, first white child born in New England.
- 3 Jonathan White.
- 4 Joseph White.
- 5 Deacon Joseph White.
- 6 Peregrine.
- 7 Alfred, William, Perry, Rufus, etc.

On the opposite side of the street was the house of Zeno Kelley, now occupied by Mr. G. W. Tupper. Mr. Wood remembers Uncle Zeno very well because he gave him five dollars a year to milk his cow, and he remembers that one night he forgot to milk. How little things remain in our memories— things that happened long years ago— while events of yesterday are even now forgotten! Uncle Zeno also built and occupied for awhile the house opposite, known as the “Edward Gifford house,” one of the most picturesque old houses in the village. He conveyed the premises, says Mr. Wing, in 1805, so that the building is somewhat over a hundred

years old. Uncle Zeno also built the house formerly used as a Methodist parsonage, standing opposite the church on Main street, but which when erected occupied the present site of the late Mrs. Sarah Bray residence.

Uncle Edward Gifford had a large family. One of them—his daughter Sarah R.—I remember quite distinctly as the village dressmaker; a very bright and witty old maid and a great favorite with all who knew her. I recall that at one time, I think it was during the Civil war, she had company to tea and her mother, a hospitable old Quaker lady, said to the young women present at the table, "Girls, eat all the butter thee wishes, but I'm dreadful afraid it will hurt thee." And the eating of too much did hurt the pocketbooks of many of our parents during those times when everything was high and money scarce. Mr. Wing has sent me some of the bills received by Wing & Akin in those days for goods from the wholesalers, and from them I find that the consumer must have paid about sixty cents a pound for butter, one dollar a gallon for kerosene oil, thirty-five cents a pound for sugar, and other things in proportion. It is a wonder that our fathers were able to live and bring up large families of children. Evidently they were living the "simple life."

The street to the water from Edward Gifford's was then a private way and led to the ferry landing which was near the cooper shop of Frederick P. Baker. This cooper shop was built about seventy years ago and was at one time the scene of great industry. One of the sights of my boyhood days was to watch the cooper as he fashioned his barrels, which seemed more wonderful in the various stages than most anything within my experience. I look back to my recollections of Mr. Baker with a great deal of pleasure. He was always one of the most cordial in greeting me when I came home on my vacations from the city, and I recall many a pleasant chat with him in those days when it meant so much to a boy to be noticed by an older man.

The charter for the ferry was granted to David Kelley, and the boats later on were run by "Uncle" Elihu Kelley, who lived on the opposite side of the river. The rates were two cents for a single passenger and twenty-five cents for horse and carriage, which were taken across the stream in a flat bottom boat. "He had a skiff for passengers and a scow for teams," said Mr. Wood, "and a conch shell was tied to a post at the landing, which was blown when the services of the ferryman were needed. The mischievous boys would

often blow the conch to get the old man out." Mr. Wing has this to say of Uncle Elihu:

"Although Uncle Elihu's accustomed place in the Friend's meeting, which he regularly attended though not a member, was upon the 'rising seats,' he was evidently averse to talking much of his religious views, for it is related of him that, when questioned upon that subject by a travelling preacher while the ferry boat was in mid-stream, the old man pretended to be very hard of hearing and replied as he poled the boat vigorously, 'Yes, about half way across;' and upon a repetition of the inquiry, he said, 'Yes, yes, about half way across, half way across,' and so evaded the question."

He was very much opposed to the building of a bridge, declaring that he could see no sense or reason in such a thing; but the bridge was built and the old ferryman's occupation was gone. The bridge was built in 1832, and as the old man lived until October, 1841, he had many chances to cross it if he so wished. Mr. Wing further says, "The several roads leading from the main highway to the river had been but private ways, but even the one leading to the ferry had a gate across the upper end, upon which Tom Lloyd, the schoolmaster, had painted the words, 'To the Ferry,' but the establishment of a bridge necessitated the laying out of a public way, and to this need the Bridge street of today doubtless owes its origin."

As I have said, the bridge was built in 1832, and the late Peleg P. Akin told me that he was the first to cross it, being carried in the arms of his nurse across a planking. Mr. Wing, in one of his Register articles, gives an interesting account of the old toll-house and also of the present building, which I copy in full, as probably no better account could be written.

"Relegated to a position in the back yard near the river's edge, the original toll-house connected with the Bass river lower bridge now serves as a general storehouse. Its successor, moved a little back from the site occupied by it previous to the time when by action of the state legislature the bridge was made free, is a more pretensions building, which furnished a residence for the toll-keeper. It formerly had an extension of the roof over the side walk. Upon this projecting roof was a large sign giving the rates of toll for all possible combinations of vehicles, passengers and quadrupeds. The first toll-keeper whom I remember was Micajah Baker, who also served in later years as telegraph operator. The toll-house was a favorite resort evenings for men and boys. On

three sides of the room were wooden benches which were generally filled, while Mr. Baker occupied a chair tipped back, in the part of the room farthest from the outer door. A stone water pitcher always stood upon the shelf close by, which was exceedingly popular, especially when the tobacco smoke was thicker than usual; Mr. Baker used to declare that boys walked all the way from Provincetown to drink out of that pitcher. The writer well remembers one evening when the pitcher seemed to be neglected more than usual; but the cause was apparent when it was learned that there was no water in it. After a time a schoolmate volunteered to fill it. He took the pitcher, was gone about the usual length of time, returned and set it in its accustomed place. The first one who sampled the contents, made a wry face, quite perceptible to the knowing ones, but said nothing and resumed his seat. The explosion came when the second person stepped forward, and then the fact developed that the pitcher had been filled with salt water from the river. The joke was greatly appreciated, but that boy wasn't asked for a long time to fill the pitcher again. Occasionally, during the long winter evenings, the shrewd boy trader having molasses candy and cornballs for sale came in, and trade in that line was generally lively for a time. As the hour for the coming of the evening mail drew near, the attendance in the room gradually diminished, and when word came of its actual arrival, there was a general rush for the postoffice. David Smith, a Mr. Cahoon and another person whose name I do not now recall served as toll keepers after Mr. Baker."

Of course the river has always entered largely in the life of the village, but even this has changed in the course of years. Bass, which were once plentiful in the river, have long since passed it by, and within my recollection one could catch quantities of bluefish with a hook and line from the banks at the mouth of the river. Clams, quahaugs and oysters were once to be had in return for a little labor; now even the clam is found in small numbers, while the other two are almost strangers. The "oldest inhabitant" can remember when the river was almost devoid of eel-grass that makes it now so shallow, while the salt marshes were not in evidence to a great extent, the shores being clear white sand.

On the street leading to the ferry lived Captain Benjamin Tripp, and his son, Joseph Tripp, lived in one half of the house or in the ell. Captain Tripp commanded the schooner "Polly" and was in the lumber business.

The street beginning at the residence of the late Peleg P. Akin, now owned by his daughter, Mrs. G. W. Tupper, and continuing down to what is known as the "magnesia factory street," was then merely a passage way and was called "Cat alley." On one side was Uncle Zeno's apple orchard, and below the Edward Gifford house were salt works as far as what is now called the "red house," and on the shore were two salt mills, one owned by Edward Gifford and the other by Prince Gifford, his brother.

The Lewis Crowell house came next. The "red house," also known as the "witch house," was built, says Mr. Wing, by Joseph Crandon, generally known as "Old Cran," and sold afterwards to Samuel Farris, great-grandfather of William R. Farris. Captain Isaiah Crowell bought the place in 1808 with a strip of land extending from the river to Main street, the northwesterly portion of which is now owned by the Owl club, the building now their headquarters having been erected in 1827.

An interesting story is told of the porch of the "red house." It seems that in 1812 the owner desired to build a porch as an addition to his house, and sent to New Brunswick for the lumber. When the vessel bringing the lumber reached Chatham it was pursued by a British privateer. The captain ran his vessel ashore and he and his crew escaped in boats. The privateersmen, seeing that the cargo was only lumber, sailed away, having first, however, set fire to the vessel. The captain and crew of the burning vessel, seeing the enemy disappear, returned to it, put out the fire, floated the craft and proceeded on the voyage, delivering the cargo in due time. Some of the timbers were charred, but were used and may be seen to this day if one is inquisitive; at least they were seen by the men who were working upon the house a few years ago. Lewis Crowell lived in this house until he died, and after him, his son, Captain Hatsel Crowell, who was lost at sea. Hatsel had three children; the oldest became a sailor and disappeared, no one ever knowing his fate; the other two grew up and both died of consumption. Since that time the house has had many occupants but at present is the summer residence of Charles D. Voorhis.

Mr. Wood says he well remembers when the Isaiah Crowell house was built, (1839) as he and another boy were sent to Dennis to inform the Friends that there would be a "raising" in the morning and a Friends meeting in the afternoon. It was Isaiah Crowell's grandchild who was the last person to be married in the meeting house. He was captain of a ship in early life, and in the

war of 1812 his vessel was captured off St. Johns, Newfoundland, by a British cruiser. He had made several successful voyages previously, which had brought him in a large amount of money, so that, for the days and the place, he was considered a wealthy man. He was for thirty-seven years director of the Yarmouth National bank, and for eighteen years its president. His son, Henry G. Crowell, lived at the old homestead for many years. He was a successful business man in Boston and held many positions of trust under both state and city governments.

Coming back now to the street that runs past the front of the Peleg P. Akin house to Main street, we find that the spot now occupied by the dwelling of Captain Joseph Allen was Uncle Zeno Kelley's apple orchard, and the space was filled with trees, which, as a lady who well remembers them said, were full of pink and white blossoms in the spring time, and she never passes the spot but she seems to see them and smell their fragrance, as she did in the days of long ago. As I have said before, these trees, or those that remain, though very old, still give forth fruit in their season.

Pointing out the house now occupied by C. F. Purrington, Mr. Wood said that when he was a boy it was owned and occupied by Robert Wing, a boat builder. His shop is now Mr. Purrington's woodshed. "The land was bought of David Kelley, senior, in 1810. The frame of the building was originally intended to be erected on the old ferry road in West Dennis." (D. W.) His barn then stood near Main street, nearly opposite the town pump, and was moved to its present location by Mr. Fearing, who owned the place later on. He was a large, stout man of rather genial disposition, I believe. He had a fine garden and grapery in which he took much pride. A man told me that when he was a boy, Uncle Robert hired him to take away a pile of stones from one end of his garden and place them at another spot, and when he had finished the work to the old man's satisfaction, he told him to take them back and place them where he found them; this was his way of helping a boy to earn a little spending money. The house remained in the Wing family for many years, and was at one time the home of Franklin Fearing, who married Maria Wing, a sister of Stephen and Daniel Wing. Mr. Fearing was the proprietor of the magnesia factory, of which I shall have more to say later on. He was a man of more than ordinary education for this section in those days; a man of great intelligence; a man of genial dis-

position, kind-hearted and a thorough gentleman. He served as a member of the school board for many years.

Opposite the Robert Wing house and next to the orchard was the pump and block shop of Prince Gifford, which was afterwards made over into a dwelling house in which Captain Jonathan Sears lived, and later on Bernard L. Baker, for many years the village postmaster. Prince Gifford was a very stern and austere Quaker with—as was not uncommon with the Friends in those days—but little sympathy for other religious beliefs than his own. It was this rigidity that was, in my opinion, the main reason why the Friends have gradually lost their footing in this country; it did not appeal to the young, and when the religious world became more liberal the Friends found it hard to give way. It is true that they too have grown more liberal, that the Friends do not insist upon the strict observances and penalties of years ago, but the change came too late. And yet after all, to me there are no sweeter memories than those of the old Friends and of their meetings. When Prince Gifford built his shop, he insisted that it should be built close to the line of the orchard and of the sidewalk, and so it was built, as may be seen today. The house next to the shop was built by Uncle Zeno, who lived there for awhile, but it afterwards became the property of Prince Gifford and his children still occupy it.

Next to this house was a little country store kept by Silas Baker and later still by his brother, Braddock Baker.

Next to the store and on the corner of Main street was a small house also built by Uncle Zeno. Afterwards it was purchased by the Methodists for a parsonage, although previously it was owned by David Wood, who was the village blacksmith and whose first shop was near the cellar house, but afterwards he used his barn for the purpose. Mr. Wing recalls his business advertisement, which read somewhat as follows:

“Diamonds of the finest water.
Horses shod on scientific principles
at the shop of David Wood.”

He moved to New Bedford and was for many years a letter carrier in that city. Previous to its removal, this house was, according to Mr. Wing, occupied by “Jim Hudson,” later by Timothy Akin, David K. Akin and his wife Rachel, Doctor Green, and Silas Baker and his wife Ruth H.

Silas Baker piloted the first steamboat that ever sailed into Boston. It was a sort of scow, with no deck, and wood was used for fuel. Coming from the westward and arriving off Bass river, Captain Baker was taken on board as pilot around the Cape. My own recollections of Silas Baker are not very clear, but I remember his wife, Aunt Ruth, who was the principal speaker at the Friends meeting for a great many years. She was a kindly old lady, and at New Years used to have a liberal supply of cornballs and other tempting things for the children who came to wish her a "happy new year." I can remember seeing her walking to Quaker meeting leaning on the arm of Uncle Silas; and I can remember her speaking in meeting and how I used to watch her as she deliberately untied her Quaker bonnet of drab, passed it to the one sitting next to her, and then rising and in a voice of remarkable clearness spoke the words that came to her mind. I remember that she very often had something to say to "my dear young friends." I recall them all now,—Aunt Betsey Akin, Aunt Rhoda Wing, Aunt Tamsen Gifford, and afterwards Aunt Lizzie Stetson,—as they sat upon the "high seats." To me there were never such beautiful women to look upon, excepting my own mother; they always gave me the impression that they indeed communed with God. We have all remarked the beautiful countenances of the Sisters of Charity that we have seen upon the streets; they may not have regular features, they may not possess the physical lines of beauty, but there is something in their faces that makes one think them beautiful; and that was the impression upon my young mind when looking at those older women of the Friends in their quaint but becoming attire. I could not tell you why it was so, but the impression has always remained in my memory.

To the outsider, the men of the Quaker meeting always appeared stern and sedate, but they were by no means free from the spirit of life and enjoyed their jokes and bits of humor as well as anyone. They were just, but sharp in business and generally got the best of a bargain. At the same time, they were full of kindness and hospitality and I think this world, bounded by the limits of South Yarmouth, was better, morally and socially, at that time than it will ever be again.

Before leaving the house of Silas Baker, later the property of Mrs. Sarah Bray, I wish to speak of Aunt Fanny Whelden, a relative of Aunt Ruth's who lived with her many years. Aunt Fanny was what many call a "shouting Methodist," and seemed to enjoy her religion in proportion to the noise she could make in ex-

pressing her feelings. Undoubtedly she was a very excitable woman by nature and found in this way an escapement valve for her pent up feelings. I have sometimes thought that living in a quiet Quaker family was too much for her and that after repressing her emotions for a whole week she let them flow forth at the regular Sunday night prayer meetings. I well remember her as an old woman, going to meeting in winter with her foot stove in one hand and a huge muff and cane or umbrella in the other. She sat in one of the side pews near the pulpit and was always present at prayer meetings, for in those days there were preaching services morning and afternoon and prayer meeting in the evening on the Sabbath. At these latter services Aunt Fanny was in her element and her "amen!" and "bless the Lord!" were interjected at all times. I am sorry to say that those of the younger generation saw much to smile at, and I suppose I was not any better than the other unregenerates, who did not understand that it was simply her way of expressing her joy and happiness. One of her favorite expressions was "Praise be to God!" and one evening while she was speaking some young people, unable to restrain their mirth, left the church, whereupon Aunt Fanny, pointing her finger at them, cried out, "There they go, straight to hell! Praise be to God!"

Going back to "Cat alley" and to the new house built by Isaiah Crowell, we find but three houses on the street leading to Main street, the first being that occupied by the Owl club, which was built in 1827 by Daniel Wing, senior, the father of the present Daniel Wing. The ell of the house has been raised since those days, and the present social hall of the Owl club was formerly a barn. Daniel Wing, senior, was born in East Sandwich in 1800. He was the youngest of ten children of whom four have lived in South Yarmouth, viz.: Rose, wife of Zeno Kelley, Robert, George and Daniel. Daniel came to South Yarmouth in 1823 or 24 and tended salt works. In later years he associated himself with Silas Baker under the firm name of Baker & Wing and was interested in several fishing vessels that fitted out from Bass river. They also carried on the business of general country store in the building between the Prince Gifford house and that of Silas Baker. He was a very popular man in his day and had many friends. He died in 1842.

Mr. Wing gives the following description of the country store spoken of above:

"They dealt in grain and must have had the usual difficulty in

getting back sundry bags loaned to customers, for a notice posted in this store by a young clerk, Joseph Dudley by name, ran as follows:

'No bags to lend; no bags to let;
You need not tease; you need not fret;
You need not twist; you need not wring;
For you'll get no bags from Baker & Wing.'

This clerk, who was quite a mechanical genius, devised a plan for keeping loafers from sitting on the dry goods counter, which was at once original, unique and decidedly effective. Certain needles connected with levers were concealed below the field of action, and the apparatus could be set in motion by a person sitting at a desk near the front window."

Opposite the Daniel Wing house is one now occupied by Frank L. Baker. When Mr. Wood was a boy, Doctor Green, one of the two physicians of the place, lived there, and I am of the impression that he built it. He used to go about the country on horse back, his medicines in his saddle bags, and was a most popular physician and man, I should imagine from what I have been able to learn. The house afterwards came into the possession of Loren Baker and later still into the hands of his son, A. H. Baker, a man of whom those who knew him will always have the kindest of memories.

Between this house and that of David K. Akin, Mr. Wood told me, used to stand the little schoolhouse maintained by the Friends, although previously it stood on the land now occupied by Captain Whittemore (formerly Elisha Taylor's). Among the teachers were H. P. Akin, Rebecca Akin, Mary Davis, Sylvia G. Wing and Elizabeth Sears. I remember the little building when it stood on the road leading to the magnesia factory. It was afterwards taken by Peleg P. Akin and used in the making of additions to his house. I do not know whether there are any photographs of the little building in existence, but it was very small with an entry on the front, and I should imagine could not contain more than twenty-five pupils at the most.

On the corner of the street, facing Pleasant street which runs now to the lower village but at that time only as far as the house of Orlando Baker, stood and still stands the residence of the late David K. Akin, (now the property of Captain Joseph M. Lewis) a staunch old Quaker and a man for those days of wealth and

importance. He was president of the Yarmouth National bank for many years and one who commanded the respect and trust of the community. As his residence was next to that of my father's, I have most vivid recollections of him as a kindly, genial gentleman, who was always a warm friend of all the members of my father's family. I have previously spoken of the little jewelry store that he kept on the street leading to the cellar house, which building is now standing on Bridge street. I have most interesting recollections of a pear tree that stood in his garden, near to the line of my father's fence, which, when I was a boy, was loaded down with tempting fruit, which he liberally gave to me from time to time.

His son, Peleg P. Akin, lived in the Zeno Kelley house on the road leading to the ferry, where he died in January, 1903. The present generation is familiar with his life and it is not necessary for me to insert any eulogies of him in this place. He was a man of a naturally retiring disposition, never coveting honors, and yet never shirking the duties of public trusts thrust upon him. The savings bank of the place owes much to his fidelity and because of the fact that the depositors had the utmost confidence in his word. It was not his money that made people speak well of Peleg P. Akin; it was the worth of the man and the man himself.

Opposite the house of David K. Akin was and is an open field, and at the lower end, near the river, was a public "pound" in which were put stray cattle, but that disappeared years ago, as there were no cattle to put in it, but in those days there were large droves of cows that were driven to different places for pasturage; one place in particular I remember being "old field," formerly called "Kelley's Neck," in West Dennis. Every morning a boy collected the cows from different parts of the village and drove them over to that place and every night went for them, always finding the cows patiently waiting at the gate to be driven home.

Before leaving the David K. Akin house I would speak of three negroes who were at one time brought from the South by this old Friend and who for years lived in South Yarmouth. Eli and Noah Morgan and their cousin, Dempsey Ragsdale, were slaves, whom their master wished to set free. (This was of course before the war.) David Akin brought them North and took charge of the two Morgan boys, who were at that time 16 or 18 years of age, while David Kelley took Dempsey, who was nearly white. They all

attended school in the village, made rapid progress in their studies, and at length started out to make their own ways in the world. Dempsey went to sea and from what I can learn, was soon lost to view; Eli became master of a vessel, and Noah went into business in New Bedford, and both became men who were greatly respected wherever they were known. Previous to this, David K. Akin had taken into his house a young colored girl named Lizzie Hill, who was a great favorite with everyone who knew her. She grew up with the other young people and in later life married and went as a missionary to Africa, where she died.

The next house to David K. Akin's was that of Elisha Jenkins. This house was probably built by Cyrenus Kelley, at least it was of him that my father bought it. It is with some hesitation that I write of my father, as my account might be tinged and biased by the deep affection I have for his memory, but in another place I shall take the liberty of inserting one of Mr. Daniel Wing's letters to *The Register*, that, coming from one outside the family, may be taken for an honest opinion of my father as a man and as a citizen. He was born in West Barnstable, and in his early life worked at his trade in the South, but eventually drifted to South Yarmouth, where he set up the business of shoemaking. He married Mary G. Crowell of West Yarmouth; her two sisters, Sophie and Harriet, married South Yarmouth men, and the three houses or homes were on the same street. In his early days my father was considered an excellent singer; he was always very fond of music, and it is from him that I get my taste for the same art. Both my father and mother were exceedingly fond of reading, which taste was handed down to all of the children.

I have only one story to tell of my father, which I heard from my mother:

One winter's day a man came home with him to stop all night. I do not recall his name, but I think he was one of the many who had worked for my father. Anyway, he was going out to join the Mormons and evidently hoped to secure a convert. He and my father sat up all night discussing and arguing religious questions, while at the same time, the guest was trying to convince his host of the truth of the new doctrine and urging him to leave all, go with him and become a Latter-Day Saint. "And that," said my mother, "is as near as we came to becoming Mormons." Not very near, for I fancy that my father did not get the worst of the argument.

Nearly opposite my father's house was that of Captain Emery

Sears, according to Mr. Wood, which later on became the property of Zeno Baker. Mr. Wood could tell me no particulars of Captain Sears, but I recall Zeno Baker very well. He was a man of excellent education and in winter, when he did not go to sea, he taught school. He taught in the present building, in the old red school-house, in Dennis and other places, and was, for those days, an excellent teacher of the commoner branches. He was also a superior penman and the pages of the secretary's records when he was on the school board are beautifully written.

I remember two stories he used to tell of his experiences as a teacher; one was of a note he received from the parent of one of the pupils, which read:

"ples smiss Mary to recis."

The other was of a boy who had two brothers, Coley and Luke. One day they were all absent, and the next day upon being questioned as to the reason, the boy replied, "Coley, Luke and I, sir, we stayed home from school, sir, 'cause Sally had a sore toe, sir." But why Sally's infirmity should prevent the boys from attending to business I never learned.

It was from a tree in the corner of the lot next to Zeno Baker's that all the so-called "silver leafs" came. I think the original was brought from Maine. We acknowledge they are often a nuisance, but at the same time what would the village have been without them? They are handsome trees, they grow rapidly, they have done much to beautify our streets; we wanted just such a tree, but we did not want so much of them.

Next to Zeno Baker's was the house of George Wing, a brother of Robert and Daniel Wing, senior, now the property of Mrs. Chase. Its appearance then was much like that of its neighbors. At one time it was occupied by Joseph Howland, who came from New Bedford, believing that one could find peace and an absence of temptation in a village of Quakers.

Then came the house of James Davis, recently moved nearer the river and changed beyond recognition of its former self. He had an adopted daughter, Amelia B. Russell; a son, Russell Davis, and a son, William P. Davis, for many years cashier of the First National bank of Yarmouth. Russell Davis was one of those eccentric people who are found in every country village. He was known as "Lord Russ," and stories told of his eccentricities would fill a book. In appearance he was short and thick set, with a merry, laughing face and the rolling gait of a sailor. He was an old bachelor, but

report said that he had had his romance like most others. After the death of his father he built himself a house in the fields near the river, half way between the upper and lower villages. The living room was decorated or papered with pictures cut from magazines and illustrated papers, which were not inartistically arranged or grouped. In one corner of the room was his berth or bunk, similar to those on board ship, for although he had never been to sea, he delighted in everything pertaining to it, and in his leisure hours fashioned some of the most beautiful of miniature ships. He was a great reader; one might say of him that he devoured books, often sitting up all night to finish a story that particularly pleased him. One of his peculiarities was to imagine himself a poet, and as the result, he wrote so called poems without number. Unfortunately, he had no idea of rhyme or rhythm, which at times resulted in making his effusions rather amusing reading. He was always ready to read them at the meetings of the "Lyceum" and they were published in the local papers from time to time, which gratified his pride and really hurt no one.

Across the road from the James Davis house was that of Orlando Baker, which Mr. Wing considers as one of the oldest in the place, 116 years at date of writing. According to Mr. Wing, it was built by Michael Crowell, and conveyed to Benoni Baker and his uncle, Obed Baker, in 1799, the former of whom lived there when he was first married. Michael Crowell was in active business in 1792. He was an uncle of Lewis Crowell and lived in a hollow between Captain Zeno Baker's and the river. He also owned the tract between Main street and the river and between the town landing and a line not far from the old magnesia street. Lewis Crowell lived there before he moved to the "red house." Orlando Baker's garden came across the present street leading to the lower village, for Pleasant street ended at his garden and the street leading to the magnesia factory. His farm sheds were down that street on the other side of his garden. He was one of the original members and a pillar of the Methodist church; a man who lived, to the best of his ability, upright before God and man; more than that none of us can do.

Between the two houses of Orlando Baker and Elisha Jenkins, who by the way, married sisters, was an open piece of land just wide enough for a building and Elisha Taylor of West Yarmouth, who also married a sister, purchased the same and built the house now owned by Captain James L. Whittemore. Squire Taylor, as he was called, never did any manual labor in his life; his father

left him a little money and by a life of almost penurious saving he accumulated a fair fortune, the income of which supported him and his wife. For many years he was a victim of the "shaking palsy," which affected both his limbs and his speech, so that it was almost impossible for a stranger to understand a word he said. In his younger days he was considered a man of sound judgment and just. He served the town as selectman for twenty-six years, which showed that his townspeople appreciated his worth, or else showed that in those days there was no great desire for office, and considering that there was no money in it and very little glory, it is not to be wondered at that men were kept in office for a quarter of a century. A position of that kind in these days carries with it precious little glory, but the financial reward is by no means small in proportion to the amount of work it entails.

Leading from the Orlando Baker house was a road to the river, and at the foot of it was the magnesia factory, but not in Mr. Wood's boyhood days, for it was not built until 1850. The first factory was burned two years later and then the second structure was erected by its owner, Franklin Fearing. After his death the Wing brothers carried on the business for a time, but the rapid diminishing of the salt works made it impractical to continue it and the building was taken down.

From this point until we come to the place where now stands the summer residence of Freeman C. Goodeno, there were no dwellings, excepting upon the main street. All the land was covered with salt works, which business, as far as South Yarmouth is concerned, must have begun about 1811, according to estimates made by Mr. Wing, although the making of salt by solar evaporation dates back to 1776, and in 1802, according to the reports of the Massachusetts Historical society, over forty thousand bushels of salt were thus made on Cape Cod, several years before South Yarmouth had built its first vat. In 1837, 365,000 bushels of salt were manufactured in the town of Yarmouth valued at \$110,000, so that it can be easily seen that when the industry got fairly on its feet it increased rapidly and was a financial success.

From the house of Selim Baker (now Osborne White's) to the house of Hatsel Crosby, there were no houses, but a large area of salt works extended to the river, not to mention many other "stretches" of works farther down, even to the lower village and on the other side of Main street clear to the woods. It was—or rather would be today—a novel sight: those long lines of covered vats containing salt water in various stages of evaporation, while

on the shores were at one time eight mills, whirling and pumping water from the river.

It is a great pity that a few of the salt works and at least one mill could not have been preserved. Few have any idea of the picturesqueness of the river at that time; artists were not long in finding it out and for awhile they were often seen in this region. Then came the era for improving things, and, as is generally the case, the improvements have cost far more than could ever be realized at the time. The actual value of an old mill as a marketable piece of property was not great, but its value in attracting people to the village and in making it something different from other villages was untold. The salt works were a never-failing source of pleasure to the boys; they furnished "slides," to the detriment of one's clothes; they furnished fascinating places to play robbers and pirates; the "coolers" in which salt was handled made splendid canoes, and there were almost a thousand and one entertainments that the salt works and the surroundings furnished.

Having made our tour of the side streets of the village, we come back to the corner of Main and Bridge streets. On the Long pond road, the left hand side going to Yarmouth, was the house of Amos Farris, but on the right hand side there was nothing but pine woods down to the house of David Chubb; then we came to the house of James Covill (later Isaiah), where Sidney Chapman now lives.

Next to it was Reuben Farris's house. He was the miller. It is a low one story house, with a kitchen that goes the whole length of it, and other smaller rooms on the same floor. It was thought in those days that the kitchen was the principal and most important part of the house, and in some respects it is still. Uncle Reuben was a Universalist, and naturally in a community of Friends and Methodists he was not religiously at home, so when the Universalist church was built in South Dennis he attended services there. The next tenant of the house was his son Samuel, who also succeeded him as miller, and later on his grandson, William R., lived there for a number of years.

The next house, that of Mrs. R. D. Farris, was not built until 1856, and the store not until 1866. R. D. Farris was, in the earlier days, a successful merchant. He learned the trade of harness maker of Benjamin Hallett in Yarmouth, the old shop now being next to A. Alden Knowles's store, I believe, and used by Mr. Knowles as a carriage house or barn. His first store or shop was a little building now used by Mrs. Phoebe Farris as a woodhouse.

He gradually added tinware, stoves, etc., and finally groceries. He was naturally a trader, being shrewd and watchful to keep up with the various changes. His first wife was Mercy Easton, and, as he has often told, they went to housekeeping in one room of his father's house. Later on he built the Mrs. Phoebe Farris house and later still the one next to the store.

At the head of Bridge street on Main, was a house occupied by Richard Kelley and later by the Widow Hovey, who kept a boarding house, and later still by William Crocker, Loren Baker and then by Braddock Baker, whose heirs owned it until it was bought by Abiel Howard, torn down and the present house erected. Braddock Baker kept the general store previously run by Baker & Wing. He was a short, heavy man, with stooping shoulders which impressed him firmly in my boyhood mind. He was one of the original members of the Methodist church, and undoubtedly did much to put it on its feet when it was young and struggling. I can remember that both he and his wife were speakers at the prayer meetings, and I also remember that when I was a boy, on being sent to his store in the morning and not finding him in, I would go to his house and generally find him at family prayers. My errand or presence never shortened the service, and I had to wait until the last verse had been read and the last "amen" said. He had several children, among them Darius Baker, judge of the Supreme court of Rhode Island, who at one time was my school teacher. One little thing I remember in connection with the Judge was that one day I took up a volume of Shakespeare which he had been reading, and being too young to know anything of the merits of the great bard, although a book of any kind possessed a fascination for me, I asked if it was "good." He turned to me and said very impressively, "We do not speak of Shakespeare as 'good'; it is very interesting." That was a lesson for me, and I never forgot it.

In the late Mrs. Delyra Wood's house lived William Farris, father of Allen Farris, who lived farther down the street. His wife, Aunt Liddy, was a large woman, a good, motherly soul, who was one of the greatest talkers I have ever known. She would come over to my mother's house as far as the door, in too much of a hurry to come in, and there she would stand and talk for half or three-quarters of an hour. Her daughter, also named Liddy, and wife of Zeno Baker, was one of the smartest women to work and one of the kindest of neighbors. I shall never forget Aunt Liddy Baker, for she spanked me for stealing her pears, and strange to say, my

mother whipped me for the same offense when I got home!

The present Methodist church is but little over sixty years old, so that we can hardly speak of it as "old." It was not standing when Mr. Wood was a boy, and was built after I was born, so we will simply say it is growing old.

But in the yard or enclosure leading to the present schoolhouse there was a building, "the little red schoolhouse," the old district schoolhouse, which now stands back of the bank and is used as a storehouse. Here Mr. Wood went to school; here Mr. Wing went to school, to Zeno Baker as teacher. Mr. Wood remembers David Kelley as his teacher at one time, and Sophia Crocker of West Barnstable. The curriculum was not extended, but the "three Rs" were well taught and the ground work well laid for a higher education if the pupil was ambitious to go farther than the district school could take him. Spelling schools and spelling contests were popular in those days, and the old schoolhouse witnessed many an exciting time in such diversions.

The present schoolhouse, built in 1855, ended the usefulness of the old building, which was removed to another location and used for more ignoble purposes. The marks of the seats, the depressions in the floor, the names written on the plastering, are still there. The fiftieth anniversary of the opening of the present schoolhouse took place in June, 1905, and was participated in by all the pupils of the public schools of the town.

The house of Zenas Wood, in which his son, Orlando Wood, lived during the last years of his life, stood next to the schoolhouse grounds, and was built by Moses Burgess. He came from West Barnstable, worked at his trade, that of a carpenter, and built for himself this house. Later, he moved back to his old home. Orlando F. Wood was a notable example of a young old-man. He was born in the village in 1825 in a house that stood upon the spot now occupied by the paint shop of Manton H. Crowell. As a boy he attended school in the little old red schoolhouse which stood on the present school grounds, at the little Friends' schoolhouse which stood on land of the late David K. Akin, between his house and that now occupied by Frank L. Baker, and at the "academy." He went to sea when a boy, the principal incident of which was that he fell from aloft and narrowly escaped death. He worked in the "rope-walk" and later learned the tailor's trade in South Yarmouth, which trade he practised in New Bedford and Boston, eventually returning to his native village, where he lived until his death in 1911, at the age of 86.

Next to the Zenas Wood house stood the shoe shop of Elisha Jenkins, my father, and it is to Mr. Wing that I am indebted for the following, which was published in the Yarmouth Register:

"The shoe store now owned and occupied by Mr. E. T. Baker and situated on Main street, is an enlargement of the long, low building where, some years ago, shoes were both made and sold. At one time a number of young shoemakers from Lynn were employed there. They were full of fun and frolic, and in those days of practical jokes, if a neighbor's horse was found in the morning, gaily striped with bright colors, or if some sailor man was unable to open any of his outwardly swinging doors because of a chain cable passed entirely around his house and attached to an anchor set deep in the lot on the opposite side of the street, the mischief was quite likely to be charged to the shoe-shop employes.

"So far back, however, as the memory of the writer reaches, Elisha Jenkins was the proprietor and sole occupant. A man of more than ordinary intellectual power, a deep thinker, possessed of a wonderful memory, a reader of good books, a lover of history, intensely patriotic, fond of young people, instructive in conversation, the writer will always feel indebted to him for the pleasure of many an hour spent in his company. All through the Civil war, when news of more than ordinary interest was expected, the arrival of the evening mail would almost invariably find an attractive audience assembled at his shop, listening with breathless interest as some one read aloud the latest news from the seat of war.

"I can see now the rack of lasts at one end of the room, with a wooden bench in front of it; cases of boots (long-legged ones) standing here and there; the cobbler's bench of the proprietor in the southwest corner, with its depressed seat and its square compartments for wooden pegs, iron nails, shoemaker's wax, bundles of bristles, and its usual assortment of awls, hammers, etc., while the drawer beneath contained pieces of leather and supplies of sundry sorts.

"The Thanksgiving proclamation of Governor George N. Briggs with 'God save the Commonwealth of Massachusetts' in bold type at the bottom, hung on the south wall for years and seemed to become one of the fixtures of the place. The wooden post in the centre of the room, close by the wood burning stove, was used when a customer came in and ordered a new pair of boots or shoes to be made expressly for him. With his heel against the post,

the length of the foot was marked on the floor with a knife. Close by was the tub of water in which the pieces of leather were soaked to make them pliable. The north room contained a stock of boots, shoes and rubbers, mostly arranged upon shelves on two of the side walls. Congress boots were unknown to the earlier times, and as a boy, the writer can remember with what pleasure he went there each autumn to be fitted to a pair of long-legged boots, having square patches of red morocco at the top in front, and with a stout strap on either side of each. No costlier pair since has ever quite equalled in splendor those specimens of long ago. Such were some of the attractions for a boy; the features which in later years made deepest impressions upon the memory were the conversations with the genial proprietor."

Ebenezer Hallett's house and tannery stood on the spot where now stands the house of Reuben K. Farris. It was a low, double house, and back of it was a tannery. Later on, Leonard Underwood, a Friend, purchased it and the tannery was discontinued. He was a carpenter and lived there but a few years, moving to Fall River. When the house was torn down Allen Farris built the large double house still standing.

There was nothing in the way of buildings until we came to "Mill lane." The Isaiah Homer house had not at that time been moved from Yarmouth, but there were two houses on the northeasterly side of the lane. One of these was occupied by Samuel Eaton Kelley, and was afterwards moved to the corner of Main street, and is now the home of Captain Alonzo Kelley; the other is still standing and was occupied by James Covill and others.

Isaiah Homer moved from Yarmouth and was one of our most respected of citizens. He had a little shoe shop in one corner of his yard on Main street and there he worked for years. He was a man who, even in his old age, showed remarkable powers of physical endurance and I have often watched him with admiration as he walked off as smartly and lightly as would a much younger man; there was no sign of physical decrepitude. He was born on the North side in an old house that was undoubtedly the first church built in Yarmouth, that is, the framework was the same if nothing else; it is known now as the "Hannah Crowell house" and is one of the historical relics on the north side of the town. The family possesses many old relics of the Homer family, but none of them more curious than a bill of sale of a negro, dated Feb. 20, 1776. In it F. W. Homer acknowledges receiving from his father, Benjamin Homer, forty pounds for two-thirds of a negro named

"Forten." According to the late Charles F. Swift, "Forten" lived to see his race declared free.

On the opposite side of Mill lane, on the corner, lived Josiah Baker, James Lewis, "Uncle Levi" and others. Of these and their families I have nothing to say.

The old grist mill that stood at the head of the lane was run in Mr. Wood's early days by Reuben Farris and in my early days by Samuel Farris, his son, and by Romegio Lewis. It was originally on the north side of the Cape and was moved to its present location in 1782. The people of South Yarmouth made a great mistake when they allowed it to be sold and taken from the village. It is now in West Yarmouth on the land of the late Mr. Abell and attracts much attention from visitors from all parts of the country. A similar mill stands in the lower village.

Coming to the house now occupied by Ernest P. Baker, Mr. Wood said, "In my day old Cato, a negro, had a small house on that lot, in which he lived with his daughter. His wife was a full-blooded Indian, and at one time they had a wigwam on the land which was the garden of David K. Akin, and next to the house of Elisha Jenkins." Alden, in his "Memorabilia of Yarmouth," speaks of old Cato as living in a wigwam there in 1797, and he also says that in 1779 there was a small cluster of wigwams about a mile from the mouth of Bass river. According to Mr. Wing, Cato was living in 1831.

Daniel Weaver's house (now Mrs. Matilda Smith's), was then standing. He was a weaver by name and by trade, and wove carpets, probably the once favorite rag carpet. I thought it was he, but have since been corrected, who invented a perpetual motion machine, which he exhibited to a select company in the academy. The company assembled, the machine was produced, but somehow it refused to work; the exhibition was a failure and the machine went the way of thousands of similar inventions.

I do not know how old the Heman Crowell house is, which when Mr. Wing was a boy was occupied by Minerva Crowell, who had three children; Laban Baker owned the other half of the house.

The Frank Homer house was occupied by John Cannon and by Venny Crowell, grandfather of the late Mrs. Henry Taylor. It is related that it was here that his son, Venny Crowell, met his wife. She was passing through the village and stopped to get a glass of water; the son saw her, and afterwards married her. Both father and son were tall, spare men of rugged frames and great endurance. Once upon a time, at a revival meeting, one of the

women exhorters and singers asked Uncle Venny if he did not like music? He was honest, and replied that he liked singing but he hated to hear it murdered!

In the present house of Mrs. Albert White, although now much changed of course, lived Dr. Apollos Pratt, an eccentric old country practitioner. The stories told of the old man are without number, many of them very amusing. He had two daughters; one became the wife of Captain Seleck H. Matthews, and the other the wife of Freeman Matthews. The doctor was given to telling wonderful yarns; among others, he told of a patient of his who had been given up as incurable, but he disemboweled him, killed a sheep and substituted the intestines, and the man got well. On being asked how it seemed to affect the man afterwards, he said, in no way particularly, except that "he had a h—l of a hankering for grass!" One evening while talking with one of his familiars, they agreed to see who could tell the biggest lie. The other man said he could see the man in the moon. "Well," said the doctor, as he gazed earnestly at the sky, "I can see him wink;" which certainly required the better eyesight. Mr. Wood said he had frequently seen the old man sitting in a rocking chair by the window, the floor being worn in ridges where he had rocked back and forth, year after year. He died in 1860, aged 83 years.

On a short street in the vicinity of the present Standish hall was a little house belonging to Ormond Easton, which was later moved to the river opposite the magnesia factory, and was known as the "Noah Morgan house."

There was no house from Dr. Pratt's to that of Barnabas Sears, the space being filled with salt works. The Isaiah Crocker house was not built then nor was that of David Sears.

The Barnabas Sears house, according to Mr. Wing, originally stood in a field near James pond and was built by Ebenezer Baker. It was moved to its present location in 1753 by John Kelley, senior. This is the second oldest house in the village; its curved rafters, low eaves and ancient appearance make it an object of great interest to visitors. Barnabas Sears had five sons: Seth, who died while a young man, John, Stephen, Barnabas and David, all of whom lived near the old homestead, and for years his daughter, Elizabeth Stetson, lived in the house. Aunt Lizzie, as she was called, was the last of the Quaker preachers of the South Yarmouth meeting, and to hear her prayers brought me as near the throne of God as I ever expect to be in this world. Her words were earnest and simple, but her very earnestness, and her

firm belief that her words were heard by the Father, impressed me greatly. She was a large woman, and tall, almost masculine in many ways, and when she was a girl it is said that she was equal to any man in riding a horse or managing one. Of her the following story is told:

When she was a young woman, she was riding through the woods one day when she came upon a minister leading his horse from the blacksmith's. "Why don't thee ride thy horse instead of leading him?" she asked. "Because," said the minister, "he won't allow me to put the bridle over his head, and he bites and kicks so I am afraid of him." "Give it to me," she said, with a look of contempt at his ignorance, and jumping from her horse she whipped off her apron and flinging it over the horse's head deftly adjusted the bridle. "There, friend, a little brains used intelligently may be useful in other ways than in writing sermons," she said. "True," replied the minister, "but unfortunately, I do not wear aprons."

Although the houses of the sons of Barnabas Sears were not in existence seventy-five years ago, they were men who were looked up to in the community. Barnabas, Jr., and John K. were carpenters and builders, and at one time they had a steam sawmill back of their house near the woods, called the "Pawkunnawkut mill." Stephen was for many years a teacher, and served the town as selectman and as school committee. David, "Uncle David" as most of us called him, was one of the most genial souls among us and needs no words of introduction to those for whom these pages are written.

The next house from Barnabas Sears, senior, was that now occupied by Charles I. Gill, who purchased it from the estate of Reuben J. Baker. Mr Baker, familiarly known as "Blind Reuben" because of his loss of eyesight when a boy, was the son of Captain Reuben Baker, whose wife, Louisa, afterwards married William Gray. In many respects he was a remarkable man, for in spite of his blindness he carried on a successful grocery business for years.

Next to this house was that of Captain Freeman Baker. Mr. Wing says that opposite this house, in the middle of the main road, was a house belonging to the Widow Marchant, the travelled roadway passing on either side.

The Baptist church was then standing, but it bore no resemblance to the church of today. It stood with its eaves to the street and had no belfry or steeple. It bore no evidence of paint

without and was very plain within, as plain as the Friends meeting house. Aunt Lizzie Stetson named it "The Lord's barn." Mr. Wing has this to say of it:

"At times there was no regular service there, but the young people of the village nearby could count with a certainty upon the annual temperance meeting as long as Barnabas Sears, senior, was living, for his interest in the temperance cause was deep and abiding, as indeed it was in the religious society of which he was a devoted member. Either side of each aisle was a row of old-fashioned pews with high backs. The pulpit was a long, box-like affair, some two and a half or three feet above the floor level, with steps leading up to it on its righthand corner. A door at the head of the steps kept out those not eligible to that enclosure, and a seat along the front of the pulpit was known as the "deacon's seat." The pews at the lefthand side of the pulpit faced the front of the building, while those in the opposite corner faced the pulpit. A lot of lighted tallow candles placed in different parts of the room did their best to overcome the natural darkness of the place, and when with blackened wicks hanging to one side they seemed ready to give up the task, the ever-watchful Father Sears, even then an old man, would go around with a candle snuffer and carefully remove the charred portions of the wicks and so brighten up the place until his services in that line were again needed.

"Father Sears was a thoughtful, earnest man, highly respected by both old and young, and although his quaint language would provoke a smile, it was not a token of disrespect, but often of pleasure, caused by the reviving of features that all realized were rapidly passing away. On one occasion, when some of the smaller portion of the audience became somewhat restless and began to leave the room, Mr. Sears stopped the exercises and in his usually dignified manner said, "All those who want for to go out will go out, and all those who want for to stay in will stay in." I think there was no more passing out until the close of the meeting, and the quaint language and impressive manner remain in my memory as a pleasing feature of the occasion.

"The Baptist church in South Yarmouth was organized in 1824. The structure itself dates back to the year 1826, when it was built at a cost of \$600, the whole amount being paid by Rev. Simeon Crowell and Captain Freeman Baker, the former being the first pastor there."

In 1860 extensive alterations were made in it, and in 1891 it was again remodeled and put in its present shape. Mr Wood spoke of

the church as "Uncle Sim's church," and says that he attended Sunday school there and that Lurania Lewis was his teacher.

He also attended Sunday school at the old Methodist meeting house which stood farther up the road towards West Yarmouth, and of which the only present reminder is the cemetery. This church, which Mr. Wood calls "Uncle Siley's church," was built by Silas Baker, senior, who came from Harwich. He died in 1844, aged 78 years. In a measure, Uncle Siley ran the church to suit himself during his life, as, having built it, he thought he had the right to do. The Rev. Mr. Winchester was the preacher and Elisha Parker was Mr. Wood's Sunday school teacher. The worshippers who came from any distance brought their luncheons and made it an all-day duty. On one occasion Mr. Wood had his lunch stolen from the pew, which awful crime he remembered all his life, for he had to go hungry. The choir was in the long gallery at the back of the church, and a big bass viol was the accompaniment for the singers.

There were two little schoolhouses a little way below or beyond the church; one of them near the residence of Jerry Eldridge, the other I cannot place, but they were not more than a hundred yards apart.

Returning up Main street on the opposite side, Mr. Wood said there were no houses until we get to that of Mrs. Cyrus White, formerly occupied by her father, Captain Barnabas Eldridge, who died in 1846, aged 46 years, and then a long strip of field land until we came to the little old house that was always known as "the old maids'." The occupants of the house were known as "the three old maids" although two of them had been married. Robert Homer married one of them after a courtship of forty years, and it is said that he remarked that he wished he had courted forty years longer. These old ladies had very amusing ways and were the victims of many practical jokes at the hands of ungodly boys. On one occasion they were routed out of bed in the middle of the night by some young men who asked if they had seen a red and white cow pass that way. They had not, and the young men were advised to go over to "Brother Freeman's and ask him." The young men retired, the door was shut and the old ladies presumably had returned to their beds, when again came loud rappings at the door; another procession from the bedrooms, and there stood the same young men, who said that they thought they would come back and tell them that "Brother Freeman" had not seen the cow! I have thought it a great pity that those old ladies could not

have sought comfort in a few swear words. When the last of this trio died, the contents of the house were sold at auction and among other things an old bureau, in the lining of which the purchaser found a \$100 check which proved to be good and was collected.

The present building of Mrs. Sturgess Crowell was then standing, occupied by Captain Elisha Baker, as was the house occupied by Elisha T. Baker. Of the latter, Mr. Wood said that he remembered that Solomon Crowell had a little dry goods store in one of the front rooms; later it became the property of Mrs. Baker's father, Captain Frederick White.

Then we come to the old house known as "Major Dimmick's," formerly owned by Major D. Baker, "Major" being his name and not his title as one might infer. Old Uncle Amos Baker lived there, but what relation he was to Major I do not know.

The house of Peter Goodnow was not standing, but his father had a house by the river exactly upon the spot where is now the summer residence of his grandson, Freeman C. Goodnow.

The Hatsel Crosby house was built with the front door on the side, the carpenter, Job Otis of New Bedford, who drew the plans, having the idea that Main street ran north and south ordered the front door on the south side, supposing that it really would be facing Main street and upon the front side of the house. It was built by Uncle Russell Davis, who lived there with his wife Phoebe. He was a brother of James Davis, and a Quaker preacher. Hatsel Crosby came from Brewster and went into the salt making business. He married several times and had a large family of children, none of whom, however, live in South Yarmouth. He died in 1896, aged 89 years.

From this point to the house of Selim Baker the section was given up to salt works, and all of the houses on this side of the street are comparatively new. Selim Baker's house was built some years before the salt works were taken down. He was a carpenter by trade, a man prominent in church affairs and much respected. His daughter, Mrs. Osborne White, lives in the house, which has been greatly changed.

The Academy came next; it sat well back from the street. It had a belfry and a bell—the only school building in South Yarmouth that ever did—and was quite an imposing looking structure. It was built in 1844 and owned by the citizens of the place, and was used as a private school, the idea of its promoters being to furnish better educational facilities for their children than could be found at the district school. That its reputation during its

short career was high was shown by the fact that a large number of pupils came from away. It ceased to exist as a school when the present public schoolhouse was opened in 1855, and was converted into a dwelling house in 1862, after having been moved close to the street, by the father of the present Zenas P. Howes. Mr. Alonzo Tripp was the first teacher, and Mr. Adams the last.

The house formerly belonging to Mrs. Elisha Parker and now to the heirs of Benjamin Homer, was built by William P. Davis, but he did not live in it many years for he accepted a position in the Yarmouth National bank and was cashier of that institution from 1875 to 1895. He also was town treasurer for over fifty years. Elisha Parker, who bought the house of him, was then living in the lower village. He was at one time in the shoe business, and later during the Civil war was very successful in the wool business.

The next house was that of Aunt Mima Wood, which stood near the spot where now stands the house formerly occupied by Dr. E. M. Parker. She was the widow of Tilson Wood, and her son David used to wheel her to Friends meeting in a wheelbarrow; she died in 1841. Frank Wood built the present house. He was a stone mason, and did the stone work on the abutments of the Bass river bridge, and split the stone for the foundations of his own house from boulders on Town Hills. He died in 1853, aged 56.

We now come to the place from which we started, the corner of Main and Bridge street. The house on the corner was built in 1831 by Abiel Akin for his son Joseph, who was a brother of David K., and like him interested in salt making. Joseph Akin had three children, Catherine, Frederick and Charles, the last of whom only is living. Catherine Akin was a remarkable woman in many respects and especially in the ambition she possessed and in the power of will that enabled her to fit herself for a position in the world which she occupied. When hardly more than a girl she began to teach in the little district school in Georgetown, studying nights to keep ahead of her classes. Later she was the principal of a boarding school which became famous as "Miss Akin's school" in Stamford, Conn. Throughout her life her friends remained loyal to her and her pupils loved her and became her friends. She was always very fond of her native village, and it is in the old Quaker cemetery, within sight of the river she loved, and where the ever murmuring pines sing a requiem, that she sleeps.

QUAINT STORIES.

One old Quaker forbade his son to go upon the ice, but in coming from school they passed the pond, and his companion, venturing upon the ice, fell through and would have been drowned but for the aid of the boy who had been forbidden to go. He did not dare to tell his father about it for fear of the consequences, but the old gentleman heard of it, and while commending his son for saving his companion's life he thrashed him soundly for disobedience.

The old Quakers were averse to worldly music; to them it was one of the snares of the evil one. It is related that one of them beat his son soundly for playing upon a jews-harp, and when some of the apprentices in a neighboring shoe shop got possession of a fife and drum he closed all the windows and doors to keep out the sinful sounds.

Another good old Quaker lady was so worked up over the singing of hymns at the Methodist church, which she could hear from her house, that she declared she "had rather hear it thunder."

Two young men who did not possess as much of the Quaker sanctity as they should, considering their bringing up, but who did possess a deal of worldly desires, shut themselves up in an old salthouse and while one played on an old flute the other danced a breakdown. Then they came forth, feeling that for once they had been like other fellows and thoroughly wicked!

The late Catherine Akin used to delight in telling the following story, and although it loses much of the real humor it possessed when told by herself, for she was an inimitable story teller, it will give one an idea of the strictness of those early Friends.

It seems that Miss Akin had a piano in her father's house, an innovation looked upon with a great deal of disfavor by the old Quakers, and while they did not openly make objections, it was known that they thoroughly disapproved of it. Miss Akin's mother had a gathering of the Friends to tea, and on that occasion it was thought best to close the piano, so that even the sight of it might not cause offense; its cover was put on and books and other things

arranged so that it would not be too noticeable. In the evening someone, probably more worldly minded, asked Miss Akin to play something, which she of course declined, evidently having been coached by her parents, and her father said that perhaps the others would not approve of it. "Well," said Aunt Ruth, after a pause, "thee might play something if thee played it very slow." What she played, whether it was a quick-step in the time of "Old Hundred" or the "Dead March" from "Saul" I do not know, but it evidently gave satisfaction. Someone told Miss Akin that they saw Uncle Silas and Aunt Ruth, at another time, standing by the window while she was playing, but what they thought of it she never knew.

As in all country villages, occasionally there has been one whose mind has given away, and years ago there was a man who went insane upon religion. One of the pleasures of the boys in the country is the ringing of the bells the night before the Fourth of July, being unable to restrain their patriotic feelings longer than the last stroke of the bell at midnight. One night they had stolen into the Methodist church, made their way up the dark stairs and begun to ring the bell, when in walked the aforesaid "crazy man" carrying a long butcher's knife with which he threatened the boys. He told them to kneel down while he prayed, and said that if they attempted to leave he would cut their ears off. And there he kept them for hours, kneeling in fear and trembling, while he prayed for them, knife in hand, glancing about from time to time to see that the boys were properly devout and attentive. It was the most quiet "night before the Fourth" that had been known for several years, for the boys were in no mood to continue the bell ringing when the last "amen" was said and they were released.

THE BREAKWATER.

Quoting again from Mr. Wing:

"The breakwater was built about the year 1837 from material which came mostly from Dinah's pond. A continual hawser of about four and a half inch size was stretched from the mouth of the river to the breakwater site and by its help the scows were pulled to and fro. This undertaking proved a failure on account of the formation of sand bars on the in-shore side.

"Work was suspended and the structure has never been completed according to the original plans. A wooden building which

was erected upon the central portion of the breakwater was set on fire and destroyed by sailors some years ago.

"According to tradition both the old pier and the breakwater have received great quantities of smuggled goods in the years of long ago.

"During the war of 1812-15 some of the smaller vessels of the English fleet visited this part of the coast and demanded a thousand dollars as tribute money. A committee endeavored to raise the money by subscription and at last succeeded in securing the whole of the amount required. This they sent to the English in two installments by a citizen known as "Uncle Abner." The object of the business portion of the community was to impress upon the minds of the enemy that none but poor ignorant fishermen dwelt thereabouts, in order that they might escape the requisition of a larger sum. The messenger was well chosen, and an address was sent to the "Commander of the British Squadron on the coast of Boston Bay" etc. On returning to shore the messenger stated that he had been kindly received; was taken to the cabin and that he not only delivered the written address but spoke to some length to the assembled officers, who listened respectfully, evidently much moved by his words of pleading for the poor fishermen. Before leaving, the British agreed not to molest any fishing vessel that could show a license from Uncle Abner. The English kept their word and vessels having the requisite permit from Uncle Abner were not disturbed."

OLD PIER.

The following extract from the "Collection of the Massachusetts Historical society," Vol. VIII, which is headed "A Description of Dennis in the County of Barnstable. September, 1802," has been handed to me by Mr. Freeman C. Goodnow, a former resident of the village and at the present time the owner of a summer cottage here, will be found of interest as it gives a good description of the old pier as it was in 1802, and judging from it we should infer that the pier was built in the vicinity of 1800.

"Half way between the river's mouth and the end of the bar, stands a pier 37 feet long and 31 feet broad, on which is a store. There is good anchorage 2 cables length east of it and 12 feet of water at low tide. Common tides rise here 4 feet. Such is Bass river. The harbor which it affords might be improved by art. Mr. Sylvanus Crowell, who lives in Yarmouth and who built the

pier, has endeavored to confine the water of the river within the main channel and to prevent it flowing through the marsh on the eastern side, but his laudable attempts have hitherto failed of success. Persevering labors may perhaps, in time, effect the wished for object."

When the old pier disappeared I do not know, but the irregular piles of rock were a guide to those entering the river, for if the rocks could not be seen then there was sufficient water to enter. During the War of 1812 it must have been a busy place, vessels discharging cargoes, fishermen taking in salt, and purchasing supplies.

From this same article quoted above:

"On the Yarmouth side (of Bass river) there are six wharfs, three near the mouth of the river and three north of it. There are here twenty-one vessels, one brig sails immediately for the West Indies, ten coasters from 30 to 40 tons burden sail to Boston, Connecticut or the Southern states and thence to the West Indies. The other ten vessels are fishermen, one of a hundred tons, the rest are smaller. The fishing vessels go to the Straits of Belle Isle, the shoals of Nova Scotia or Nantucket sound. On a medium, a fishing vessel uses 700 bushels of salt in a year. One or two vessels are annually built in Bass river, chiefly on the western side."

The article closes with these words:

"These facts in addition to those which have been made already, and which will hereafter be mentioned in this volume, show the present flourishing state of the South shore of the county of Barnstable, a part of Massachusetts not often visited and little known."

FIFTIETH ANNIVERSARY of the

Methodist Episcopal Church.

Sept. 3 and 4, 1902.

The exercises began on the evening of Sept. 3 with a social gathering of welcome to the visitors and the friends of the society. The pastor at this time was Rev. A. J. Jolly, who made the opening address of welcome. Addresses were made by several of the former pastors, and letters read from many who were unable to be present. Members of the choir and others furnished enjoyable music.

The celebration was continued on Wednesday afternoon, and in the evening there was a religious service at which the Rev. L. B. Bates, D. D., preached the sermon, music being furnished by members of the choir in former days.

FIFTIETH ANNIVERSARY
of the Erection of the Present School Buildings.
June 9, 1905.

The celebration took place in Lyceum hall, Yarmouthport, in the afternoon, and all the children of the schools were present and took part in the exercises. The speakers were Mr. George H. Cary of Boston and Mr. Stephen Sears of South Yarmouth. Prayer was offered by the Rev. Arthur Varley, Mr. E. W. Eldridge presided, Mr. W. A. Schwab gave the address of welcome, and an original poem, of which the following is a part, was read by Mr. E. Lawrence Jenkins:

The Old School Buildings.

Fifty years the staunch old buildings
Weathered have the rain and snow;
Stood amid the storm and sunshine,
Watched the seasons come and go.

Fifty years within those class rooms,
Children have been taught to climb
Up the grand old path of knowledge,
Leading to the heights sublime.

Fifty years of grand, brave service,
Teaching thousands how to live;
Storing in their minds the knowledge
That to others they might give.

Fifty years have seen the passing
From their portals to the world,
Thousands of young men and maidens,
With their banners bright unfurled.

And they stand today, those buildings,
Just as strong and true as then;
They were builded upon honor,
They were built by honest men.

And a thought it is most pleasant,
They were builded thus to last,

E'en as character was builded
By those pupils in the past.

* * * *

Fifty years have others labored
At the tasks now set for you;
Many more will follow after,
Many more these tasks will do.

May you then strive in the doing
Just the very best you can;
Study hard, each day improving,
Each for each, as man for man.

* * * *

Honor to those staunch old buildings,
Honor for the work they've done
For our fathers and our mothers,
And their children, every one.

The anniversary hymn was written by Mr. E. F. Pierce, principal of the high school.

FIFTY YEARS AGO.

Tune: "Fair Harvard."

Far, far through the mists of the hurrying years,
Away to those days ever dear,
Fond memory guides us and sings to our ears
Of that work, sure, far-seeing and clear.
And shall we forget in this circle so bright,
Those builders of fifty years gone?
With steadfastness, foresight, with eyes toward the light,
They builded for children unborn.

We breathe the same air of the murmuring seas;
We tread paths that their footsteps have worn;
These loved scenes, this dear schoolhouse, these whispering trees,
Speak to us, as to them, of life's dawn.
So, while onward we press, life's full duties to meet,
Wheresoever our lot may be cast,
We remember in honor, in gratitude sweet,
The brave work of the men of the past.

The following interesting article has been received from Mr. Daniel Wing which gives valuable information.

THE FRIENDS' BURIAL GROUNDS IN YARMOUTH.

About the year 1714 there stood on the highway a short distance north of Kelley's bay in what is now a part of Dennis, but was then within the boundaries of Yarmouth, a small building owned and occupied by the Society of Friends or Quakers as a meeting house.

For about a century, possibly more, the meetings there were attended by members coming from various directions; some of them from sections quite distant from the place of worship; and there is yet an old roadway in that vicinity known to the older generation as "the Quaker path."

With the opening up of the Indian reservation in South Yarmouth for settlement by whites, the centres of population were affected somewhat, and the present Friends' meeting house was built in 1809 for the better accommodation of the generation of that time.

In accordance with the custom prevailing in those days, the burial place was located in each case upon the grounds adjacent to the place for worship.

In 1875 the grounds of the old site were surrounded by a neat wooden fence; but in 1901 the writer received a letter saying, "Alas! the fence has fallen; who will restore it?" In 1903 a new wooden fence was built, enclosing, however, only that portion of the grounds which had been used for burial purposes.

And now the question forcibly presents itself: Who will, in the coming years, see that this ancient cemetery is properly cared for and protected?

For many years the grounds of the South Yarmouth meeting house were enclosed by a wooden fence; but this was eventually replaced by a more durable construction of stone and iron.

The earlier Friends nowhere showed their traits of modesty and simplicity more prominently than in their meeting houses and burial grounds. The former were marked examples of architectural simplicity and the latter showed a complete abstinence from ostentation and vain glory.

To these early Friends, Death leveled all human distinctions, and in the grave, sinner and saint rested alike so far as outward manifestations were concerned. A simple mound of earth marked the

last resting place, and no tablet was allowed to distinguish one burial from another.

Years passed, and a rule was adopted allowing the placing of headstones not exceeding eighteen inches in height, with simple inscription showing name and age. This occurred not far from the middle of the last century. Today although

“No storied urn nor animated bust
In grandeur stands above their silent dust,
The lowly headstones, standing row on row,
Reveal to us all that we need to know.”

From the earliest days, this place of burial, although owned and controlled by Friends, has been essentially a village cemetery. Of the first thirty-one adult burials there, less than one-half were members of the Friends' society, and when the number of burials reached two hundred and sixty-six, less than one-third were members by birthright or otherwise.

The privilege thus extended to persons not connected with them by ties of religious belief, shows great neighborliness of feeling and emphasizes the thought so prominent in the minds of the early Friends, that at the grave human judgment should end, and that the merits or demerits of the deceased should be left to God, who judgeth not as man judgeth.

Each succeeding year the membership grows perceptibly less, and to one who remembers events connected with those honored people of the past during a period of nearly seventy years, a review of the former days brings a feeling of deep sadness.

It seems but yesterday those scenes were laid,
And yet it needs no prophet's wondrous aid
To show us that those goodly scenes of yore
Have long since passed and will return no more.

Maywood, Ill., 1915.

Daniel Wing.

And now we come to the last words.

The editor confesses that there is much more that might be said; there are many names that might claim a place within these pages,—men who were an active part of the building up of the village, and who occupied positions that entitle them to the remembrance of the public, but the plan of these reminiscences is to picture the earlier aspect of Quaker village, rather than to form a series of biographies, although the editor confesses that at times he has been led away from the original idea. He also is well aware that more information could have been procured if he had known where to apply for it, but a public appeal through the Yarmouth Register failed of responses except in one instance. He has done what he could, only regretting that much that is of value and interest must, in the course of years, be hopelessly lost. The errors that may occur in any of the statements are such that could only come from incorrect information; the editor has presented it as given to him by various people, as they have heard it or it has been handed down to them.

* 4456.213
175.29
No. 39.

LIBRARY *of*
C a p e C o d
HISTORY & GENEALOGY

WEST YARMOUTH HOUSES

Seventy-Five Years Ago

From Parker's River Westward

By DANIEL WING.



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
1915.

Joseph H. Benton Ed.
Aug. 7, 1939
E
cont

*4431.210

No. 39

WEST YARMOUTH HOUSES

Seventy-Five Years Ago

From Parker's River Westward

By DANIEL WING. /

"I do not envy any man, that absence of sentiment which makes some people careless of the memorials of their ancestors, and whose blood can be warmed up only by talking of horses or the price of hops."

Blades, in *Enemies of Books*.

It has been asserted by some historian that the Crowels or Crowells of the Middle states were originally Cromwells and that they dropped the letter M about the time they dropped their anchor in a harbor of the American continent. It requires but little knowledge of history to convince one that in many instances, during the political struggles between England and France, hundreds of years ago, it was advisable for the safety of one's person to change the family name. For a long period the relations between England and Normandy were intimate and more or less complex.

The Norman French name Le Crochere (pronounced Cro share) was easily abbreviated by dropping the first syllable and the final e. This left Crocher, which, in

English, would be pronounced Crocker: hence the changes in spelling and pronunciation. Another change was effected by eliminating the final syllable of Crochere altogether: hence the names Cro, Crow and Crowe, which by the process of evolution have become Crowell.

It was natural that the descendants of John Crowe, who lived near Follens pond, should establish their residences along the northern shore of the Cape; and that those of Yelverton should settle on the southern coast near the home of their paternal ancestor, where there was an abundance of land suitable for tilling and a natural growth of salt grasses for their cattle.

The woods furnished an abundance of timber for the construction of dwellings and barns, and the waters, both fresh and salt, yielded considerable food for their tables.

In later years the coasting trade furnished employment for many, and a goodly number of those who afterwards became masters of

merchant ships, took their first lessons as cooks and "hands" on board the small craft which were largely owned and sailed by their fathers or near relatives.

The boys of those days, instead of wasting their time in pursuit of pleasure, worked on the home lands, hoeing corn and potatoes, cutting wood for fuel, milking the cows morning and night, going to the district school for a few weeks in the winter and so keeping up the round of duties throughout the year. Those indeed were strenuous times, the like of which the rising generation knows but little from personal experience. But there was a compensation in the fact that in that way were produced men of sturdy character, energetic, self-reliant, persistent. Some of them have gained an enviable reputation as ship masters, while others have attained success in other departments of human endeavor.

The exact spot on which Yelverton's dwelling stood is not known; but is supposed to have been in the vicinity of the residences formerly owned and occupied by the late Captains Elkanah Crowell and Zadok Crowell. The building may have been constructed of logs from the adjacent woods. Here Yelverton lived forty-four years. His wife Elizabeth survived him twenty years and died in November, 1703. The will of the former is dated Dec. 23, 1681, and is signed "Yelverton Crowell alias Crow," which seems to indicate the period in which the final change in surname was made.

The site of the residence of

John, son of Yelverton Crowe, is known. A great-great-grandson of the latter showed it to a descendant in the seventh generation and he in turn pointed out the spot to one now living. The old Yelverton farm has been occupied and worked by his descendants in all the successive generations down to the present time. Captain Elkanah Crowell¹, (Elkanah², Elkanah³, Simeon⁴, Ephraim⁵, Thomas⁶, Yelverton¹) now living in Hyannis at the age of 85 years, has kindly furnished the writer of this article with a list of householders along the line of what is now known as South Sea avenue in the order in which they were located 75 years ago.

The writer has looked up the male ancestral line of some of these worthies and offers the same in the hope that it will be acceptable to some at least who have not the time or the inclination to unravel the intricacies of genealogical history.

Commencing at Great Island, the first residence to be named was that of Captain Nehemiah Crowell⁸ (Abner⁴, Thomas⁵, Thomas⁶, Yelverton¹), who died about the year 1849, leaving the house to be occupied by his son Robert.

The next was the residence of John Hallet, who married Rachel Crowell of the sixth generation from Yelverton. This house was moved from its original site many years ago and now stands upon land on the county road owned by the heirs of the late F. A. Abel. In still earlier times there had been a dwelling on the "Island" occupied by the family of Freeman Hallet, and later by his

widow; but which was removed longer ago than Captain Crowell can remember, and became the residence of the late B. K. Chase, who married a daughter of the former owner.

Near the Island fence, on the mainland, were a lot of saltworks and an establishment where lamp-black was made. Salt was made in this vicinity as early as 1839, by Gorham Crowell and Ezekiel Crowell. The lampblack was manufactured by a man named John Bangs, who lived in the house later occupied by Timothy Lewis on the easterly side of the highway, now serving as a summer residence.

Then, on the west side, was the home of the late Alexander Crowell, a son of Nehemiah, already mentioned, now also a summer residence. Back in the fields was the ruins of an old cellar on the estate of Ezekiel Crowell, where a house had been located; by whom it was built and occupied is beyond the knowledge of any one now living. A little farther north was an old, low, double house, owned by Captain Ezekiel Crowell^s (Jeremiah⁴, Joseph^s, John^s, Yelverton¹). This place was occupied by Joshua Hallet and Arven Baker some seventy or more years ago; also by a family of Winslows from Brewster who tended saltworks near by. The building was subsequently torn down and Captain Ezekiel Crowell, son of Jeremiah, built a residence near the site of the old house. One of the daughters of the former married the late Frederic P. Baker; one, Captain Edward Lew-

is, and the third, still living at the advanced age of eighty-nine and one-half years, is the widow of the late Heman Chase of West Yarmouth. This building was moved about 30 years ago to South Yarmouth.

Next in order stood the low, double house of Timothy Crowell^s, son of Jeremiah⁴, previously named in this article. This house in later years was the home of Zenas Wood, who married Sarah Ann, daughter of Timothy, July 1, 1838. Mr Wood's family moved West many years ago, and finally the house was taken down.

The late Captain Zadok Crowell^s built a house close by the site of that of his father Timothy^s, and occupied the same with his family for many years. This house, now known as Creltholme, has been for several years past the residence of Joshua F. Crowell^s (Isaiah⁷, Elkanah⁶, Elkanah^s, Simon⁴, Ephraim^s, Thomas^s, Yelverton¹). The present owner is also a descendant of Yelverton in the eighth generation in the line coming down from Thomas, the fourth son of Yelverton, born about the year 1647.

On the east side of the way nearly opposite the last named, stood the house of Captain Ebenezer Crowell^s (Solomon⁴, Joseph^s, John^s, Yelverton¹) who was lost at sea in February, 1828, when about 42 years old. His widow survived him many years. None of their children are now living, but there are grandchildren. The old dwelling was bought by Reuben Blachford and went into the construction of a new house on Main

street, opposite the late Isaac Crowell's, now occupied by Addie F. Crowell.

On the west side of the Lane, as it was formerly called, once stood the residence of Captain Elkanah Crowell⁵, son of Simeon. This building was taken down about the year 1833 and a new structure was erected by Captain Elkanah of the sixth generation near the site of his father's house. Of the children who grew up in this home, Captain Elkanah Crowell of the seventh generation, heretofore named in this article, and a sister living in the West are the sole survivors. The last-named dwelling is located near the spot once occupied by the residence of John, son of Yelverton, and presumably quite near also to that of Yelverton himself.

Almost directly opposite the residence of Captain Elkanah Crowell of the sixth generation from Yelverton, the pioneer of 1639, there had stood for a number of years the district schoolhouse, to which we presume the description of one elsewhere by Whittier would apply:

"Within, the master's desk is seen,
Deep scarred by raps official;
The warping floor, the battered
seats,

The jack-knife's carved initial;
The charcoal frescoes on its wall;
The door's worn sill betraying
The feet that, creeping slow to
school,

Went storming out to playing."

About the year 1839 or 40 this building of an early period in the educational history of this section was moved farther north and be-

came a part of the residence of Captain Zenas Crowell. A new schoolhouse was built on the same site about the year 1839; but that too was sold when the larger building now in use superseded it on Main street, and it was used as a storehouse for a time on the opposite side of the street by Elkanah Crowell, the 6th.

Again it was sold and removed to Main street near the old cemetery and converted into a dwelling house by George Taylor, a citizen of the village.

On the west side of South Sea avenue, next north of Captain Elkanah Crowell's, stood the residence of the late Captain Henry Crowell⁶ (Nehemiah⁵, Abner⁴, Thomas³, Thomas², Yelverton¹). This dwelling has been removed south, to a site nearly opposite that formerly occupied by the home of the late Alexander Crowell previously mentioned.

Next in order came the residence of the late Davis Crowell, on the east side of the street, now owned and used as a summer residence by Edward Brown.

Again, on the west side of the highway, stood the chimney stack of an old dwelling, the original builder of which cannot now be certainly known.

Mrs. Martha Chase (daughter of Captain Ezekiel Crowell of the fifth generation from Yelverton), now living at the advanced age of ninety years, remembers distinctly that her grandfather, Jeremiah, who died in 1827, once lived there.

It is quite possible that the building itself was erected by Joseph, the father of Jeremiah, and a grandson of Yelverton, the pio-

neer. This house was locally known as the Molly Gamie house. Jeremiah married Mary Hallet in 1778, and Mary was frequently called Molly in the early days.

Then came the home of the late Captain Henry Taylor with its large family of boys and girls, most of whom have passed away.

Next came Captain Zenas Crowell's, where were four daughters and five sons, only one of whom, the youngest daughter, is now living.

Thus ends the panorama of South Sea avenue as it was seventy-five years ago. What changes have taken place since then! Quite a number of the dwellings still remain upon the sites they occupied in the long ago; but the occupants are not the same. Children have been born, have attained their three score years and ten, and have passed away, leaving their places to be filled by others, who, in their turn will occupy for a more or less brief period.

"Like to the falling of a star,
Or as the flights of eagles are;
Or like the fresh spring's gaudy
hue,
Or silver drops of morning dew;
Or like a wind that chafes the
flood,
Or bubbles which on water stood:
E'en such is man, whose borrowed
light
Is straight called in and paid to-
night.
The wind blows out, the bubble
dies;
The spring entombed in autumn
lies;

The dew dries up, the star is
shot;

The flight is past, and man forgot."
—H. King.

The last line often becomes true
sooner than it should.

The body of land known as Great Island has been doubtless, in the long ago, an island in fact, as well as in name; but the mighty forces of wind and wave which have extended seaward the bar off Bass river and formed Dogfish bar farther west, have formed a sandy beach which transforms the one time island into a peninsula. It is true that the highway leading to it is bridged over an arm of Lewis bay; but this is because the line of the highway, as established, is more direct than the route nearer the sea shore.

It is reasonable to presume that this peninsula was a part of the tract taken up by Yelverton Crowe, the pioneer, in 1639.

The fact that it would make the area of his territory possibly as great as three square miles is no argument against its probability. In Middleboro, as well as on the Cape, in the early days, large tracts of land were purchased from the Indians and were known as the Twelve Men's Purchase, Five Men's Purchase, Sixteen Shillings Purchase, etc., and the last named seems to indicate the consideration paid.

The southeastern point of the peninsula was formerly known as Fox point; the southernmost extremity still bears the name Point Gammon. Why this name, which intimates imposture, delusion,

trickery, was applied to this head-land is somewhat difficult to ascertain with any degree of certainty; but some investigation by correspondence and a study of maps new and old, has convinced the writer that it originated with mariners and not with landmen. The writer, in a former article, was led into error by a statement made to him in good faith, that a tradition had been handed down to the effect that a few generations ago, cattle were driven across a narrow channel to Bishop and Clerk's and pastured there. He invited criticism and suggestions from others, and has received letters from several parties which have convinced him that the following statements can be relied upon.

A great many years ago the Bishop and Clerk's ledge was an island about five miles in circumference, and sheep used to be scowed across the channel and pastured there. The channel at that time must have been considerably narrower than now; but never, since the advent of white men in New England, has it been shallow enough to admit of its being forded.

The native Indians accounted for the islands Nantucket and Marthas Vineyard by a mythical story which ran somewhat in this wise:

A great many moons ago there lived upon the Cape a giant named Maushop. One day he waded out into the South sea to a great distance, for his legs were exceedingly long and his bodily vigor wonderful. After a time his moccasins became full of sand, which made

walking painful. Thereupon he emptied one, and the island of Nantucket appeared above the surface of the water, while the sand which he poured from the other formed the island known as Marthas Vineyard. He lighted his pipe and volumes of smoke arose, obscuring the vision for miles around. Ever afterward, when fog appeared over the water, the Indians would exclaim in their native tongue, "Here comes old Maushop's smoke."

The government lighthouse was established on Point Gammon in 1816 and was kept by Samuel Peak until 1826. He was succeeded by his son, John Peak, who officiated until the light was discontinued in 1859, when the Bishop and Clerk's lighthouse, which had been in process of construction for several years, was put to service.

Hyannis Harbor light was established in 1849; the Range light on Railroad wharf in 1885; the line of the two serving as a guide in entering Hyannis harbor.

Captain Elkanah Crowell, who hoed corn and dug potatoes near Fox point and Point Gammon, when a boy, estimates the area of cleared land on the southern and western portions of "The Island" at that time to have been twenty acres or more, and that probably there were thirty to forty acres of woodland. This territory was owned by some dozen or more proprietors, and when the wood was big enough to convert into firewood the area was laid off into lots and the proprietors bid for choice. Captain Crowell himself drew a plat of the woodland for

that purpose about forty years ago. automobiles and power trucks.

The body of water north of Great Island, known as Lewis bay, doubtless received its name from some family residing in that neighborhood.

The late Amos Otis, Esq., is authority for the statement that the "South Sea men" of Barnstable in 1696 included Thomas, Edward and John Lewis, and that the last named fell in battle in the war with the Indian chief, King Philip. The name Lewis does not appear on the Yarmouth tax list for 1676. Additional facts along this line would be welcome, to show the origin of the name and period in which it was applied to this beautiful body of water. It may be that, forming, as it does, a portion of the eastern boundary of Hyannis, it received its name from the Lewis families of Barnstable.

About a hundred years ago, "there were in this bay four coasters of about forty-five tons each, and ten fishing vessels of from forty to fifty tons each." The lampblack and salt making industries added to the volume of business in this section. Today these are all gone and their places taken by summer cottages and pleasure craft.

Farming, too, except on a very small scale, has become a thing of the past; although the raising of vegetables is carried on to some extent. A lady is still living who remembers riding home from a party in an oxcart; but oxcarts have been succeeded by carryalls and truck wagons, and they, in turn, are being supplanted by

However, the old days were good old days of peace and comparative contentment; and we of the living should not lose sight of them in our scramble for that which is just ahead of us.

To the section of which we write, in 1639, nineteen years after the landing of the Pilgrims at Plymouth, and one year after the incorporation of the town of Yarmouth, came Yelverton Crowe, the pioneer, who was not only a man respected by his fellow citizens, but one who accepted and performed well his duties as a citizen. He not only served his town in several official capacities, but served, too, as a soldier in King Philip's war.

It would be exceedingly appropriate to erect some memorial to his memory in the cemetery where so many of the early settlers quite probably including himself are buried, and to mark the historic sites of the neighborhood, before they are altogether lost to human knowledge.

With suitable inscriptions, no other material would seem to be as appropriate for this purpose as the massive boulders of the town which he and his descendants have done so much to establish and perpetuate.

The writer has several times mentioned this name and has diligently sought a reason for its bestowal upon the southern headland of Great Island. He, himself, has at sundry times, when sailing in Nantucket sound, seen a mirage in that vicinity which so distorted the shore outline as apparently to make it possible to

sail through several channels, where, in fact, there was no water at all.

When the Bishops was an island of considerable extent, as it was a few generations ago, and Great Island extended farther south, a mirage or a more or less dense mist or fog may have made that portion of the coast even more deceptive than now. Hence the name, as applied by mariners who were gammoned by it—Point Gammon.

As particularly interesting in this connection I quote a passage from Thoreau's "The Maine Woods," page 227, descriptive of a canoe trip on Moosehead lake in Maine with one white companion and an Indian guide. "Looking northward from this place," writes Thoreau, "it appeared as if we were entering a large bay, and we did not know whether we should be obliged to diverge from our course and keep outside a point which we saw, or should find a passage between this and the main land. I consulted my map and used my glass, and the Indian did the same; but we could not find our place exactly on the map, nor could we detect any break in the shore. When I asked the Indian the way, he answered, 'I don't know,' for he had never been up this side. It was misty, dogday weather. . . It seemed that, if we held on, we should be fairly embayed. Presently, however, the mist lifted somewhat, and revealed a break in the shore northward, showing that the point was a portion of Deer Island, and that our course lay westward of it. Where it had

seemed a continuous shore even through a glass, one portion was now seen by the naked eye to be much more distant than the other which overlapped it, merely by the greater thickness of the mist which still rested on it." Another Point Gammon.

Captain Loring Fuller of South Yarmouth, who has sailed along the coast of Great Island more than a thousand times, offers no solution of the problem as to the origin of the name Point Gammon; but gives a version of the old Maushop myth that is new to the writer of this article. It runs thus:

"A very long time ago there lived a great Indian giant named Maushop, who could wade up and down Vineyard sound without finding the water more than knee deep. His home was in a cave called the Devil's Den on Gay Head. He used to sit on a boulder in the sound to smoke, and the ashes from his pipe, taken away by the currents, formed the island of Nantucket. He undertook to build a bridge from Gay Head to Cuttyhunk by filling one of his shoes with sand and wading out to empty it on the intended line; but a crab bit him on his uncovered foot and made him so angry that he broke off a portion of the cliff and threw it southward, thus forming the island called No Man's Land. He flung his five children into the sea and they were transformed into fishes. His wife remonstrated with him and he tossed her across the channel to Seaconnet." There! if that does not equal, in vivid imagination, the myths of the Israelites, the Assyri-

ans and Babylonians of four thousand years ago, then the writer is no judge.

This subject (Point Gammon and vicinity) will be continued in No. 9 of this series.

Meantime, will those persons who have either fact or tradition bearing upon the topic referred to, kindly forward same to the writer, who will serve as a sort of "clearing house" to receive, assort and publish later on. Names will not be printed if anyone objects.

The result of correspondence now at hand will be given from time to time.

The writer has no pet theories which he is trying to maintain; but is anxious to ascertain facts, before it is too late, and tradition is often helpful.

Traditions grow and change as the years pass. As one reaches the three score years and ten of human life he is sometimes temporarily in doubt whether certain events that occurred in his early lifetime were actually witnessed by himself, or were so vividly portrayed to him by another as to leave upon his mind and memory an impression as strong and enduring as that produced by personal experience.

A correspondent regrets that the writer doubts the fording of the channel between Point Gammon and Bishop's since the advent of the white man in New England; and states that a worthy citizen of say three generations ago said in his hearing that he, himself, "as a boy, waded across." Now, there is no intention on the part of anyone to insinuate wilful mis-

representation by any person. The writer for many years believed as did his correspondent; but accumulating evidence shook his faith in the fording; although he still believes that sheep and possibly larger animals were taken across the channel to pasture on the Bishop's island by means of scows.

In reply to a query on this subject he received the following from the U. S. Coast and Geodetic survey, bearing date Sept. 9.

"There is nothing on file in this department or bureau" (Department of Commerce) "to indicate that the locality about Bishop and Clerk's lighthouse was ever an island of any greater extent than at present shown upon the charts. The earliest survey by the coast survey was in 1847, and at that time the water north of the lighthouse was too deep to be forded. The earliest chart of the locality is that of 'Nantucket shoals' by Captain Paul Pinkham, 1791. It shows several rock symbols where Bishop and Clerk's lighthouse is located and three and one-half fathoms of water between there and Point Gammon. We have no information regarding the origin of the name Point Gammon."

A U. S. chart of "Hyannis harbor" whose hydrography is based on surveys made between 1888 and 1902 with certain corrections to Sept. 14, 1914, shows the distance from Point Gammon to the lighthouse on Bishop's to be about $2\frac{1}{2}$ statute miles. There is a channel a little more than three-fourths of a mile wide, in which the water is more than 18 feet deep at its "mean low water;" the

depth in that vicinity being from 19 to 26 feet.

Summing up, we have as follows:

Depth of channel in 1791, $3\frac{1}{2}$ fathoms (21 feet).

Lighthouse established on Point Gammon in 1816.

U. S. survey in 1847 shows channel "too deep to be forded."

Latest chart shows channel 19 to 26 feet deep at low water.

Tradition says that a man born in 1801 waded across this channel when a boy.

There is no doubt that the wearing away of this portion of the coast during the last three centuries has been very great. It has been estimated that the wearing away of the east coast of Nantucket in recent times has been as great as a foot per annum, and on parts of the south coast, three feet.

Geologists suppose that at least three to four miles have been washed into the sea from the east coast of Cape Cod in ages past. The waste from the land has greatly extended the bar off Bass river.

The question under discussion, however, is whether or not the channel referred to has, within a century or two, been shallow enough to be forded.

No. 10 of this series will review the residences along the county road from Parker's river bridge westward, covering a period of seventy years.

On the northerly side of the county road westerly from the bridge and distant from it, say fifteen rods or thereabout, there stood about eighty years ago

a low double house occupied by the widow of Simeon Lewis, who was the sister of Elkanah Crowell 1st, born in 1757. Of their children, Mehitabel married Isaiah Parker and Simeon married Thankful, sister of John Hallett.

Some twenty rods farther west on the same side of the road and about the same time, was the residence of Captain Winthrop Sears; a building of similar design to the one first named. In fact, that was the style of architecture that prevailed a century or more ago. It was the custom to have the front toward the south, having no reference to the location or direction of the nearest highway. In South Yarmouth representatives of this class are the Reuben Farris house and the Amos Baker house, the second dwelling south of the Hattel Crosby place. The Baker house originally had the front door toward the river instead of on the street side. The most of such homes had a large room each side of the front door; the kitchen in the rear, with pantry and bedroom at one end and cellarway and bedroom at the other, and an immense chimney stack and brick oven directly back of the "front entry."

Captain Sears married first Betsey Crowell, and second Susannah Crowell. The children of the second marriage were Odlin, Susan, Abbie, Winthrop and Mary. The house is now occupied by Mrs Irene Taylor, widow of the late Roland Taylor. Still farther on was the low, double house of John Gorham, where he with his mother and sister lived some seventy-five or eighty years ago. This

building was torn down many years since; but the writer remembers its ancient appearance, its white plastered chimney of ample dimensions bearing evidence of its having been used as a target by passing gunners. Mr Gorham, who married late in life, was a very pious old gentleman, who used to lead the singing at prayer meetings, and who, the writer thinks, was a pensioner of the war of 1812, having served on the watch for the enemy along the coast from his station on Great Island.

It was in that war that the English armed vessel *Nymph* demanded a "ransom" of South Yarmouth to the amount of one thousand dollars, which was paid in two instalments.

Nearly opposite the site of the John Gorham house was a small house occupied by Warren Lewis, whose wife's name was Diantha. Their children were Phebe, Alfred, Edwin, Ruth and Thatcher, the last named living at present in Dennisport. This house was moved a number of years ago to South Yarmouth.

Still farther west on the north side of the road formerly stood the meeting house of the west precinct, built in 1794, in which the Rev Timothy Alden preached every fourth Sabbath for many years. About the year 1832 this structure was replaced by a more modern one; and this newer building was moved a few years ago to the south side of the highway near the schoolhouse.

In the early days many worshippers came from "Gray's coun-

try" and the Matthews settlement near the mouth of Bass river.

A little farther on, upon the same side of the street, was the home of Captain Odlin P. Sears, who married Thankful, daughter of Captain Elnathan Lewis, Senr. Their children were Cyrus and Richard. The old house was torn down and a new house erected on the same site. This is now owned and occupied by the heirs of the late Captain William Peak, son of John Peak, a onetime keeper of the lighthouse on Great Island.

Next on the south side of the road was the home of Thomas Crowell, who married Lydia, sister of Jabez Lewis. Their children were Serena, Eliza, Warren and Lydia. This residence stood just east of the cross roads leading to South Sea avenue on the one hand and North Lane on the other, the place being known as "The Four Corners." The dwelling was taken down some years ago and moved to Hyannis by George Miller. Thomas was of the seventh generation from "John Crowe of Bass Ponds."

On the northerly side of the highway and across North lane from the Odlin P. Sears homestead, stood the residence of Jabez Lewis, which was probably occupied by his father at a still earlier date. This also was a "low double house" corresponding to the style of architecture of the period when it was built. By his first wife, Thankful, the children were William, Thankful and Prentiss; by his second wife, Rebecca Howland, Edgar, Lothrop, Leonidas, Irene, Amelia, Elizabeth, Melora and George. The dwelling was

burned some twenty-five years ago.

The ancient cemetery is located just beyond the site of the Jabez Lewis home and is bounded on the west side by a road which leads to the former site of the town house. In the days when this cemetery was laid out, it was customary to have the burial ground in the immediate vicinity of the meeting house; but at that time the people of "South Sea" attended service on the north side of the town, hence the desirability of a burial place nearer the home village.

It seems a pity that so few of the earlier burials are marked by headstones; but this lack is easily accounted for by the fact that most of the pioneers were people of limited means, and the needs of the living were rather to be looked after than the marking of the resting places of the dead.

The old wooden fence which had heretofore enclosed the grounds was replaced in 1884 by a substantial stone and iron fence at a cost of \$1755.23, the funds being raised by subscription, under the devoted management of the late Captain Sturgis Crowell, of the sixth generation from Thomas, son of Yelverton.

The town of Yarmouth contributed \$300.00 and the following named persons each gave \$100.00 or more: Captain Sturgis Crowell, Elisha Taylor, Esq., Elkanah Crowell, Jr., and Mrs Albert Chase. In addition to cash donations, many persons gave their labor and the use of their teams to forward this worthy object.

Across the highway from the

cemetery are the recently built residences of Lothrop and Ferdinand Baker, and across a way which connects with South Sea avenue is that of Joshua Baker.

A short distance west from the residence last named, stands a small concrete structure recently built for the use of Christian Scientists. Opposite this is the home of George Taylor. The building was formerly the district school-house located on South Sea avenue, which was referred to in No. 5 of this series.

Next west, stands the low double house formerly occupied by John Seymour and later by the late Benjamin Blachford. This dwelling has had many occupants, is in a good state of preservation and is now owned by Rev Lester Lewis, a descendant of Jabez Lewis hereinbefore mentioned.

Nearly opposite the place last named there stood many years ago an old-time dwelling known as the "Aunt Brown house." Aunt Brown was the mother of Blind Frank, a character known for miles around.

At the annual sheep washings and sheep shearings on Nantucket in the first half of the last century, Blind Frank filled the position of chief "fiddler" for the dancing in the evenings. In those days, as many as seven thousand sheep were pastured on Nantucket and the annual sheep shearing was an occurrence of great interest.

Close by, Benjamin Blachford, who married Lydia Seymour, built a small house of more modern style. His children were Henry, John, Benjamin, Reuben, Frederic,

Lydia and Elizabeth.

The late Henry Blachford of the Yarmouth board of selectmen, was the last survivor of this large family.

Still farther west on the north side of the county road, was the low double house of Captain Elnathan Lewis, who used to have charge of the West Yarmouth postoffice when the stage brought the mail from Plymouth, not very regularly, some seventy-five or eighty years ago. The original dwelling was taken down some sixty-five years ago and a more modern structure built by Captain Lewis, who occupied it during the remainder of his life. This house came into possession of Captain Elkanah Crowell, 3d, and was moved in 1894 to Railroad avenue, Hyannis, where it is now occupied by him.

Captain Lewis owned a large tract of land extending from the county road to Lewis bay, a distance of more than half a mile, together with salt works near the shore. A road to the saltworks was laid out just west of the house. His children were Christopher, Thankful, Betsey, Phebe, Joseph and Edward. Captain Christopher Lewis married Susan Sears and established his home about seventy years ago directly opposite his father's. Christopher's children were Elnathan, Susan and Adelbert. The dwelling is now occupied by Mr E. B. Matthews, who married the daughter.

A little distance west from Captain Elnathan Lewis's old house, Captain Edward Lewis built a more up to date residence on the same side of the highway. He mar-

ried Lucretia, daughter of Captain Ezekiel Crowell. Their children were Mary, Martha, Lavinia and Joseph. The last named, now living in Boston, is the sole survivor of that family. A fire in the woods, some fifteen years ago, kindled by sparks from a locomotive on the railroad caused the complete destruction of this fine residence.

Nearly opposite the Edward Lewis home, there stood for many years one of the old district schoolhouses which were superseded by the three larger structures now in use, and this one was moved about a half mile farther west to the woods back of the Downs cottage.

On its former site, Captain Joseph Bourne, who married Sarah, the daughter of Sylvanus Crowell, built a house. One son, Joseph, now resides in Boston, and the cottage is occupied by the superintendent of the Barnstable Water Co. When the late C. B. Corey bought Great Island, he purchased a right of way across the old fields in this vicinity, of Elnathan and John Lewis, the same extending to South Sea avenue, as it now lies open to travel.

A few rods farther west, and on the same side of the county road, the Congregational church built a parsonage not far from sixty years ago, which was afterward sold to Captain Arthur P. Blachford and occupied by his father, Captain Henry Blachford. Captain Blachford's first wife was Mary, daughter of the late Rev. Enoch E. Chase. Two children were the result of this marriage, both of whom died in their youth. The

captain married for his second wife Huldah Robbins. They also had two children. None of the members of this family are now living.

On the north side of the highway was the low, double house of John Lewis, which was probably owned by his ancestors before him, for it had the appearance of being very old. Many different tenants have resided in it during the last fifty to sixty years. John's wife was Ruth, daughter of Joyce Taylor, and their children were Simeon, Isaiah, Alice and Dora. The dwelling is now occupied by Anthony Montcalm.

Still farther west, Captain Arunah Whelden built a house some sixty years ago. He married Serena, daughter of Daniel Hallet. Of their two children, James and Carrie, the latter is still living. The dwelling was burned down about ten years ago.

Upon the same side of the highway, a little farther on, Captain Zimri Whelden, an older brother, established a fine residence. His first wife, who died young, was Mary, daughter of Captain Winthrop Sears, Senr. His second wife was Betsey, daughter of Captain Charles Baker, who lived a short distance east of Parkers river bridge. They had one son, Captain Charles Whelden, who married Hattie May, daughter of the late Captain Elbridge Crowell of South Yarmouth. Connected with this couple, who are now living, there are many memories which are exceedingly pleasant to the writer.

The dwelling last named was

later owned and occupied by the late Captain Ephraim Crowell, and now by his son Julius, a former postmaster in that locality.

A short distance west from the home of Julius Crowell we see a small house, which, some seventy-five years ago, was the residence of Captain Hiram Crowell, born Jan. 12, 1804, who married Betsey, daughter of Captain El-nathan Lewis, in January, 1828. Christopher, a son of the above, died at sea some years ago. The house has of late been occupied by Mr Thacher.

Next, on the south side of the road, stands the small structure used for some ten or twelve years past for postoffice purposes and kept by Captain Richard Sears, the present postmaster.

Next comes a dwelling erected about sixty-five years since by Captain Benjamin Crowell, in which Postmaster Sears and wife, a daughter of the captain, now reside.

Still farther on, Captain Erastus Chase built a house of the same type as the one last mentioned. He married Betsey, daughter of Captain Higgins Crowell, Senr. Of the children, Alonzo, Erastus and Susan, the second son, a sea captain, died some years ago.

On the north side of the road, about opposite the Benjamin Crowell house, stands the home formerly of David Downs, Senr., now occupied by a son bearing the same name.

Back of the last named place, the old district schoolhouse stood for a time in the woods, as stated in a previous article. It was transformed into a hall and was

subsequently destroyed by fire.

Close by, on the same side of the highway, was the old house of Sylvanus Crowell, who was born July 11, 1786, married Susan Baker in 1809 and died April 17, 1856. He was a lineal descendant of John Crowe of Bass Ponds in the eighth generation. His children were Freeman H., Lot, Sylvanus, Betsey, Susan, Sarah, Christina and Orlando. This old house was torn down about forty-five years ago and to its site, Freeman H., the oldest son, who married Olive, the daughter of Captain John Hallet of Great Island, moved the Captain Hallet house as mentioned in the fourth chapter of this series. The premises finally passed to the ownership of the late F. A. Abell of Pawtucket. By him, the dwelling was enlarged and the grounds extended and greatly improved and beautified. Both Mr and Mrs Abell have recently died and this fine estate is now held by their heirs.

Next to the Abell estate, on the corner at the junction of the county road and an old road leading to the "North side," stands a small house which has changed owners several times and is now occupied by the heirs of the late Dustin Baker.

On the diagonal corner, next to Berry avenue, so called, Captain Higgins Crowell, Jr., established his residence. He was a descendant of John Crowe of Bass Ponds in the 8th generation, was born in 1809, and married Abigail, daughter of Captain Winthrop Sears, Senior, in 1835, whose children were Odlin, Susan, Abbie, Winthrop and Mary. The dwelling

was destroyed by fire several years ago and a new house erected on its site by Mr Chester Stacy.

Across the highway and a short distance west, Captain Kelley H. Crowell, who also was descended from John of Bass Ponds in the eighth generation, built a residence similar to that of Captain Higgins Crowell. His wife was Mary Lee, daughter of Anthony Chase. Their children were Howes and Ella. The last named married Dr W. J. Nickerson, formerly of South Yarmouth. None of this family are now living. The dwelling is now owned and occupied by Miss Flora Baker.

Next, on the same side of the road, is the low, double house of Thomas⁵ Crowell—Abner⁴, Thomas³, Thomas², Yelverton¹. Thomas was born in 1766 and married Mary, daughter of Gorham Crowell, in 1789. Mary survived her husband, dying in 1853 at the age of 81 years. The residence was known for many years as "the Molly Thomas house" to distinguish it from "the Molly Crowell house" down "the Lane," now South Sea avenue. The children of Thomas and Mary were Washington and Mary Ann. The last named married Jabez Perry and the old home is occupied during the summer season by their heirs.

Across the county road, nearly opposite the old "Molly Thomas house, stands a dwelling formerly occupied by Leander Crowell and subsequently by the late Captain Washburn Baker, who married Cordelia, daughter of Anthony Chase, in 1834. Their children, none of whom are now living,

were Albert, Delia, Howard and Edward. The house is now owned and occupied by Prescott H. Baker, son of the late Isaiah F. Baker, and in the sixth generation from Silas Baker, Senior, who was born not far from the year 1700.

Still farther west on the same side of the highway, and on the hill a short distance from it, is the two story schoolhouse erected in, or about, the year 1854. On account of the small number of attending pupils, one of the lower rooms has been used for library purposes.

There is considerable contrast between the methods of instruction now prevailing and those in 1693 when it was voted to divide the town into "five squadrons," of which "South Sea" was to be known as No. 5, the boundaries to be as follows: "Beginning at Thomas Bills', all the west side of Bass River and South Sea, and to Thomas Batter's." A committee was appointed "to agree with some fit person to teach school" and South Sea's share of his labors was to extend "from July 15, to last of August" annually.

"In 1712, Mr. Jaquesh, school master, was allowed £24 salary, and 5 shillings per week additional for board." He was to teach children to read, write and cypher and to give them some knowledge of grammar and Latin.

Close by the schoolhouse stands the meetinghouse, which was moved from its former site a half-mile farther east, about eight years ago.

Across the road is the low double house of the late James

Crowell or "Squire James" as he was popularly known. The squire was born in 1767, was of the fifth generation from Yelverton, the pioneer, in the line of Thomas, son of the latter. He married, first, Ruth Howes, by whom he had two children: Marten, who died at sea at the age of twenty-one years, and Ruth H., born in 1798, who married Silas Baker of South Yarmouth, and was well known locally for many years as a preacher in the Society of Friends or Quakers. For his second wife, Squire James married Deborah Robbins, generally known in that community as "Aunt Deborah." To her were born the following named children: Harrison, Russell, Lucy Ann, James, Rufus, Winslow, Alger, Olive A., Edwin, Randall, Mary H., and one other who appears to have died young. None of this large family are now living, and the dwelling is now owned by a family from Pawtucket.

About sixty-five years ago Captain Benjamin Adams Crowell of the eighth generation from John Crowe of Bass Ponds (vicinity of Follens pond) purchased the building which previously had been the store of Deacon Anthony Chase, moved it to a site a little west from the Congregational meetinghouse, and converted it into a dwelling. The captain was born in 1813 and married Cyrene Crowell in 1838. Their children were Philena, Herbert and Goodrich. The house is now occupied by the widow of Herbert, above named, who after his decease married Lewis Taylor.

Next to the residence of Mr. and Mrs. Lewis Taylor, Captain John Orlando, a native of Sweden, erected his dwelling. Captain Orlando married Betsey, widow of Solomon Howes of Dennis and daughter of George and Olive Crowell. Captain Orlando was an able mariner and became master of a fine large schooner, which was wrecked on a voyage from Boston to South America. The captain was four days on the wreck, and by exposure became paralyzed to such an extent that he was unable to walk. His ingenuity came to his assistance, and he constructed a vehicle propelled by hand power, which enabled him to go about the village quite freely. He also built a large boat, so arranged as to have every rope within easy reach as he sat in the stern. He could make sail, weigh anchor, reef sails, and come to anchor without moving from his seat; and he even went to Marthas Vineyard summers and took parties out for a sail upon the "briny deep." Since his decease his residence has been sold and is at present occupied by strangers.

About opposite the former home of Captain Orlando stands a low single house which was once the residence of Ebenezer Crowell, commonly known as "Ebenezer Daniel" to distinguish him from Captain Ebenezer who lived on South Sea avenue. He was the brother of Squire James, was born in 1784 and married Dorcas Lewis. Their children were Benjamin, Ann and Ephraim. The former occupants have all passed away and the old home is owned

and occupied by strangers.

A little beyond, on the same side of the highway, Osborn, son of Captain Lysander Chase, erected a structure to be used for store purposes below and for a dwelling on the second floor. This property was later sold to the late Isaiah Crowell, son of Captain Elkanah, 2d, who carried on the grocery business there for some twenty years or thereabout, and about fifteen years ago was bought by the late Winchester Johnson.

The dwelling next to the store, in which Captain Daniel Taylor now lives, was once the home of Amos Crowell, a descendant in the seventh generation of John Crowe of Bass Ponds. He married Rhoda, daughter of Judah Crowell of Bass Ponds ancestry, in 1817. Their daughter Ruth became the wife of Lysander Chase, Senior, and the last named and their children, Amanda, Osborn, Ruth and Lysander, occupied the premises for a number of years.

Just opposite the last mentioned place is the house of Captain Reuben Blachford, built some twenty-five years ago.

It is the old Captain Ebenezer Crowell house moved from South Sea avenue, as stated in No. 4 in this series, and rejuvenated. It is now owned and occupied, the writer is informed, by Mrs. Addie F. Crowell, one of his contemporaries in the early school days in the new schoolhouse in South Yarmouth. He recalls the time when the upper room was so crowded that several of the boys were obliged to sit on the girls' side, himself being one of the

number; and now after some sixty years have passed, he still lives to testify to the uniformly good nature and genial disposition of his nearest neighbor and to express the wish that years of happiness and comfort yet await her. Her husband was the late Orris B. Crowell, son of Captain Elkanah, 2d, formerly of South Sea avenue.

On the north side of the road and a little to the west is the fine two story house built by Captain Heman B. Chase, a grandson of Anthony, Senior. By his first wife, Emily F. Hinckley of Barnstable, he had one son, Heman B., and by his second, Clarence, Edward, Emily and Walter. The fine homestead later became the property of Isaiah, a brother of Orris B. Crowell named above. He married Mercy B., daughter of Captain Zadock Crowell of South Sea avenue, their children being Joshua F., Thomas and Isaiah.

Beyond, on the same side of the highway, still stands the low double house of Captain Heman Chase, who, with his family, occupied it for many years. His children were Lysander, Joshua, Heman B., Mary, Abbie, Davis, Andrew and Louise. Later, the house was owned by David Merchant and now by his heirs.

Opposite is the former home of Luke Chase, son of Deacon Anthony. The building was moved from Hyannis some seventy years ago. Since the decease of Mr Chase in 1855 the place has been owned by several parties, is still in good condition and occupied by strangers.

Crossing a narrow road that extends southerly to Lewis bay, we come to a house that is "an old timer," indeed. With its low underpinning and its curb roof it is calculated to attract more than a passing notice from the stranger who travels that way. The building has within a few years been considerably enlarged but the shape of the original structure can still be traced. The writer remembers very distinctly taking a long walk in that vicinity in 1878, and of meeting Rev. Enoch E. Chase, who then lived in the old house referred to above. He said that his father, Deacon Anthony, moved to that home in 1799 and that he himself was born there in 1804 and had resided there ever since. In reply to an inquiry concerning Indians who had lived thereabout two centuries or more previously, the rev. gentleman pointed out the old Indian burial place which the town had reserved in the early days, and which is located on a peninsula of upland extending into the low ground on the east side of Chase's brook, so called, on the northerly side of the county road. The peninsula, which is about ten rods in width, was partly covered with a small growth of wood, mostly pine, with a clump of oaks on the easterly part. Mr Chase said that the burial place had been encroached upon by cultivation of the adjoining field. At a town meeting, possibly thirty-five years ago, at which it was proposed to place stone bounds upon each one of the town's reservations, this old burial place being one, Mr. Chase said that his father and

himself had occupied the premises for many years; but if the town had any Indians to be buried, they could be brought along and he should not object to their burial near the graves of their fathers. The children of Deacon Anthony Chase by his second wife, Mary Eldridge, were Enoch E. and a son who was lost at sea. The children of Rev. Enoch E. Chase were Mary, George, Rebecca and Alexander.

Opposite this ancient structure stands a small house owned formerly by Anthony Chase, Jr., whose children were Albert, Erastus, Cordelia, Leonard, Mary, Anthony and Benjamin.

Crossing the brook already mentioned, which unites with the Baxter's mill stream before reaching Lewis bay, we come to the small dwelling formerly the residence of Captain William Howes, a successful skipper in the mackerel fishery. This home has changed owners several times and is now owned and occupied by Mr. Lysander Chase.

On the opposite side of the highway Captain Leonard Chase, a son of Deacon Anthony by his first wife, Keziah Baker, built a house which was owned and occupied by himself and family. Later this dwelling came into the possession of Captain Gorham Crowell of the sixth generation from Yelverton the pioneer.

Some forty years ago an attempt was made to establish a trout hatchery in the brook close by. The pools were carefully laid out and kept in excellent condition for some years by Mr. Eben Perry, a son of Jabez Perry; but

were finally abandoned as the venture proved unsuccessful. Without any special information as to the cause of failure, one might easily conceive it to be a lack of pure, cold spring water, which seems to be the natural habitat for brook trout. Mr. Perry was certainly entitled to much credit for the time, energy and funds which he expended upon this experiment.

A short distance west of the William Howes residence lived, some sixty years ago, Mr. Asa Crocker with his large family. He was a shoe cobbler and worked for Mr. Daniel Crowell in Hyan-nis.

About a quarter of a mile still farther west, on the south side of the highway, on Eleazer's hill, so called, stands the old-time home of Eleazer, a brother of Captain Timothy Baker, Senr., and in the fifth generation from Francis, a pioneer. Eleazer, or "Uncle Eleazer" as he was called, was miller in the "Baxter's mill" near by, some seventy-five years ago, and for many years after the "Little mill" in West Yarmouth ceased its labors. The dwelling has had many different tenants during the long period of its existence.

Away back "in the forties," on the left hand side of the highway, stood the residence of Captain Alexander Baxter, quite an extensive owner in shipping, who married Sophronia, a half-sister of the Rev. E. E. Chase. Some years later this building was moved farther west to the corner next to a road leading to Lewis bay, and a large double house

was erected on the old site. Here the captain and his good wife resided for many years, and after their decease the property came into the possession of Captain John A. Baxter, a brother of Captain Alexander, who occupied the premises for some years. In 1876 this fine residence was destroyed by fire. Captain Crowell, in writing of this event, says: "It was a beautifully clear night. The moon casting its golden rays over the old mill pond upon the high land in the background, formed a picture which it would be difficult for an artist to equal in the beauty and grandeur of its scenic effect. But, mingled with the beauty of the scene was the sadness of such an ending of so beautiful a place."

The old gristmill directly opposite the Captain Baxter residence was known as Baxter's mill. It was at one time owned by Captain Timothy Baker, Senr., (born in the first half of the eighteenth century) and later by his son, Captain Joshua Baker, born in 1766. The mill pond was fed by several streamlets which came down from the north; but, its work having been completed, the dam has been allowed to wash away; and, there being some question as to ownership, we learn that this once beautiful and interesting spot is now grown up with rushes. It seems as if the water power here might, in this day of improved machinery, be made again to serve a useful purpose.

Returning now to the "Four Corners" at the head of South Sea avenue, we take the North lane, so called, and proceed northerly.

This roadway was doubtless, in the early days of the settlement, an Indian trail, which, with its branches, led to Bass river and the Indian settlements lying northerly and easterly.

Near the Corners, on the left hand side, stood the home of Jeremiah Gorham, generally known as Jeremy, a brother of John, heretofore mentioned.

On the same side of the way, a little farther north, was the residence of James Whelden, whose sons, Zimri and Arunah, became prominent masters both of sailing ships and steamers. Several other members of the same family became officers of steam vessels.

Nearly opposite was the home of Thomas Sherman, who married Rebecca Burgess, a daughter of Isaiah Burgess. Their children were Stephen, Mary, Thomas and Lydia. The father of Thomas, Senr., was Ichabod Sherman, a blacksmith, who came to Indian town (South Yarmouth) from New Bedford not far from the year 1790 in company with Captain Benjamin Tripp and Abiel Akin, father of the late David K. Akin. He died in 1844. Isaiah Burgess and his wife Nancy were near neighbors of Thomas Sherman, Senr.

A little to the north, and on the west side of the lane, we come to the site of the old house of Higgins Crowell, Senr., whose children were Higgins, Ruth, Betsey and Benjamin. His second wife was Patience Coleman.

On the east side of the road which led from North lane directly to the "little mill," more than eighty years ago lived Mr. Joyce

Taylor, father of a large family. Several of the sons were noted skippers of mackerel catchers fifty to sixty years ago. Joyce, Freeman, Henry and Dustin, who became captains, were worthy of their ancestry. The little mill ceased its labors more than thirty years ago.

North lane proper extends across the mill stream just north of the site of the little mill and was, in the early days, bordered by homesteads as far as Long pond; for this was the main highway until Parkers river bridge was built. Now, we believe, not a single building remains on this once frequented way.

The fact that the site of the John Crow house is several rods west of South Sea avenue has led some people to suppose that the highway has been relocated. To the writer of this article, the evidence points to the contrary. In the earliest days of settlement, when the danger of attacks by Indians was great, the pioneer who wished to establish a home at a distance from his neighbors, so placed his dwelling within his clearing as to have an open space on all sides, in order that he might more easily detect the presence of an enemy and also to diminish the danger from forest fires.

When Yelverton came to this locality in 1639 or 40 his nearest

neighbors were probably located some four miles or more distant. About ten years later his nearest neighbor on the east was Richard Berry, who established a home near the mouth of Bass river. At the time of his decease, in 1683, his son John was forty-one years old, and he had but two grandchildren living in Yarmouth, the elder being less than two years of age.

It is quite reasonable to suppose that the spot known by reliable tradition as the site of John's residence, marks also the location of the home of his father, Yelverton. One other reason for locating the residence at a distance from the well marked trail might have been that water was more easily to be obtained from a spring or shallow well on the ground near at hand.

In closing this series, the writer would earnestly invite any information respecting the Baxter's mill and the little mill; the dates of their establishment and of their falling into disuse; together with any other facts relating to the history of the section in which they are located; and especially does he invite correction of any errors which may have appeared, and a criticism of any portion of the series; for in this way is gained a more definite knowledge of historic facts.

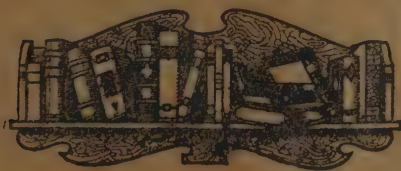
No. 40.

LIBRARY *of*
C a p e C o d
HISTORY & GENEALOGY

A MAYFLOWER LINE

Hopkins--Snow--Cook

By Grace Fielding Hall



YARMOUTHPORT, MASS.:
C. W. SWIFT, PUBLISHER AND PRINTER,
THE "REGISTER" PRESS,
1914.

Joseph H. Benton Ed.

Aug. 7, 1939

cont

4431.210

No. 40

A MAYFLOWER LINE

Hopkins--Snow--Cook

By Grace Fielding Hall

Copyright, 1914,
by Charles W. Swift.

STEPHEN¹ HOPKINS.

Stephen¹ Hopkins came in the Mayflower with his second wife, Elizabeth², and three children born in England, one child, Oceanus, born on the voyage over.

Stephen¹ Hopkins was born in England in 1580; died in Plymouth in 1644.

Children of first wife.

Gyles², born in England about 1605; m. Katherine Whelden.

Constanta², Constance, b. in England about 1608; m. Nicholas Snow.

Children of second wife.

Damaris², b. in England; m. Jacob Cooke.

Oceanus², b. on the voyage, Oct. 1620; died 1627.

Deborah², b. in Plymouth 1622; m. Andrew Ring.

Caleb², b. in Plymouth.

Ruth², b. in Plymouth; died an infant.

Elizabeth², b. in Plymouth.

GYLES² HOPKINS.

Gyles² Hopkins was born in England about 1605; married, 1639, Katherine, daughter of Gabriel Whelden of Yarmouth. Gyles² died 1690.

Children.

Mary³, b. 1640, probably in Harwich.

Stephen³, b. 1642, probably in Harwich; m. Mary Myrick.

John³, b. 1643; died in infancy.

Abigail³, b. 1644.

Deborah³, b. June 1648, in Eastham; m. Josiah Cooke.

Caleb³, b. 1650; m. Mary Williams.

Ruth³, b. 1653.

Joshua³, b. 1657; m. Mary Cole.

William³, b. 1660.

Elizabeth³, b. 1664; d. in infancy.

CONSTANTA OR CONSTANCE HOPKINS.

Constance² was born in England about 1608; married Nicholas Snow of Plymouth (probably son of Nicholas Snow and wife Mary of London). Constance died Oct. 1677; Nicholas, 15 Nov. 1676.

Children.

Mark³, b. 9 May 1628, in Plymouth; m. 1st Anne Cook, 2nd Jane Prence.

Mary³, b. about 1630, in Plymouth; m. Thomas Paine.

Sarah³, b. about 1632, in Plymouth.

A Mayflower Line.

Joseph^a, b. 1634, in Plymouth.
Stephen^a, b. 1636, in Plymouth.

John^a, b. 1638, in Plymouth.
Elizabeth^a, b. 1640.
Jabez^a, b. 1642.
Ruth^a, b. 1644.

Hannah^a, b. 1646, probably at Eastham.

Rebecca^a, b. 1648, probably at Eastham.

MARK^a SNOW.

Mark^a, son of Nicholas and Constance (Hopkins) Snow, born in Plymouth, 9 May 1628; married 1st 18 Jan. 1655, Anne Cook, daughter of Josiah Cook. She died 25 July 1656. He married 2nd 9 Jan. 1660, Jane Prence.

Children.

Anne^a, b. 7 July 1656, in Eastham; m. Eldad Atwood.

JOSIAH^a COOK.

He is first mentioned in the Plymouth Records in 1633, was rated as a tax payer in 1634, was married 16 Sept. 1635, to Elizabeth (Ring) widow of Stephen Deane and daughter of the widow Mercy Ring, who came to Plymouth in 1629. He died in Eastham 17 Oct. 1673. His widow Elizabeth administered on his estate.

Children.

Josiah^a, born ; m. Deborah Hopkins.

Ann^a, b. ; m. Mark Snow.

Bethia^a, b. ; m. Joseph Harding.

Davis of Plymouth says there were seven other children.

JOSIAH^a COOK.

Son of Josiah¹ and Elizabeth (Ring) Cook, married 27 July 1668, Deborah^a, dau. of Gyles^a and Katherine (Whelden) Hopkins.

Children.

Elizabeth^a, b. 12 Oct. 1669; died March 1670.

Josiah^a, b. in Eastham 12 Nov. 1670; m. Mary .

Richard^a, b. 4 Sept. 1672.

Elizabeth^a, b. 16 June 1674; m. Oct. 1693 Thomas^a Newcomb.

Caleb^a, b. 28 April 1679.

Joshua^a, b. 4 Feb. 1683.

Benjamin^a, b. 28 April 1687.

JOSIAH^a COOK.

Son of Josiah^a and Deborah (Hopkins) Cook. Born in Eastham 12 Nov. 1670. Moved to Truro, married Mary . He served the town of Truro in many public offices. The last mention of him is in Aug. 1718, as present at a public meeting. There is no date of death or burial.

Children.

Desire^a, b. 1694.

Deborah^a, b. 1696.

John^a, b. 1698.

Mary^a, b. 1700.

Solomon^a, b. about 1708, baptized 18 Nov. 1711; died 21 Nov. 1781; residence, Provincetown; m. 4 June 1733, Rebekah Cowell.

SOLOMON^a COOK.

Son of Josiah^a and Mary Cook. Born about 1708, m. 4 June 1733, Rebekah, dau. of Edward and Rebekah (Broughton) Cowell of Boston. She was born 1713-14, bap. 3 Dec. 1727. He died 21 Nov. 1781. She died 19 Aug. 1788.

Hopkins—Snow—Cook.

Children.
 Mary^s, b. 1735; m. Dotey of
 Plymouth.
 Solomon^s, b. 12 Sept. 1737.
 Rebecca^s, b. 1740.
 Barnabas^s, b. ; m. Sarah
 Whorf.
 Edward^s, b. 29 April 1746.
 Elisha^s, b. ; m. Susan
 Atwood.
 Jonathan^s, b. 22 July 1753; m.
 Mercy Tilton.
 Samuel^s, b. 29 Aug. 1756; m.
 Jane Nickerson.
 John^s, b. ; m. Mary New-
 comb.
 Lemuel^s, b. ; died young.

JONATHAN^s COOK.

Son of Solomon^s and Rebecca
 (Cowell) Cook. Born in Province-
 town 22 July 1753; m. 16 April
 1773, Mercy, dau. of Phillip and
 Desire Tilton.

Children.

Patty^s, b. 27 Aug. 1773; m.
 Joshua F. Grozier 24 March 1793.
 David N.^s, b. 29 Aug. 1776; m.
 Salome Lombard 23 Nov. 1800.
 Jonathan^s, b. 23 Feb. 1780; m.
 Sabra Brown 26 March 1802.
 Philip^s, b. 15 Oct. 1781; m.
 Anna Smith.
 Bethiah^s, b. 14 Oct. 1784; m.
 Thomas Sparks.
 Lemuel^s, b. 13 Sept. 1786; m.
 Rebecca Whorf 29 Dec. 1807.
 Edward^s,
 { b. 16 March 1789; died
 { Sally^s, in infancy.
 { Sally^s, b. 3 Sept. 1792.

PATTY^s (MARTHA) COOK.

Daughter of Jonathan and Mercy
 (Tilton) Cook. Born in Province-
 town 27 Aug. 1773; m. 24 March
 1793, Joshua Freeman Grozier,
 born in Truro 2 April 1769, son

of John and Mercy (Hopkins)
 Grozier. She died .

Children.

William^s, b. 17 April 1794.
 Joshua^s,
 { b. 7 July 1796.
 { Freeman^s,
 Freeman^s, b. 27 Nov. 1798.
 Mercy^s, b. 22 July 1800; m.
 Patty^s, b. 20 Feb. 1802.
 Sally^s, b. 28 Aug. 1803; m.
 Saloma^s, b. 14 Oct. 1805.
 Caleb Upham^s, b. 7 Jan. 1808;
 m.
 Rebecca Atkins^s, b. 4 Oct. 1810.

DAVID^s NEWCOMB COOK.

Born 29 Aug. 1776; m. 23 Nov.
 1800, Salome Lombard, born 23
 Jan. 1782. He died 18 May 1856.
 She died 26 March 1845.

Children.

Rebecca^s, b. 7 Sept. 1801; d.
 15 March 1802.
 Patty^s, b. 9 Jan. 1804; m.
 James Stanford.
 Rebecca^s, b. 8 July 1806; m.
 Thomas Lothrop 30 April 1826.
 Salome^s, b. 31 Dec. 1808; d. 2
 Oct. 1823.
 Lemuel^s, b. 2 Nov. 1811; m.
 Mary J. Weeks.
 Rosetta^s, b. 31 May 1814; m.
 Enoch Hall.
 Thomas Dunlop^s, b. 15 Jan.
 1817; d. 6 Sept. 1823.
 Benjamin Lombard^s, b. 6 Oct.
 1819; m. 1st Anne E. Hammersley,
 2nd Mary J. Trask.
 Eliza Bryant^s, b. 26 Feb. 1822;
 m. Peter E. Dolliver.

JONATHAN^s COOK.

Son of Jonathan and Mercy
 (Tilton) Cook. Born in Province-
 town 23 Feb. 1780; m. 26 March
 1802, Sabra Brown.

A Mayflower Line.

LEMUEL⁶ COOK.

Son of Jonathan and Mercy (Tilton) Cook. Born in Provincetown 13 Sept. 1786; m. 29 Dec. 1807, Rebecca Whorf, born 20 July 1790. He died in St. Iago De Cuba 25 Jan. 1828. She died 27 Sept. 1849.

Children.

David⁷ b. 15 Oct. 1808; m.
; lost at sea 7 Dec. 1849.

Tilton⁷, b. 10 July 1810; m.
Clarinda Cook.

Charles Dyer⁷, b. 12 June 1813;
m. Ellen .

Emily⁷, b. 12 Oct. 1815; m.
Jairus H. Hilliard.

Ephraim Ryder⁷, b. ; m.
Abbie Conant; d. 29 Oct. 1867.

Lemuel⁷, b. 31 March 1828; m.
Rebecca Morgan; d. 30 Nov. 1885.

SAMUEL⁵ COOK.

Son of Solomon⁴ and Rebecca Cowell Cook. Born 29 Aug. 1756; died Feb. 1825; married Jane, dau. of Phineas and Susannah (Smith) Nickerson.

Children.

Eleanor⁴, b. Jan. 19, 1778; m.
Cyrenius Brown.

Ephraim, b. Feb. 4, 1779; m.
Rebekah Lombard. ✓

Samuel, b. Oct. 17, 1781; m.
Tamsin Brown.

Jesse, b. June 13, 1783; m.
Thankful Smith.

Stephen, b. Oct. 29, 1786; m.
Delia Cornwell.

Ebenezer, b. Oct. 21, 1788; d.
Aug. 30, 1810.

Jane, b. June 24, 1791; d. Feb.
28, 1796.

Betsey, b. April 12, 1794; m.
Epaphras Kibbe.

James T., b. April 10, 1796; m.
Phebe Nickerson. ✓

Jane, b. July 21, 1799; m.
Abraham Small.

BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY



3 9999 03321 097 0

